TWELVE FAMILIES . . .
An American Experience

A Family History
of
O'DELL – BAER
And Related Lines

BY
WILLIAM F. O'DELL

Molley VIII 129
Agustine Odell VIII 128
Elizabeth Wells VII 65
Samuel Odell VII 64
Benjamin Odell VI 32
Emma VI 33
Simeon Bolleau VIII 142
Elizabeth Bolleau VII 71
Michael Carter VII 70
Jeremiah Odell V 16
James Michell VI 34
Charlotte Grace Carter VI 35
Henry J. O'Dell IV 8
Elizabeth Michell V 17
Thomas Rooks VI 36
Thomas Rooks V 18
Anne Copp V 19
Frank J. O'Dell III 4
Emma L. Rooks IV 9
Emilie
Agnes
William

Garnett Aikman III 5
William A. Aikman IV 10
Richard Springer Aikman V 20
Alexander Aikman VI 40
Aikman VII 80
Elizabeth Lewis VIII 160
Mary Ann Hopkins V 21
Mary Springer VI 41
Hannah Showers VII 81
Michael Showers VIII 162
Mary Catherine Ghent IV 11
William Boyd Ghent V 22
David Ghent VI 44
Richard Springer VII 82
Hannah Van Sickle VIII 163
Sarah Boice VII 83
David Springer VIII 164
Margaret Oliver VIII 165
Rachael Horning V 23
Lewis Horning VI 46
Mary Gruell Howell VI 45
Thomas Ghent VII 88
Elizabeth Davis VII 89
Sampson Howell VII 90
Maria Triller VII 91
Peter Horning VII 92
Isabella VII 93
Eleanor Bates VII 47
Edward Gant VIII 176
William Davis VIII 178
Hannah Phillips VIII 179
Ludwig Hornung VIII 184
Katherine Keyser VIII 185

BOSTON
PUBLIC
LIBRARY

TWELVE FAMILIES - -

An American Experience

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2011 with funding from
Boston Public Library

http://www.archive.org/details/twelvefamiliesam00odel

TWELVE FAMILIES - -

An American Experience

A History Of Selected Lineages

**AIKMAN, BAER, GHENT, GREEN,
HORNING, MICHELL, ODELL, PEERENBOOM,
RILEY, ROOKS, SPRINGER, SWING**

By
WILLIAM F. O'DELL

GATEWAY PRESS, INC.
Baltimore 1981

1981

Copyright © 1981
William F. O'Dell
All rights reserved

Permission to reproduce
in any form may be
secured from the author

Please direct all correspondence and book orders to:

William F. O'Dell
5707 Junonia
Shell Point Village
Fort Myers, FL 33908

Library of Congress Catalogue Card Number 81-80933

Published for the author by
Gateway Press, Inc.
111 Water Street
Baltimore, MD 21202

Made in the United States of America

This Book Is

Dedicated to My Family

CONTENTS

Preface ix
Introduction xi

Chapter One -- Davis, Ghent 1

Chapter Two -- Horning, Ghent 30

Chapter Three -- Aikman, Showers 54

Chapter Four -- Springer, Aikman 82

Chapter Five -- Odell/O'Dell 112

Chapter Six -- Carter, Michell, O'Dell 148

Chapter Seven -- Rooks, O'Dell 176

Chapter Eight -- Bär, Baer 220

Chapter Nine -- Riley, Wright 274

Chapter Ten -- Swing, Riley, Blair, White 300

Chapter Eleven -- Peerenboom, Green 352

Chapter Twelve -- Baer, O'Dell 386

Appendices:

A. Family Composition of Selected Lineages 417
B. Areas of Further Genealogical Research 481
C. Diary of a Genealogical Trip 484
D. Universal Relationship Chart 490

Index 493

Notes 521

PREFACE

As I write these words I am gazing across the Caloosahatchee River in southwest Florida where numerous pelicans are swooping and diving into the water seeking their daily food in the form of unsuspecting fish. Some of these pelicans are big and strong while others are smaller and somewhat timid in their behavior.

There are differences among all living things, derived to a great extent from ancestors. One pelican is larger than others because of his "parents," and his "grandparents." This, of course, is true with people. Each of us has ancestors who have already influenced what we look like, the manner in which we behave, and how long we live.

A large strong person can readily point to ancestors who have contributed to his or her size. A highly talented musical person can locate forebears who have or had above-average musical ability. Ancestors have considerable impact on who you are because each one of them is a part of you -- more or less. You are the product of many people, not only your parents.

Twelve Families -- An American Experience was written for two reasons. First was the desire to demonstrate to our daughter PEG and our son DAVE and their children and others to follow that their forebears were great people, although none ever achieved true national prominence. But they were great because many were pioneers who endured hardships rarely experienced in today's world.

All of them had their roots in western Europe at one time or another, arriving in America to start new lives. They were risk-takers, facing the ruggedness of the land, the Indians, the wild animals. They were often forced to subsist without the comforts of their former homes, forging into unexplored forests and prairies not knowing where they would obtain their next meal. Medical aid was often non-existent. They cleared their own land and built their own cabins. These are our ancestors. Through their strength, seeking individual freedom, they have contributed to who we are today.

The second reason for writing *Twelve Families -- An American Experience* was the desire to present a history of a small group of American and Canadian families comprised of truly plain, ordinary people. Most histories center around political figures and war leaders, recording important happenings of a country or area. In con-

trast, relatively little has been written about those who pushed back the American frontier in their own small ways, seeking to improve their individual economic and spiritual lives -- generation by generation.

The course of events in America has been influenced by illustrious political figures, but this country developed its strength from men and women like our ancestors who were willing to face untold adversities. This book is a history of those men and women: our ancestors.

Over and above the ancestors, many persons have contributed to this book. Helpful, of course, were the living relatives who made information available regarding their current families. However, two ancestors stand out as unique contributors: my own mother, GARNETT AIKMAN O'DELL, who over many years saved considerable material and correspondence on her Canadian lineage, and my paternal grandmother, EMMA LEONORA ROOKS O'DELL, who also saved pertinent letters and records. These are the items that aroused my interest in genealogy many years ago.

Then there are the O'Dell and Baer amateur genealogists around the country who have made important strides in researching the two family lines. Three genealogists, however, warrant special recognition because of their unselfishness in sharing data -- information pertaining to far more than their own individual families.

Ruth Keller of Lititz, Pa., is to my way of thinking the country's foremost Odell/O'Dell genealogist. Her research and dispersement of Odell/O'Dell data places her on a level with Frederick C. Haacker who during the first half of the Twentieth Century compiled many volumes of Odell/O'Dell data. And Cher Bibler of Tiffin, Ohio, who organized Baer/Bare/Bear family genealogists with her publication *The Baer Newsletter* which she undertook entirely on her own in 1978. And Ruhama Fagley of Bethel, Ohio, the vibrant historian of Clermont County, Ohio, who added so much to the compilation of Riley and Swing family information.

Finally, without reservation, the topmost acknowledgment for making this book possible is my wife BESS BAER O'DELL. Not only has she worked alongside me over many years during our genealogical searches in various parts of the country, but she has read and re-read every word in the manuscript over and again. More important, BESS has continually encouraged me in this time-consuming effort, never questioning the hours spent at my typewriter. In any event, to my loving wife goes equal credit for the creation and publication of this book.

William F. O'Dell

Fort Myers, Florida

INTRODUCTION

One's understanding of this book can best be achieved with an explanation of the rationale behind the determination of chapter sequence.

On a somewhat random basis *Twelve Families -- An American Experience* begins with the Ghent family line in Chapter One. This first chapter continues down through several Ghent generations until one of the ancestral males of the Ghent line (in this case WILLIAM BOYD GHENT) marries a young lady about whose family sufficient is known to justify a new chapter. Thus, when WILLIAM BOYD GHENT meets RACHAEL HORNING, Chapter Two begins, describing the early and subsequent generations of the Horning line -- until WILLIAM BOYD and RACHAEL HORNING GHENT produce an ancestral offspring who meets and plans to marry someone about whom adequate material exists to justify still a new chapter.

This procedure continues throughout the book, resulting in twelve chapters. At the beginning of each chapter is a "flow chart" showing the generations covered by that chapter. The male members in each generation are shown on the left of each diagram, with their birth and death dates. These dates are presented to provide the reader with a quick picture of the time periods covered by the chapters. The wives of the male members are shown on the right in each chart.

The inside front cover of the book carries a fan chart portraying seven generations of the known ancestry of the author. Lack of space precludes showing several ancestral lines where data are available on more than the seven generations. These earlier generations are shown in the "flow charts" at the opening of selected chapters.

Similarly, on the inside back cover appears a fan chart depicting six generations of the ancestry of BESS BAER O'DELL, the author's wife. Here, too, lack of space prevents the inclusion of several earlier generations, but these are shown at the start of several chapters.

At all times, throughout the book, each ancestor's name appears in capital letters. The first time an ancestor is mentioned in the book he or she is designated by Roman and Arabic numerals. The Roman numeral specifies the generation the ancestor is "away" from our PEG and DAVE. In other words, PEG'S and DAVE'S grandparents would be generation "III" -- three generations removed. Their great grandparents would be "IV."

The Arabic numeral assigned to each ancestor is simply the genealogical number for that ancestor. PEG and DAVE are "1." Their father, the author of this book, is "2." Their mother, BESS BAER O'DELL, is "3." From that point on, each male parent is always double the Arabic numeral of the offspring. The female parent's number is always equal to the male parent's number plus one (see fan charts on inside front and back covers).

The highest Arabic numeral reached in *Twelve Families -- An American Experience* for a fully documented ancestor is "3362," for JOHN WASHINGTON. His complete numerical designation is "XII*3362," showing that this JOHN WASHINGTON is 11 generations removed from our PEG and DAVE. Frequent reference by the reader to the fan charts and chapter diagrams will aid considerably in grasping the narrative shift from one generation to another.

On PEG'S and DAVE'S paternal side the Roman and Arabic numerals are used without an asterisk between them (e.g., XI 1312 for CHARLES SPRINGER). To designate the maternal side the two numerals are always separated by an asterisk (e.g., X*848 for HANS MARTIN SCHWING).

This numbering system may not satisfy the genealogical purist inasmuch as it violates accepted numbering procedures. However, it seems to this author that the numbering employed here aids the reader in more readily grasping the time period in which a particular ancestor appears in the narrative.

Too, the more rigorous genealogist may object to occasional suppositions made regarding the activities of ancestors. The author deliberately makes assumptions in order to present the ancestors as humans -- not as birth and death records. In so doing, the author hopes the reader will obtain a more realistic feeling of the lives of these forebears. When assumptions are made by the author, they are mentioned in footnotes.

All genealogical data on each ancestor are believed to be correct unless qualified in footnotes. These and other footnotes appear on the pages of reference in order to encourage their being read.

OUR INHERITANCE

Man's life is but a moment in eternity,
   But when he dies he leaves his mark, however small.
The great ones are recorded for posterity,
   The rest are quiet, waiting for recall.

Then they will come (tho' not with fanfare blown)
   For man is curious, and one day will say,
"Who am I? Whence did I come? What is to be known?"
   And, searching, bring them back from yesterday.

And he will know these quiet ones -- these others;
   They are familiar in so many ways:
A picture of a girl, so like his mothers,
   Tho' her dress is that of other days.

A letter, faded, worn, the language quaint,
   Brings news of a family in another age.
So like his own -- "Dear Ann has learned to paint."
   All this, then is man's heritage.

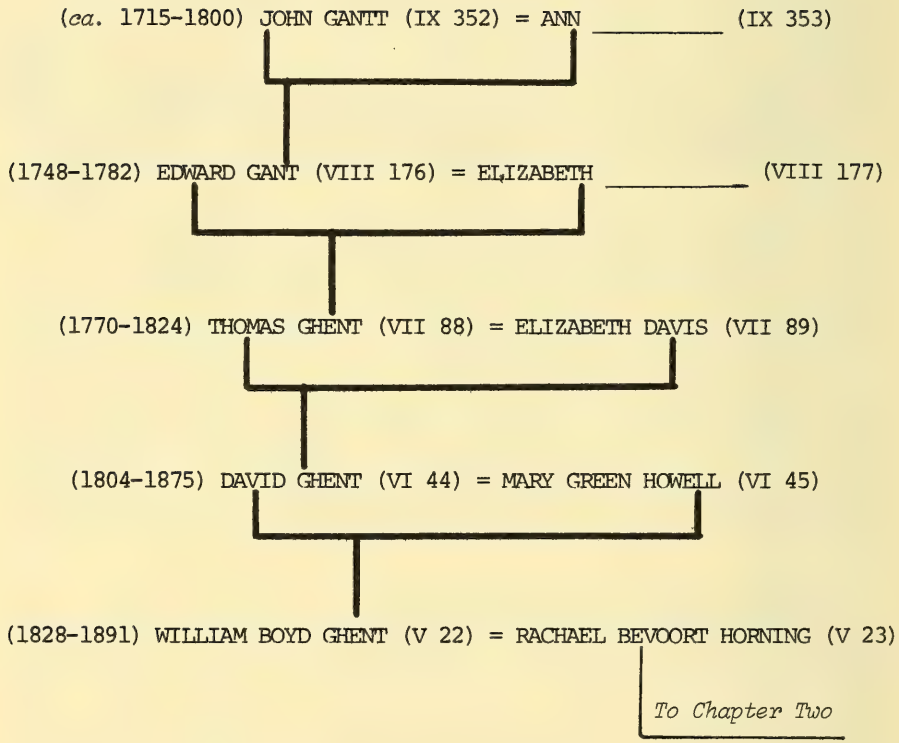
For we inherit far more precious things
   Than worldly wealth, or kingly crown.
A smile, a girl with hair like raven's wings,
   A talent that's been handed down.

Science will explain in stilted phrase
   The hue of hair, the shape of face, the stance,
The likeness shown to those of other days --
   But man says, "THIS is my inheritance!"

Anna Jean (Gervan) Heard

Ontario Genealogical
Society

1


(ca. 1715-1800) JOHN GANTT (IX 352) = ANN _____ (IX 353)
(1748-1782) EDWARD GANT (VIII 176) = ELIZABETH _____ (VIII 177)
(1770-1824) THOMAS GHENT (VII 88) = ELIZABETH DAVIS (VII 89)
(1804-1875) DAVID GHENT (VI 44) = MARY GREEN HOWELL (VI 45)
(1828-1891) WILLIAM BOYD GHENT (V 22) = RACHAEL BEVOORT HORNING (V 23)
To Chapter Two

CHAPTER ONE — Davis, Ghent

The year was 1737, in the seaport town of Swansea in the south of Wales.

The usual motley crowd of onlookers was watching the bustle of the schooner's workers as they prepared the vessel for a voyage. As the work of taking in supplies and putting the ship in sailing order was going on, the town's onlookers viewed the preparation with a lazy, listless air of indifference.

Suddenly the attention of all was quickened. The doleful tolling of a church bell in the distance, heard now and again above the din of numerous voices of those boarding the ship, had up to this moment passed unheeded by those collected on the shore.

Now, however, there appears a procession slowly wending its way toward the place. The solemn peals suggest the thought of death. Leading the procession was a venerable-looking man whose garb revealed him to be a minister of the Gospel. After him comes a young couple, in the first years of vigorous manhood and the fresh bloom of womanhood. They walk hand-in-hand, clothed in holiday attire and having the appearance of a newly wedded man and wife. Following them are a man and woman whose bent forms and grey heads cannot hide their advanced years. Next is another couple, also in the decline of life. Then, two by two, walk men and women and boys and girls of all ages.

All are dressed in grey or black. They move with a slowness, as if following a loved one to the grave. All that seems to be lacking in this funeral train is the hearse with the coffin containing the body of the dead. The spectators, workers and embarking passengers cease their activity and conversations. In hushed silence they gaze upon this line of mourners, wondering and watching to see its course and destination. With measured steps the minister walks to the vessel, over the gangplank, and onto the deck. His followers gather round him, with the young man and his new wife in the center.

A silence falls upon the assembled mourners as the man of God opens the Bible and reads such words as give comfort and support to the bereaved. Now his voice is raised in prayer, and it is with this prayer that the reason for this strange scene is revealed. First he prays that the aged parents may have Divine help in this their hour of trial in losing their dear children, and that they might still be happy in their earthly pilgrimages, be received hereafter into God's kingdom, and finally be re-united with their children.

He then commits to Him those who control the winds and the waves, and the young couple. He implores that they may be in His gracious care and keeping--these dear ones who today set out at once on the journey of married life, to cross the wide Atlantic, parting forever in this life from their parents and friends--to be buried forever in that faraway world called America. Words of counsel follow the young pair, and sympathy is heaped upon the parents. Food for at least part of the voyage is handed to them, along with their meager belongings for this new life in the New World.

Finally, amid emotions, the mourners tear themselves away from the voyageurs, clinging to each other in this hour of trial. The stricken parents have looked upon their children for the last time; and the children in turn shall see their parents' faces no more.[1]

Out at sea, on a voyage that could consume 60 or more days, JOHN GANTT (IX 352) and his bride have lost sight of land. They pass beyond St. George's Channel and around Ireland's Cape Clear. JOHN GANTT was thinking of the world he had left and trying to compare it with what would be waiting for him. He knew of the past; he could only guess of the future.

Gone forever was the quiet Swansean Valley where his father farmed and where young JOHN had helped since he was a very young boy. However, JOHN GANTT was schooled, and could read and write. But the people in southwest Wales were often hungry, and there was discontent. He recalled several uprisings among the agricultural workers in the Valley. His father was often angry with the workers' mob activities and the support they received from the intellectuals in Wales. This grim living among the farmers made them a hardy lot.

JOHN, when about 12, loved the preacher meetings during the Methodist Revival period. Farmers and farm workers, long adherents of the Church of England, were reluctant to leave the Church and these meetings took place in fields. The Methodists did not build chapels for many years to come. But young JOHN GANTT could remember the traveling preacher arriving in town on his pony. Often, when a well-known preacher was coming, a vast congregation would gather in the open field. He did not understand the meaning of the revival meetings, but he joined in and found them exciting. His father, he recalled, although loyal to the Crown, turned to the new Calvinistic Methodism.

---

[1] Much of this story is drawn from *The Centennial of the Settlement of Upper Canada*, Rose Publishing Co., Toronto, 1885.

Young JOHN GANTT grew up in this life that appeared tranquil on the surface, but seething on the inside. Starving farmers were over-taxed. Their hill farming suffered from the shortage and high price of corn. They resented the harsh treatment at the hands of the Church of England. The Jacobite movement throughout Wales and Scotland was creating a division among neighbors.[2] JOHN made a firm commitment to himself not to continue to live with this constant feeling of tension. He saw little hope for farmers--nothing more than a long life of continual work with no opportunity for gain. He had learned of America in school. Someday he would go to America.

True, America was far away. The trip would be treacherous. What would happen to him upon arrival was a fearful unknown. But one thing he did know: that he was not leaving England in the real sense. He still would be living under the Crown, and he visualized America as a Wales or an England with none of the problems that had developed in Wales over its many years. After all, America was an English colony. There was freedom in America. But even more than that, to JOHN GANTT there was economic opportunity, a world in which he could make a fortune!

The cost of passage to Annapolis, Maryland, was five pounds sterling (about $25). To JOHN this would be doubled because he would be taking ANN, his new bride, on this uncertain venture. To save money in the hill farming Valley of Swansea bordered on the impossible, but JOHN, after his farming days with his father, worked three nights a week at the watchmaking shop of Morgan Jones. He saved this money for the day he would make specific plans for the passage.

By 1737 JOHN GANTT had saved six pounds sterling, well short of the required funds necessary for the Atlantic Voyage for two persons. The watchmaker, Morgan Jones, told JOHN about David Thomas, a Welshman who had been a plantation owner in Prince George's County, Maryland, for nearly 15 years. David Thomas had left Swansea about 1722 and had prospered as a tobacco plantation owner. He agreed to hire JOHN and ANN GANTT who would be required to work for one or two years in order to pay off the unpaid balance of their passage. This would amount to about half their passage fares.

The young couple was fortunate in one sense in that they had already paid for a portion of their passage. They were "redemptioners"--partially paid-up passengers. GANTT had contracted with the ship's captain that he

---

[2] A Jacobite was one who supported James II of England after his abdication.

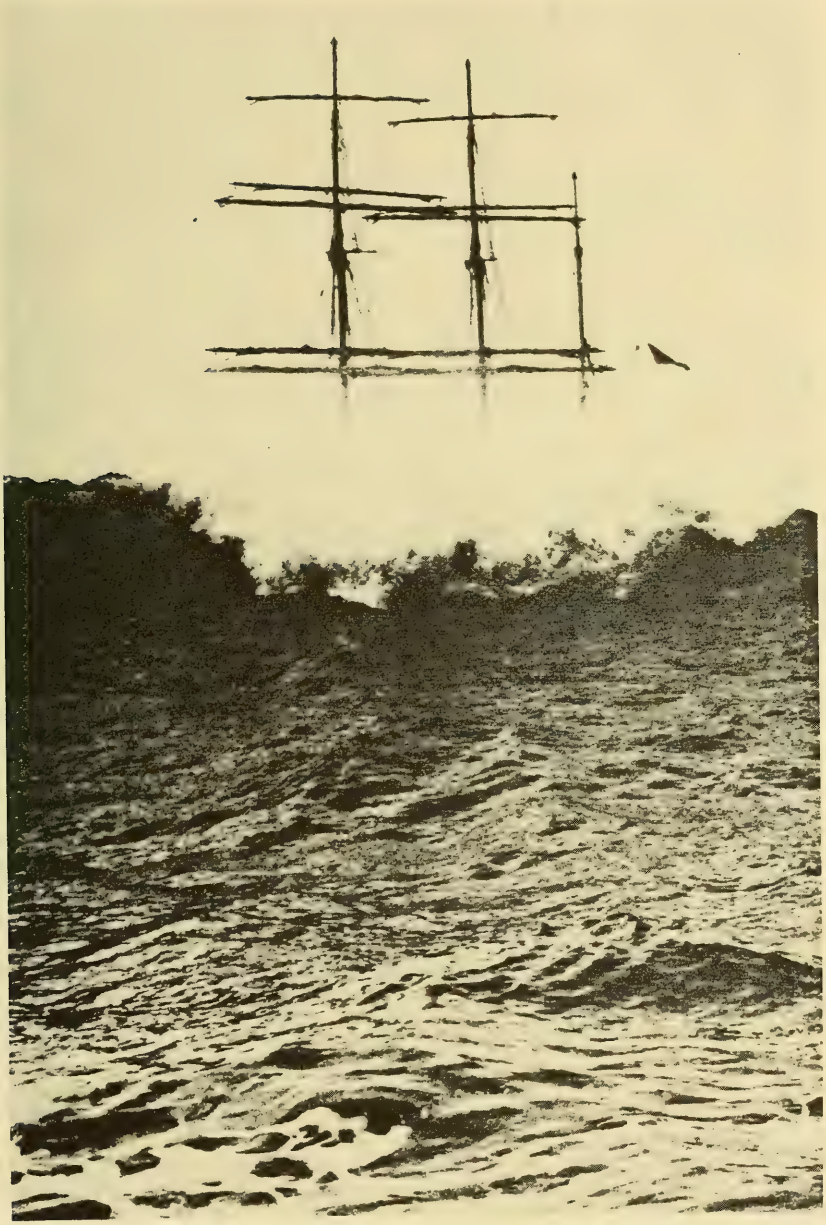
would complete the payment shortly upon landing, and he was of course depending upon David Thomas to be at the dock upon arrival. If David Thomas or his agent failed to be at the landing and pay for the balance of their passage, JOHN GANTT and his wife would be sold to the highest bidder to redeem the unpaid part of his fare. But the young couple was confident that David Thomas would take care of them, and for his help they would be working on his plantation for at least one year. If they worked for two years, the agreement stated, they would be given 50 acres of land on which to set up a household and farm for a living. That was JOHN GANTT's agreement with plantation owner David Thomas and with the ship's captain.

Those plantation days were far off--in both time and distance. As the end of their first day at sea approached, JOHN and ANN began to realize that all was not well. Their sleeping quarters were a two by six foot plank, with nothing more than a nine inch board separating them from the beds of strangers on both sides of them. When the berths were filled with bedding, the entire deck of the ship appeared to be nothing more than one heap of people--with no privacy whatsoever.

That night the small 250-ton schooner began to toss and turn as a storm rocked the passengers. By early morning the stench that was to last for the duration of the voyage began to develop. The crude toilet facilities were hopelessly inadequate for the 180 passengers sharing the limited facilities. Several of the passengers became sick from the constant rolling of the ship, and their vomit added to the growing stench. Air could be admitted only by the hatches, but in bad weather these had to be kept closed to keep out the rough seas. JOHN and his bride survived this early experience, but the grim thought of 60 or more of these nights ahead was a depressing one indeed.

Four days later a more severe storm arose. Sea sickness, encouraged by the horrible state of water aboard, affected virtually all of the passengers. The water was stored in wooden casks that had earlier held oil or molasses or turpenpine. The casks were not cleaned between uses. The water's appearance was enough to sicken one, but coupled with its rancid smell passengers did not need severe storms to bring on sickness. It was most severe at nighttime when the lack of ventilation compounded the horribleness of the journey.

All-timber vessels were known not to be safe, subject to both shipwreck and fire. They were in constant danger of fire, and this high risk was known to all passengers. Some terrible disasters had been reported between Liverpool and the New World, often caused by fire for cooking or candles for lighting.



TO SURVIVE THE ATLANTIC TRIP was in itself an achievement during those early voyages when fire, disease and shipwrecks were common.

After 25 days at sea passengers had virtually lost hope of arrival in America. Many were constantly sick from uncooked food. The passenger contract stated that adequate food provisions would be provided, but now with the voyage about half over, the food was often inedible. The salt pork was hard, stringy and tasteless; the salt fish so bad that it was thrown overboard untasted; the oatmeal for breakfast was black and dirty, sometimes with black beetles in it. JOHN and ANN had taken aboard provisions for their own use, and this aided considerably in their being able to eat regularly. Everyone furnished their own plates and cups and knives and spoons. They ate on their own bunks there being no dining area on the ship.

Thirty five days away from Swansea and the passengers were nothing more than a sickly mob--physically and psychologically. The constant storming of the Atlantic Ocean, the complete lack of ventilation with its accompanying stench, the often uncooked food, and the crowded conditions made ship life almost unbearable. Then came "ship fever," or typhus. JOHN and ANN GANTT knew it to be highly contagious and sometimes fatal. They had seen it in the lower regions of Swansea where filth and poverty were prevalent. It was brought on to ships by some passengers, and on the William Nelson it was determined that the six convicts who embarked at Liverpool in chains carried lice. Although these men were contained in the bowels of the ship at all times, their lice finally spread. These lice contained the typhus. Within eight days a score of passengers were afflicted, and three elderly persons died. They were put overboard, their graves to be the cold ocean.

Unlike most of the passengers, JOHN GANTT and his bride had someone who would, hopefully, be meeting them upon landing. A great many others knew not what was in store for them. They were placed onboard at Liverpool as "indentured servants." They were the English poor, lured into the emigrant stream by a recruiting agent, sometimes called a "spirit." The spirits "were known to lure children with sweets, to seize upon the weak or gin-sodden and take them aboard ship, and to bedazzle the weak-minded or credulous by fabulous promises of an easy life in the New World....To escaped criminals and other fugitives who wanted help in getting out of the country the 'spirit' appeared as a ministering angel." With such a motley passenger group aboard, it is no wonder that the GANTTS saw--and even experienced--the "smells, fumes, horrors, vomiting, various kinds of sea sickness, fever, dysentery, headaches, heat, constipation, boils, scurvy, mouth-rot and similar afflictions." These poor people, as "indenturers," were little more than cargo. Upon arrival, now approaching, they would be auctioned off. At the sight of land all made an attempt to clean

up and look presentable. Their future in America could well be determined by who brought them. Buyers came aboard to look first for the healthy, examining their muscles, teeth and general appearance. As JOHN and his wife watched, the poor indentures seemed often in a state of frenzy, with families being separated, and the necessity of accepting indentures longer than their debts fairly required.

The GANTTS waited eagerly for David Thomas, or his agent, to seek them out. They were not disappointed. David Thomas himself was there, buying indentured servants, and he in turn seemed glad to have JOHN and his wife: someone who could act as his clerk and keep the tobacco plantation accounts, and a maid servant thrown in. David was pleased with the arrangement: two years at the plantation in order to work off the balance of the ship fare for the two of them, and then freedom and 50 acres of their own.

This was their new life. Here was America. They saw no imposing buildings. Roads were nothing more than mud hollows. There were no ruined castles, or tumbled monasteries, or relics of religious furies so visible in Wales. Here, instead, was America, free of the weight of the past, with opportunity for material gain on all sides--after two years of labor on a tobacco plantation.[3]

David Thomas' plantation in Prince George's County in Maryland was not large, worth perhaps some 600 pounds sterling. He enhanced his income by selling land. JOHN GANTT worked mostly in the office keeping records, but on occasions he was an overseer in charge of 15 or 20 slaves. He recognized three of the six English convicts he had seen on the William Nelson. They were big men, kept healthy during the Atlantic voyage so that they would bring more money on the auction block. Because their crimes in England were serious they were committed to seven years of slave labor on the Thomas plantation. After that they would continue as slaves, but possibly on another plantation. JOHN realized that he too was a slave of sorts, but there was a difference. He could look forward to being a free man after a year or two of

---

[3]The Gantt presence in Maryland is prevalent in Ghent family legend material. Moreover, by 1776, two Gantts were known to be in Maryland: George Gantt Jr. and Thomas Gantt. Both had taken Oaths of Fidelity as shown in Maryland Records--Colonial Revolutionary County and Church, Vol. II, p. 305, by G. M. Brumbaugh (Lancaster Press, Lancaster, Pa. 1928). Some of the discussion of the Atlantic voyage was drawn from *Destination America*, by Maldwyn A. Jones (Holt, Rinehart & Winston, New York City, 1976).

servitude. But these black convict slaves would be indentured for life. No passage of time, no amount of devotion to the plantation owner would earn them freedom.

It cost David Thomas about 20 pounds sterling a year ($100) to maintain JOHN GANTT and his wife. So, for paying the balance of the GANTT'S fare, plus some 40 pounds sterling for maintenance over a two year period, Thomas received the labor of two intelligent young persons. The only additional cost to Thomas was upon the completion of the two year redemption period. GANTT and his wife received "freedom dues" of six pounds sterling, plus new clothes, an axe and a hoe. In addition, JOHN was entitled to 50 acres of land in Maryland, worth about five pounds sterling ($25).

A few days before the end of the two year redemption period, David Thomas gave JOHN GANTT his "freedom papers." With this in hand, JOHN went to the office of the land secretary, showed him his papers, and then acquired the rights for 50 acres. JOHN, however, had heard of the cheap land in North Carolina which had been a royal colony for 25 years. He and his wife decided to leave Maryland, and head for the cheaper land. He sold his land rights for cash, and the GANTTS embarked again on a new life--in North Carolina.

Saying goodbye to the plantation people was difficult. The GANTTS seemed less sure of their future now than when they left Wales. Departing Swansea, they knew that someone would be waiting for them. But embarking for North Carolina was a confrontation with the unknown. Their knowledge of the Carolinas was acquired only by hearsay, and they knew not where they would settle.

Carrying their meager belongings on their backs, and with the cash from the land sale carefully hidden on their bodies, they walked east to the Chesapeake Bay where they hoped to locate a vessel traveling south. After a one day's wait, luck was with them when a 23 ton schooner picked them up at Tracy's Landing. The schooner was manned by a group of Moravians sailing from Pennsylvania to Wilmington, North Carolina. Unlike so many of that day, the ship was neat, clean and commodious. To make room for the young couple, the captain and two sailors slept in the hold, on top of the barrels and boxes.

After thanking the gracious Moravians for their generosity, the GANTTS disembarked at Norfolk, Virginia. There they bought a horse and wagon. They knew they must go straight west out of Norfolk a good number of miles in order to pass around the great Dismal Swamps of North Carolina. They crossed over in North Carolina at Edgecombe County (later Franklin County) well west of the Chowan River. There were no towns in this area,

about 25 miles south of the Virginia line. The nearest community was Hillsborough in Orange County. New Bern, the new state capital, was 100 miles to the southeast.

The young couple was in the western edge of the Albemarle region which, like Maryland and Virginia, was tobacco growing land. In fact Albemarle of North Carolina was the lower part of the tobacco areas of Maryland and Virginia. Here JOHN and ANN would stay; they knew tobacco, how to sun-cure it, cut the leaves off the stalks, and sort and pack into hogsheads. These hogsheads could then be hauled or rolled to a stream and, as in Maryland, shipped to England. The Tar River would be suitable for the flatboats or scows that could carry 70 or 80 hogsheads each to the port of Bath on the Pimlico Bay. True, JOHN saw the Tar River as having considerable sediment which could make it more and more shallow, but he felt he and others could keep it clear and dredged. The next step was to locate some "King's land," or unpatented land.[4] With the help of some small nearby plantation owners he located some acreage, had it surveyed, and recorded in the office of land patents. Finally the patent signed by the royal governor Gabriel Johnston of North Carolina arrived. It was now completely "official."[5]

The practice of alloting 50 or 100 acres free to settlers as compensation for their paying their way to North Carolina ended about 15 years prior to GANTT'S arrival in the colony. JOHN GANTT had to purchase his land, and by Maryland standards it was cheap land, yet just as fertile as that of David Thomas. The purchase price was two pounds sterling ($10) per 100 acres. JOHN paid for 500 acres and acquired a remaining 200 on an installment basis. JOHN figured that with hard work he could pay off his indebtedness on the remaining 200 within three or four months.

The GANTTS, like their neighbors who had preceded them, started by clearing the land. Trees were "enemies." They were first girdled, shutting off the sap and finally choked to death. They could then be pushed over. The Indians had left Edgecombe County two dozen years earlier, so the GANTTS for the most part were spared the trials and tribulations of protecting their lives from the dangers still faced by settlers in the western and central parts of the North Carolina colony.

With the clearing of the land a log cabin was constructed. A crude life was upon them, but they were

---

[4] "Unpatented land" is land originally owned by the government and not yet in private hands.

[5] Land Grant Office, Raleigh, N.C.: Deed Book 4, p. 109, dated 22 Feb. 1739.

determined to survive in this lonesome area when days on end would go by with no sight of anyone beyond the GANTT center of activity. Their log cabin had no wooden floor, but was of two rooms--the kitchen and a combined living and sleeping room and workshop. Later JOHN added a lean-to to serve first as a storeroom and later as a bedroom for their first child. The furniture was made by hand from the nearby forest. A few stools and benches, a couple of crude tables, shelves, a few pots and pans comprised the cabin's furnishings. The beds were of leaves and straw, placed on the floor of dirt. Animal skins and, later, hand-made quilts were used for coverings. For the first year in the cabin the GANTT'S dishes were wooden.[6]

They ate their own garden vegetables and fruits, along with apple cider and peach brandy. They grew a native herb for tea as a substitute for real English tea. In addition were maize and peaches, with corn bread, hominy and pork. JOHN acquired some livestock after he had cleared about 100 acres. Up to that time he had owned only two oxen. In 1845, because of the widespread cattle rustling in the colony, a law was passed requiring the branding of all cattle. JOHN GANT'S mark was recorded, a "crop and a slit in the left ear."[7]

By 1748, three years after their arrival, the lean-to interior was changed from a storeroom into a bedroom for their first-born, EDWARD GANT (VIII 176). The cabin now had a floor, two windows, and a chimney--all of which had been added after its initial construction. By 1750 JOHN had acquired additional acreage, now cleared. He had successfully marketed his tobacco, shipping it down the Tar River to Bath.

As young GANT worked his acreage into a tobacco growing operation, the need for slave labor grew. In the economy of the 1750's slave labor and tobacco growing were inextricably intertwined. A heavy concentration of hands per acre was essential. As JOHN'S tobacco culture grew he needed more and more slaves. Sellers would bring slaves up the Haw River, about eight miles west of Hillsborough, where GANT would purchase the slaves, recently arrived from Africa. Stunned by the ordeal of the vicious passage from Africa to America, the auctions were in a small way somewhat reassuring to the slaves. The realization that they would not be eaten alive, as some had claimed they would, was the ultimate in relief. The sight of other Africans working in the fields gave

---

[6]Hugh Lefler and Albert Ray Newsom, *The History of a Southern State: North Carolina* (Raleigh, N. C.: University of North Carolina Press, 1954) p. 124.

[7]North Carolina Archives: File #37,910.

them hope that their lives, despite the terrors of the sea passage, could be lived.

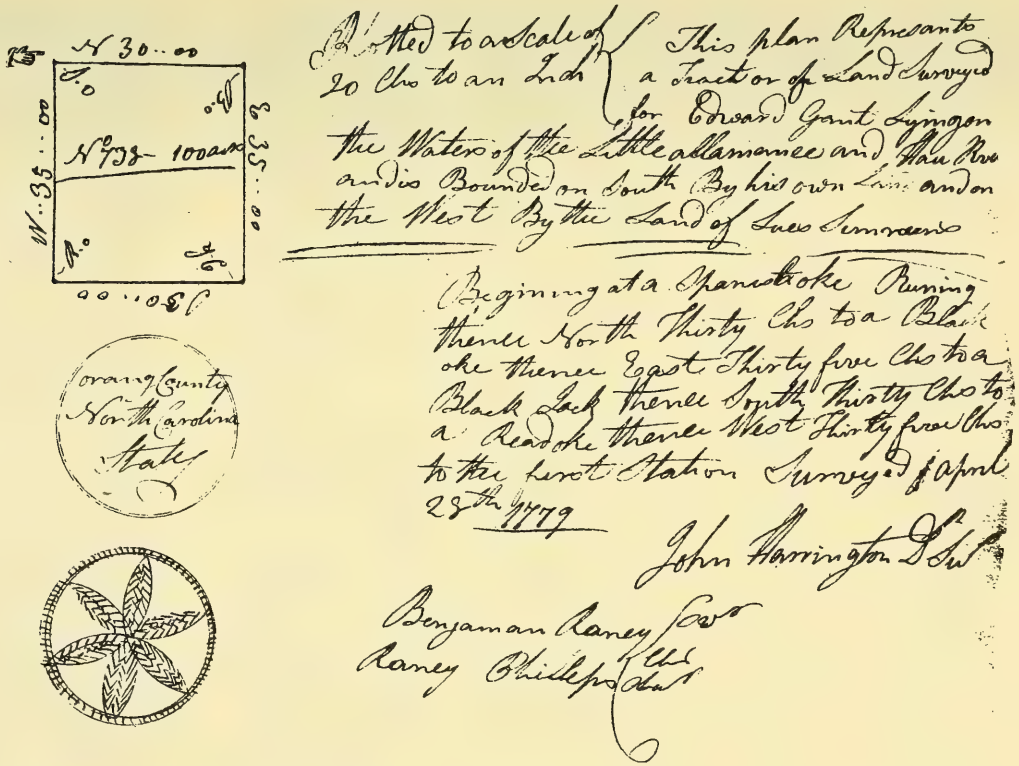
All of JOHN GANT'S slaves were his own responsibility: their food, housing, health--and their productivity. They worked 15 or 16 hours a day in the fields, with only Sundays and a few days at Christmas for themselves. A few learned a craft, and others became domestic servants. On occasions the field workers found themselves working side-by-side with JOHN'S son EDWARD, and later with William, John, James and Isham.[8] On North Carolina plantations in the Albemarle region, work was essential and all family members and slaves were constantly contributing to the goal of marketing tobacco at a profit.

By 1770 JOHN GANT Sr. and his sons were considering selling their acreage and moving to Orange County, fast becoming the most populous county in the North Carolina colony. EDWARD and his wife now had two sons, John Jr. and THOMAS GANT (VII 88), born in 1770, and two daughters, Carey and Sarah. Their plantation in Bute County (later Franklin County) was declining in its productivity. Actually,the soil was exhausted. Planters, including JOHN GANT and his sons, found it easier to clear new ground rather than use their barnyard manure to fertilize existing cleared land. Land was abundent and cheap, and it was considered more profitable--and easier--to clear new ground rather than increase the tobacco productivity of old fields. The practice was to grow tobacco after the first year of clearing, then let the land "rest" for three years while new land was being made ready. This procedure, after some 20 years, was beginning to take its toll and the decision was made to sell and move west to Orange County, where lived 4000 "white taxable males." Hillsborough, with only 30 or 40 inhabitants in 1764, now had grown to a point where it was the social, political and economic center of the "back country" of the state. Only son James elected to stay in Franklin County.

JOHN GANT and his son EDWARD soon took a keen and active interest in the political problems of their area. They became friendly with a nearby planter by the name of WILLIAM DAVIS (VIII 178). He had lived in Baltimore County, Maryland, on the Chesapeake Bay, where he was

---

[8]Orange County, N. C. Will Book D, p. 30, proved May 1800: John Gant Sr. Leaves to wife Ann "all the land on the south Side of the Haw River...." Listed are his sons: William, John Jr., James, Isham and Zacharia; daughters Keziah Rippey, Sarah G.,Mary Riggins, and Hannah Boisch (?). EDWARD GANT, his oldest son, had died in 1782.



1779 PLAT OF EDWARD GANT LAND showing location of his 100 acres on "the waters of the Little Alamance and Haw River bounded on South by his own land and on the West by the land of Luis Simmons." This was Grant #303, Entry #738, entered on 9 Feb. 1779 in Book 32, Page 451.

born on 23 December 1740, the son of THOMAS DAVIS (IX 356), of Welsh descent.[9] Like others in Maryland, WILLIAM DAVIS was attracted to the cheap land of North Carolina and he and his wife,HANNAH PHILLIPS (VIII 179), of Virginia settled in the western section of Orange County.

Both JOHN SR. and EDWARD GANT, along with WILLIAM DAVIS, were unhappy with the manner in which the eastern aristocracy of the North Carolina colony was dominating the western counties, including Orange. They were not critical of the basic form of government: a Royal Governor representing the Crown. They were, in fact, strong in their feelings that living in an English colony was a most satisfactory life. England provided a market for their produce, and offered protection through British laws and government. But the domination of government in the colony by easterners was unacceptable, in the opinion of many in and around Orange County. This dissatisfaction by the late 1760's and early 1770's resulted in the formation of the "Regulators," organized to "regulate" the payment of dues and fees "until they were satisfied that they were agreeable to law." Excitement ran high in Hillsborough. WILLIAM DAVIS, active in the Regulator movement, signed a petition addressed "To the Governor and Council, etc. (stating that) The humble petition of us subscribers sheweth that We the inhabitants of Orange County pay larger fees for recording of Deeds than any of the adjacent counties and many other fees more than the law allows. We are disregarded ...." The petition described what the Regulators considered appropriate redress. It was signed also by Thomas and Jonathan Davis.[10]

Governor William Tryon, sensing the problem in Orange County, traveled to Hillsborough, hoping to bring about a more peaceful feeling among the people. But the rumors heard by the Gant and the Davis families were that he was raising the militia to quell the Regulators and call on the Indians from the west to attack from the rear.

---

[9] Carroll Langstaff Davis and Bruce Pettit Davis, *A Davis Genealogy* (Toronto: 1934). THOMAS DAVIS, according to other sources, had six children: Thomas, Robert, Daniel, Judah, WILLIAM (b. 23 Dec. 1740, d. 20 Feb. 1834), and Christian. Judah, the only daughter married Christopher Dukes.

[10] WILLIAM DAVIS is listed as a "Regulator" in Clark's North Carolina papers, Vol. VII, p. 737. His signing of the petition is also on record.

In 1771, some 1500 militia men of Governor Tryon marched on Hillsborough, encamped on Great Alamance Creek just to the west, near EDWARD GANT'S plantation, where they were met by 2000 Regulators. After a two hour battle,the Regulators were defeated, with 20 killed and about 100 wounded. This was the end of the Regulator movement, but to many living in North Carolina it was setting the stage for the American Revolution. A substantial segment of the population was becoming unhappy with the corruptness of the colony's government.

The GANT and DAVIS families became very close in their relationships. They were in accord with the thinking of their neighbors who held the view that the eastern "courthouse ring," so long dominating the western counties, should be challenged and its grip ultimately broken. These rumblings of 1773 and 1774 were in keeping with the feelings of others within North Carolina and, when combined with the sentiment of those in other colonies, notably Massachusetts and Virginia, set the stage for a desire to overthrow the Crown government in America. Soon came the Declaration of Independence in 1776, and the American Revolution.

EDWARD GANT and WILLIAM DAVIS as well as others in Orange County had misgivings about the Declaration. They had favored challenging the Royal government in North Carolina so that their many grievances could be resolved. They preferred to achieve these domestic goals without independence from England and renouncement of their allegiance to their King. They felt that those in the eastern part of North Carolina were fomenting unrest simply because, if the revolution were successful, the easterners would personally benefit. This, thought those remaining loyal to the Crown, would perpetuate the "courthouse ring" in power--without even reporting to the Royal government.

During the latter part of 1776 the words of Thomas Jefferson were being circulated in North Carolina. Jefferson had written the Declaration of Independence, and EDWARD GANT and WILLIAM DAVIS read what Congress on 4 July 1776 had unanimously passed:

> ".... When in the Course of human events it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bands which have connected them with another, and to assume among the powers of the earth, the separate and equal station to which the Laws of Nature and of

Nature's God entitle them, a decent respect to the opinions of mankind requires that they should declare the causes which impel them to the separation. -- We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their creator with unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty, and the pursuit of Happiness. -- That to secure these rights, governments are instituted among Men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed, -- That whenever any Form of Government becomes destructive of these ends,it is the Right of the People to alter or abolish it, and to institute a new Government...."

EDWARD and WILLIAM agreed that the Declaration represented the thinking of many of their neighbors, and especially those along the eastern seaboard. But, they argued, separation from England was not necessary; that the grievances could be resolved without war and bloodshed; and the established government of England was best for the Colonies. But their thinking did not prevail. The Gant and Davis families remained steadfast in their contention that the King and the Crown must be supported.

Those people remaining loyal to England were called "Loyalists," or "Tories." Those favoring independence were termed "Patriots," or "Whigs." The Loyalists did not wish to see bloodshed. When the Declaration of Independence became a reality, they felt there was nothing to do but aid the British. Some Loyalists joined the British Army. Others attempted to assist the British forces by encouraging distrust in the country's financial system, refusing to pay taxes, circulating counterfeit money, aiding American deserters and resisting local civil officials.

By 1777 a law was passed by the North Carolina provincial congress (which had replaced the existing colonial government) defining reason and requiring Tories to take the oath of allegiance to the new government or suffer banishment. All persons found guilty of giving aid and comfort to the enemy were to be imprisoned for the remainder of the war and half of their estates immediately confiscated. None of the Gants nor WILLIAM DAVIS took this oath of allegiance and at once were suspect by the new government and many of their Patriot neighbors. At no time did any of the Gant sons take up arms against the British forces. There were neighborhood fights, destruction of property, and even life. William Gant, being sought by Patriots, hid in the woods for days

while his brother Isham brought him food.[11] Families were torn by separation; brothers took opposing views. What was a rebellion of all colonies against the British was also a civil war within states and counties.

Throughout the Colonies some 100,000 Loyalists paid the price of exile. They were virtually banished from their homes under penalty of death or constant harrassment so tortuous that there seemed to be no other choice but to leave. One common practice was to "tar and feather" a Loyalist. On occasions a Patriot mob would get out of hand and strip a Tory of his clothing. Heated pine tar was applied to his naked body, from head to foot. This would shrivel the skin. While the tar was still soft, goose feathers were sprinkled all over his body and sometimes lighted. These burning feathers would in turn ignite the tar. In extreme cases the victim was hauled around in a cart, beaten in front of onlookers at street corners. And then, as a final step in the horrifying operation, he would be taken to a gallows and fitted with a noose to terrify him. After being turned loose the Loyalist faced the painful task of cleaning himself. The clinging tar had to be torn from the skin,

---

[11] Family legend, as reported in a letter by John Quinton Gant in 1912 to a "cousin" in Washington, D. C. In this same letter John Quninton Gant reasons that William Gant was the father of THOMAS, although no documentation is submitted. To this author the weight of evidence is on the side of EDWARD GANT being the father of THOMAS, albeit no documentation can be provided to the reader. The rationale in support of EDWARD is as follows: There were several Gant families living in Franklin County until the 1770's when some of them moved to Orange County. Those known to be in Franklin County (and its predecessor counties Edgecombe, Granville, and Bute) were: John, John Jr., William, Isham, Edward, Andrew--based on original tax lists, deeds, and membership in the militia. All were old enough to pay taxes, own property, or be members in the militia. In John Gant Sr.'s will dated 1800, he listed sons William, James, Isham and Zacharia. There is a William Gant in Granville (Franklin) County who buys and sells land as early as 1757. His last deed in Franklin County was in 1771, and he apparently moved to Lincoln County, N. C. in 1779-1780. The William Gant who shows up in Orange County records is probably the son of John Gant the Elder. This William is still in Orange County in 1810, along with his brothers John Gant Jr. and Zachariah, based on U. S. Census of that year. EDWARD GANT, a son of John the Elder, does not appear in John the Elder's 1800 will because he died in 1782. It is in EDWARD GANT'S will that the telling argument in favor of EDWARD as the father of THOMAS appears. EDWARD lists THOMAS as one of his two sons, and his brother John is listed as an executor. Nowhere except by family legend is THOMAS ever shown to be a son of William.

and skin and flesh would be peeled off as well. Infection was a near certainty.

The Loyalists were honest and decent men. They were men without a country. In a sense they were men with two countries: England and America, and this led to a genuine - but double allegiance. One group of 72 from North Carolina petitioned the Crown for aid in getting them settled in Bermuda. Others went to Jamaica. Most of those leaving, however, went to Canada and England. But the Gant and Davis families remained as "Empire Loyalists," contending that they would rather live under English rule, an established form of government that had treated them and their families well over the past several generations.

Word reaching the Loyalists in Orange County regarding the Revolution was encouraging. In 1780 the Siege of Charleston by the British forces was highly successful, and a disaster for the American Continental troops. After the fall of Charleston to the British, a ring of military posts was placed across the northern borders of South Carolina, the principal one being at Camden. During August Lt. Gen. Cornwallis with 2250 men, most of whom were veteran and Tory troops, clashed head-on with the Continental forces numbering 3050 in The Battle of Camden. The Americans were devastated, and went down to the worst defeat ever inflicted on an American army in battle. Word seeped back to Orange County Loyalists in North Carolina that the British were on the verge of winning the war, and their belief that the British were on the "right" side encouraged them to hold to their Loyalist feelings.

Gen. Cornwallis, after the Battle of Camden, pursued the Continental troops,now in retreat through North Carolina, to the Virginia border. But, Cornwallis was discovering that to be 200 miles from his main supply depot was working a hardship, and his men were ordered to destroy excess supplies in order to enable them to quicken the pace aimed at catching the American forces. Waiting for the propicious moment,the American Maj. Gen. Nathaniel Greene ordered his army to attack his British pursuers. Weakened by the long march with inadequate supplies, the British turned south and retreated into Hillsborough in Orange County.

This sudden turn of events struck terror into the Gant and Davis families. The outcome of the war now seemed bleak, and the proximity of both armies to their plantations intensified their fears. As the British turned west from Hillsborough the Gant and Davis plantations on the Haw River were in the direct path of Cornwallis' armies. Hysteria took over in Orange County when, on the night of 15 February (1781),some 300 Loyal-

ists were suddenly confronted by American military parties and 100 were killed, with most of the remainder wounded. The Tories, armed, were enroute to join Cornwallis' forces when, near the Haw River, they were surprised by the Continental forces.[12]

WILLIAM DAVIS, after learning of the killings of many friends and neighbors, quickly decided to remove

BRITISH SOLDIERS in Guilford Courthouse Battle near homes of EDWARD GANT and WILLIAM DAVIS in North Carolina.

---

[12]The Haw River encounter was described by then Virginia Governor Thomas Jefferson in a letter to General George Washington, dated 8 March 1781:

"To His Excellency General Washington:

"SIR: I had the pleasure of receiving a letter from General Greene, dated High-rock Ford, February 29th (probably March the 1st), who informs me that on the night of the 24th (the Continental Army's) Colonel McCall surprised a (British) subaltern's guard at Hart's Mill, killed eight, and wounded and took nine prisoners, and that on the 25th General Pickens and Lieutenant Colonel Lee routed a body of nearly 300 Tories on the Haw River, who were in arms to join the British army, killed upwards of 100, and wounded most of the rest, which had a very happy effect on the disaffected in (that part of the) country....

"I am informed that Lord Cornwallis, on his retreat, erected the British standard at Hillsborough....and that their commanding officer was among the slain....(and) that Lord Cornwallis, after destroying everything he could, moved down the Haw River from Hillsborough...." (from *The Writings of Thomas Jefferson*, Memorial Edition, 1903, Vol. IV, pp. 165-167).

his family to Virginia where HANNAH PHILLIPS DAVIS' parents awaited them. Their oldest child, ELIZABETH (VII 89), was nine, and their youngest, Mary, was four.[13]

At Guilford Courthouse, the Americans and British soon found themselves in bitter combat. British General Cornwallis made his headquarters at the Gant plantation, and some 6300 men engaged in the fighting. The victor in the battle was difficult to determine,and word reaching nearby Hillsborough was mixed. In any event, the Gant plantation was devastated, with burned fences and the plantation in ruins.[14] The Davis estate, too, was reduced to shambles.

Cornwallis,however, soon had his forces ready again to move against the colonial armies by April of 1781. But, when at Yorktown in Virginia, the British were finally defeated and Cornwallis surrendered to Gen. George Washington. The Revolution was over and Independence became a reality.

At the start of the Revolution the Colonies had a population of approximately 2½ million persons, of whom about half were opposed to the "war of separation." At the close of the war there still were some 500,000 Loyalists who remained loyal to the King throughout the conflict and who were not in favor of separation from their Mother Country. "The Loyalists were Americans. They just guessed wrong."

The Treaty of Paris of 1783 between the United States and England stated that "Congress shall earnestly recommend to all state legislatures that they provide for the restitution of all (Loyalists') estates, rights and properties which have been confiscated....." While this seemed to be a humane document, most of the states ignored the recommendations and even after the war Patriots continued to confiscate Loyalist lands without being punished by the courts.

---

12 cont'd.

The location of the Gant and Davis estates on the Haw River has been documented through Orange County deeds (later to become Alamance County).

[13] op cit., A *Davis Genealogy*.

[14] Based on a statement of Nancy Ghent Triller, granddaughter of THOMAS GHENT.

WILLIAM DAVIS and his family lived with the Phillips in Virginia until early 1783, about a year and a half after Yorktown. Their son Jonathan was born in Virginia.[15] When the family did return to Orange County, WILLIAM learned to his sadness that his friend EDWARD GANT had passed away on 28 May 1782 at the age of 34. His wife had been named executor of the estate.[16]

WILLIAM DAVIS found life in the area gradually returning to normal after the Revolution. The many Gants in Orange County were recovering well. EDWARD'S brother, John Gant Jr., owned a water grist mill. He was also appointed overseer of the road from "Tollinger's ford to Col. O'Neal's, on Haw River." On 3 March 1787 John Gant Jr. and his brother were "ordered to lay out a new road .... from William Mebanie's to Ellis' Flatt on Haw River .... to main road to Guilford Courthouse." They were to "lay off and mark out" the road, as the Court of Pleas of Orange County stated in one of its quarterly meetings.

WILLIAM DAVIS' life during the post-war period was not always a pleasant one. From time to time he gave thought to leaving the country and traveling to Canada, but because Congress had promised to compensate the Loyalists he thought he might remain in the newly formed United States. However, restitution was never satisfactory, and he always remembered the attitude of the Patriots toward him during the War. By 1790 he decided to take advantage of the offers being made by Canadian Prime Minister Simcoe, urging those who remained loyal to the Crown to come to Canada and share in the growth of that country. WILLIAM'S daughter, ELIZABETH, in her late teens, and EDWARD GANT'S son, THOMAS, found each other very much to their liking. Amid great celebration, the couple was wed, and THOMAS and ELIZABETH GANT agreed to accompany the DAVIS family to Canada.

---

[15] See Appendix A, p. 417, for family composition of WILLIAM and HANNAH PHILLIPS DAVIS.

[16] As recorded in Orange County Will Abstracts--1752-1800: #279 Will dated 13 August 1781, Proved August 1783. Witnesses were William Rainey and his wife Mary. Executors were "brother John Gant and wife Elizabeth." Listed in the will are EDWARD GANT'S sons John and THOMAS, and daughters Cary and Sarah (Sary).

Several descendants of the Orange County Gants moved to RAY County, Missouri about 1837, including Dr. J. D. Gant, son of James and Mary Gant, born 1822 in Orange County.

The journey north through wilderness would take them some 500 miles. In addition to WILLIAM and HANNAH DAVIS, there were seven Davis children making the trip, plus THOMAS GANT. A number of slaves who refused to leave the family also journeyed northward with them. Some 20 "hoss beasts" carried the family's possessions. HANNAH, the mother, road the 500 wilderness miles "seated on a hunting saddle trimmed with blue velvet and ornamented with a pair of brass powder horns.[17] They left Orange County, heading straight north on the Great Wagon Road, into the Shenandoah Valley. Most of the travelers they met were southbound. After weeks of their pilgrimage they arrived at the Susquehanna River in Pennsylvania, just a few miles east of York. They arranged for a boat that would take them northward to Sunbury where the river forked east and north. They took the north branch, finally reaching the Genessee River in New York State. The Genessee took the family to Lake Ontario. This part of New York State was unsettled, being populated by a few pioneers and Indians.[18]

The family remained on the shores of Lake Ontario over the winter, with great hardship. Governor Simcoe of Upper Canada (now Ontario) heard of their predicament and sent a gunboat over to rescue the family, taking them to Fort Niagara (now Niagara-on-the-Lake). They stayed at Fort Niagara for about a year, when HANNAH DAVIS, who had suffered considerably through the past winter, died in 1793. Several of the family's slaves also perished during the harsh winter when slaves and family members alike endured inadequate housing and food.

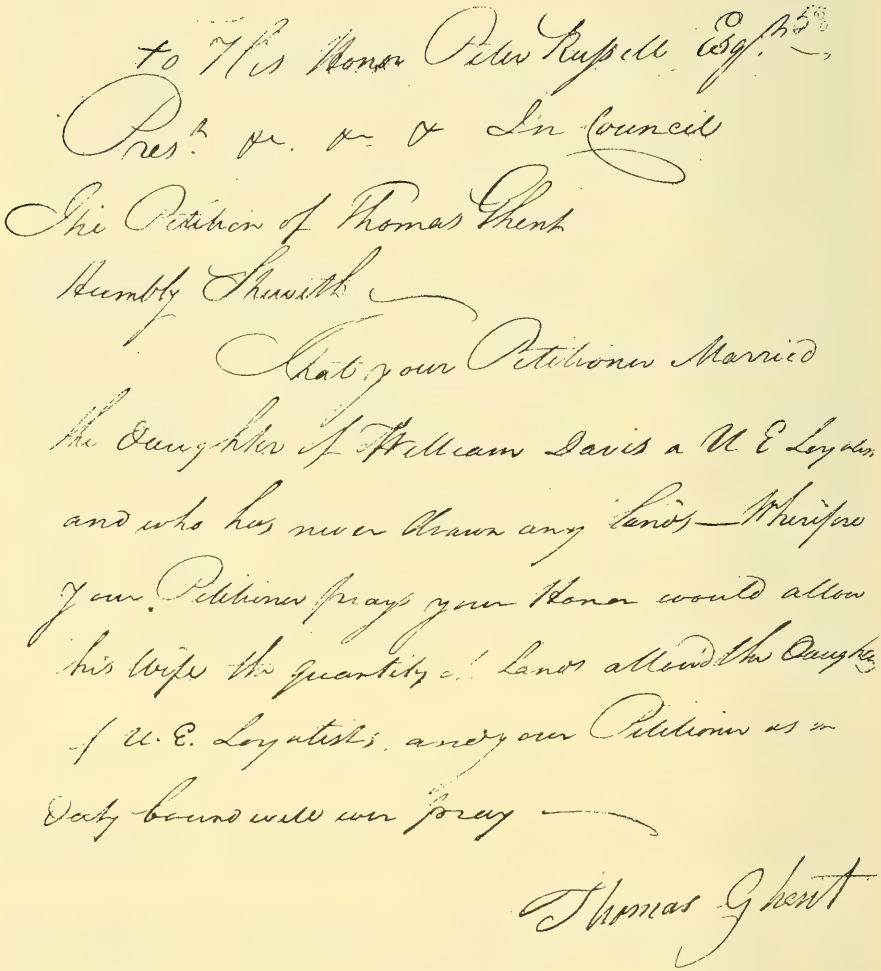
WILLIAM DAVIS and his son-in-law, THOMAS GHENT, petitioned the Upper Canada government for land in 1794, seeking property in Saltfleet Township in Wentworth County.[19] The former did not make any claim for his losses

---

[17] Marjorie Freeman, *The Mountain and a City--The Story of Hamilton* (McClellend and Stewart: 1966), p. 26.

[18] Rochester, N. Y. now stands on this site, but the area was not yet settled by whites. The first white settlement arrived in 1812.

[19] The family spelling of GANT in North Carolina was changed to GHENT upon arrival in Upper Canada (Ontario). This change was due, presumably, to differentiate the Canadian family from those remaining in the United States. The original spelling GANTT used by the initial family in Maryland was apparently changed to GANT upon moving to North Carolina. However, the GANTT spelling is found in North Carolina today.



To His Honor Peter Russell Esq.r
Pres.t &c. &c. & in Council
The Petition of Thomas Ghent
Humbly Sheweth
That your Petitioner Married
the Daughter of William Davis a U E Loyalist
and who has never drawn any Lands — Wherefore
your Petitioner prays your Honor would allow
his Wife the quantity of Lands allowed the Daughters
of U. E. Loyalists, and your Petitioner as in
Duty bound will ever pray —

Thomas Ghent

THOMAS GHENT'S PETITION IN 1794 for Crown Land in Upper Canada (now Ontario). His petition, which was granted, was based on the fact that his wife, Elizabeth, was the daughter of a U. E. L., WILLIAM DAVIS.

in North Carolina because he was late in arriving in Canada and submitting his petition. As a United Empire Loyalist he was awarded 500 acres in Saltfleet, Lots 3 and 4, on which he constructed his "Harmony Home Manor." THOMAS GHENT was given a grant of 333 acres,[20] as the husband of the daughter of a Loyalist. Here WILLIAM DAVIS and THOMAS GHENT built Albion Mills,[21] a grist mill grinding the coarse, dark flour as well as buckwheat used almost daily in the making of pancakes by the early settlers of what was later to become the City of Hamilton. Gradually, however, THOMAS turned more and more to farming.

THOMAS and ELIZABETH GHENT remained in Saltfleet Township until the spring of 1804.[22] By that time their family was comprised of three daughters and two sons.[23] Basically a farmer, THOMAS had undertaken the growing of apple trees in the Saltfleet area, and when they moved to Halton County, they dug up all their apple trees they had grown from seed, brought them in a canoe across Burlington Bay, carried them through the forest to their new homestead in Brant's Block (Burlington), about eight miles from Hamilton.

THOMAS GHENT had familiarized himself with this area at the north end of Burlington Beach. He knew about its moderate temperatures during the summer months, the hot south winds being tempered in crossing the lake. He was aware, too, that this section was sheltered from the violence of storms that devastated other areas more exposed. Nelson Township, like most of Halton County, had early summers and were virtually exempt from summer frosts. Good spring water was abundant and the soil

---

[20] In Saltfleet, Lots 30 and 31. The adjoining lots 28 and 29 were granted to John Ghent, presumably the brother of THOMAS. John petitioned the government for Crown land on 9 July 1794 (Public Archives of Canada), but his wife is said to have died and he returned to North Carolina.

[21] In later years Mt. Albion and the Glendale Golf and Country Club were to occupy a portion of these lands.

[22] Grimsby Historical Society, Annals of the Forty, N.5 (Hamilton, Ontario, 1950).

[23] See Appendix A, p. 420, for the children and other descendants of THOMAS and ELIZABETH DAVIS GHENT.

known to be highly suitable for the growing of apples, strawberries, melons as well as tomatoes.[24]

Soon after the family's arrival in Nelson Township the Ghent's sixth child, DAVID GHENT (VI 44), was born on 9 June 1804. Ontario at this point in time was part of Quebec, known as Upper Canada, later to become Ontario. During these years, as DAVID GHENT was growing up, the country was run by a ruling class that was strongly influenced by political party members' ties of mutual interest and social contacts. Despite the complaints of the "plainer people" the elected officials governed more for their self-interest than for the benefit of all people.

THOMAS GHENT, and later his son DAVID, disagreed with the actions of the government by the upper class. The society of York (present-day Toronto) and vicinity was highly stratified, as was true in both Great Britain and America during the 1800's. Holding positions of rank in the Government was associated with high status. Patronage was rampant. "Each opening in the civil service involved pulling strings and twitching wires."[25] Being a United Empire Loyalist was not sufficient; they were considered by many to be "Americans," with their peculiar non-British behavior and manners. Even wealth was not a criterion for "membership in the elite." As the years went by land values increased rapidly and the acquisition of wealth did not automatically result in acceptance in the "upper class."

The Ghents were Methodists, considered a step down from the Church of England. The latter had a "land monopoly," according to the government dissidents. Moreover, it was claimed that the Anglican Church was a stepping stone to social acceptance.

It was in this environment that DAVID GHENT grew into manhood. He openly expressed his dissatisfaction with the government and the role of the Church of England. It was also into this life that William Lyon Mackenzie was growing up (later to become famous and a friend of DAVID GHENT). He was a Scotchman of humble parentage, arriving in Canada in 1820 to try his fortunes.

---

[24] Martha Craig, *The Garden of Canada* (Toronto: William Briggs, 1901), p. 2.

[25] The description of the political activities is drawn largely from *The Makers of Canada Series* by Stephen Butler Leacocks, (New York City, Oxford University Press, 1929).

He set up business in a small way in York, then moved it to Dundas, near the DAVID GHENT family. DAVID and William Lyon Mackenzie, nine years his senior, spent many evenings together discussing what they considered to be the bizarre actions of the government. Mackenzie became so agitated that he gradually let his business of hardware, toys, drugs and paints drift while he spent more and more time on his publication, the *COLONIAL ADVOCATE*, which he started in 1824.

DAVID GHENT as a young man was active in support of William Lyon Mackenzie.

Through the *ADVOCATE* he openly denounced the Government, the Church of England, the lack of schools, the perversion of justice and the greed of the official class. Mackenzie found his publication in great demand and soon it was influential in molding the opinions of those opposing the Government, known as Reformers. Those in the Government became uneasy and attempted to restrain Mackenzie, but to no avail. He moved his printing press from Dundas to York Mackenzie, but to no avail. He moved his printing press from Dundas to York in 1825, with his attacks on government people becoming more and more aggressive.

Mackenzie's popularity was reaching its height when he decided to run for the Assembly from the County of York in 1828; he was elected. But Mackenzie had one grave weakness: he was arrogant. He did not know the meaning of humility. He employed his *Colonial Advocate* to attack anyone in the Legislative Council who would oppose him. His grievances were often unfounded, and his constant agitations began to reduce his popular following. His decline began in earnest when he initiated his attack on the Assembly as a body. He was expelled from the Assembly, being called "a reptile unworthy of the notice of any gentleman."

Mackenzie soon became a martyr, and in 1833 became the first mayor of York on its incorporation as the City of Toronto. While he proved to be a good mayor, he failed to drop his continued efforts to discredit those in power in a manner that was unpalatable to many, including some of his own followers. After his mayorship, Mackenzie organized a rebel group in 1837 to create disorder in rural areas and open-armed rebellion on Toronto. The attack was a failure, with the rebel forces being scattered in all directions. Upon the collapse of the insurrection, the government of Upper Canada issued a proclamation calling for the arrest of the leaders of the Party of Rebels,with $5000 being offered to "any one who will apprehend and deliver up William Lyon Mackenzie."

DAVID GHENT, married in 1827 to MARY GREEN HOWELL (VI 45), saw Mackenzie as a man of personal honor and integrity, "large-hearted, sympathetic and above corruption"[26] True, reasoned the young GHENT now in his early thirties, Mackenzie "developed an irresponsibility of tongue and pen and action" but as one of his friends he was not about to aid the government in its attempt to capture and hang him.

Government soldiers suspected that Mackenzie was hiding in the area of the GHENT homestead at Dundas Street and Sixteen Mile Creek near Burlington. The rebel went first to the home of Phillip Triller and hid in a secret attic while Triller's seven daughters diverted the attention of the searchers with wine and laughter. The brothers helped Mackenzie down a rope ladder,and he then swam the icy creek then in flood, and scrambled up the banks to DAVID GHENT'S home. Here he was hidden in a bin of peas. DAVID'S wife, MARY, took him food for three nights while the hunt was at its peak. Soldiers finally closed in on the GHENT farm, and searched the area thoroughly, poking pitchforks into the peas to make certain no one was hiding there. However, he was not detected and was then taken to another sympathizer, Gilbert Davis. He dressed Mackenzie in some of his wife's clothes and the rebel rode unsuspected to Hamilton and Niagara. He then was able to escape to the United States at Lockport.[27]

DAVID GHENT and wife MARY GREEN HOWELL in their middle fifties.

DAVID GHENT'S father, THOMAS GHENT, the Canadian immigrant from North Carolina, had died several years earlier, on 15 May 1824. He was buried in the Union Burying Ground in Nelson Township, Halton County. This cemetery was later established as a burying ground for United Empire Loyalists. After

---

[26] As quoted in *The Maker of Canada Series.*

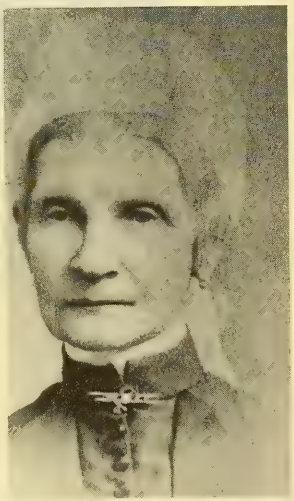
[27] Drawn from a newspaper article with Palermo, Ontario dateline, "April 21" published about 1939. The headline was "Father Helped Mackenzie Swim Flood and Escape; Palermo Woman Now 95." She was Harriet Ann Howell; married Clinton P. Lawrence. Her father was John Triller Howell. Phillip Triller was "her father's uncle."

his name on his tombstone appears the initials "U. E.L." suggesting that THOMAS GHENT was a Loyalist.[28]

UNION BURYING GROUND for United Empire Loyalists, where THOMAS GHENT and WILLIAM DAVIS are buried.

ELIZABETH DAVIS GHENT lived for 16 years after her husband's death, through the height of the Mackenzie Rebellion. She died in June of 1840, and was buried alongside her husband.

Their son DAVID and his wife MARY remained on the Ghent farm and continued to grow the fruit and vegetables which were developing into a highly successful orchard operation. Their first child had been born on 26 December 1828: WILLIAM BOYD GHENT (V 22).[29] He attended schools in Wellington Square (now Burlington) after which he worked at the store of J. P. Gage. He then entered the employ of the H. H. Hurd Marble Works, but a serious accident to him there ended his career in that establishment.



MARY GREEN HOWELL GHENT, mother of WILLIAM BOYD GHENT

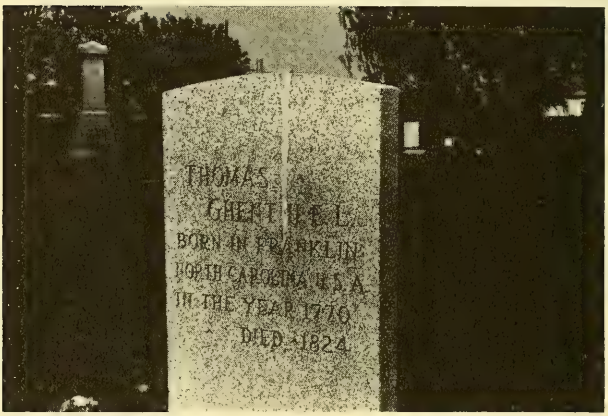
Living nearby in "Wellington Square" was a family by the name of LEWIS HORNING (VI 46). He and his wife, ELEANOR BLAARE BATES (VI 47),

---

[28] THOMAS GHENT was a very young boy during the American Revolution and did not quality as a British Empire Loyalist. He was buried in the U. E. L. cemetery because his wife, ELIZABETH DAVIS GHENT, was the daughter of the Loyalist WILLIAM DAVIS, and this qualified THOMAS GHENT and other family members to be buried in the "Union Burying Ground."

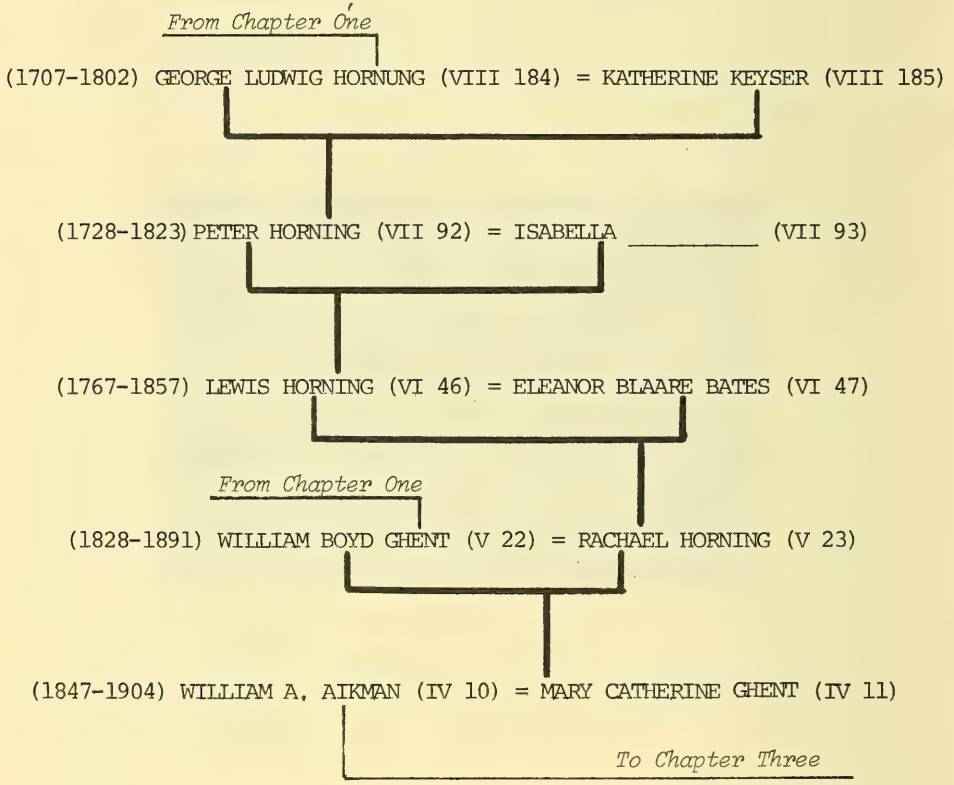
[29] See Appendix A, p. 420, for the children of DAVID and MARY GREEN HOWELL GHENT.

had a daughter named RACHEL BEVORT HORNING (V 23). She and WILLIAM BOYD GHENT were attracted to each other.



GRAVESTONE OF THOMAS GHENT in United Empire Loyalist cemetery near Burlington, Ontario. Despite the inscription, THOMAS GHENT was not a member of the U. E. L. His wife, ELIZABETH DAVIS GHENT, was the daughter of WILLIAM DAVIS, a U. E. L.

2


From Chapter One
(1707-1802) GEORGE LUDWIG HORNUNG (VIII 184) = KATHERINE KEYSER (VIII 185)
(1728-1823) PETER HORNING (VII 92) = ISABELLA _____ (VII 93)
(1767-1857) LEWIS HORNING (VI 46) = ELEANOR BLAARE BATES (VI 47)
From Chapter One
(1828-1891) WILLIAM BOYD GHENT (V 22) = RACHAEL HORNING (V 23)
(1847-1904) WILLIAM A. AIKMAN (IV 10) = MARY CATHERINE GHENT (IV 11)
To Chapter Three

CHAPTER TWO — Horning, Ghent

When GEORGE LUDWIG HORNUNG (VIII 184) was a young boy in Germany, he knew even at that early age that his parents were a most unhappy couple, living in almost constant fear because of their religious convictions.[1] They were Mennonites -- followers of Menno Simons, a religious zealot who had lived some 200 years earlier but whose teachings had attracted followers in Germany, the Netherlands and Switzerland. Menno believed in the separation of the church and secular society, a line of thought most advanced for his day.

The political rulers during the 1600's and 1700's were fearful of any movement that suggested a weakening of the state supported church, largely Roman Catholic in southern lands. Thus, the monarchies cracked down on any group found thwarting the rulers' efforts to maintain one and only one religion. Menno Simons sought religious liberty. His group believed that no baptism was worthwhile unless accompanied by some repentance, and for that reason baptisms administered to infants were in vain. Such thinking during those days was a basis for government action. Mennonites, as Menno's followers came to be known, held their meetings in secret places, often in the middle of the night in order to prevent possible exposure. Discovery of these activities would lead to painful persecution, and the Mennonites were forced to disperse from time to time to escape capture by government soldiers. They even avoided knowing the names of those with whom they worshipped so as to preclude inadvertent exposure of a fellow believer.

One of the Mennonite preachers of the day, expressing the feelings of his compatriots, prayed that "....Into Thy hands I commend my body and soul. Give me patience and resignation, Forgive my sins and wickedness ....Lay not on me more than I can bear....Protect me in this time of war and danger, that evil men may not do with me as they wish. Take me to a place where I can be concealed from them, free from such trials and cares. My wife and children, too, that they may not come to shame at their hands. Let all my dear friends find mercy from Thee....Gather us into heaven of which I am

---

[1]Family legend. The Horning name is said to be found today in Mechlenburg. GEORGE LUDWIG HORNUNG is also mentioned as being born in Holland. This latter contention, probably in error, may be due to his embarkation from Holland. Also, his wife, KATHERINE KEYSER, is said to have been born in Holland, also contributing to the contention that GEORGE LUDWIG HORNUNG was born there. KATHERINE KEYSER could have been the daughter of Nicholas Keyser who came to America on the *Adventure*, landing on 2 Oct. 1727.

unworthy, but still I have faith that God will not drive me into the Devil's kingdom with such a host as that which now, in this land with murder and robbery,destroys many people in many places, and never once think how it may stand before God....Well is it known that misery, suffering and danger are about in this land, with robbing, plundering, murdering and burning. Many a man is brought into pain and need and abused even unto death. Many a beautiful home is destroyed. The clothes are torn from the backs of many people. Cattle and herds taken away..the beehives are broken down, the wine spilled ...."[2]

Almost in response to this prayer was the message of William Penn, a Quaker whose religion shared many points with those of the Mennonites. Penn had acquired a vast territory in America -- from England. He invited these Germans and others to come to the "island of Pennsylvania" where, he promised, his country would provide a livelihood, with freedom to worship, for all. He stated that there was no official church, no government sponsored church -- complete religious freedom. Some of the Hornung neighbors had already left for America, during the early 1700's. Their letters about Pennsylvania were read with keen expectation by the Hornungs and other families considering emigration. One letter describing eastern Pennsylvania read: "....This land is in a good and temperate climate, not too hot or too cold....the air is very pure, since it lies high; it is very well watered, having streams, brooks and springs, and the soil has the reputation of being better than can be found (elsewhere) in Pennsylvania or Virginia. Walnut, chestnut, oak and mulberry trees grow naturally in great profusion, as well as many fruit-bearing trees, and the wild white and purple grapes in the woods are larger and better than any other place in America.

"The soil is favorable for wheat, barley, rye, Indian corn, hemp, flax and also silk, besides producing many other useful things much more abundantly than in Germany. A field can be easily planted for from ten to twenty successive years without manure. It is also suitable for such fruits as pears, cherries, prunes, quinces, and especially peaches which grow unusually well and bear fruit in three years from the planting of the stone.

"All garden crops do very well,and vineyards can be made, since the wild grapes are good, and would be still better if they were dressed and pruned. Many horses, cattle and sheep can be raised and kept, since an excellent grass grows exuberantly....The land is also full of

---

[2]Daniel K. Cassel, *History of the Mennonites* (Philadelphia, Pa., 1888), pp. 71-2.

cattle, called buffaloes and elks....There are also bears, which hurt nobody. They feed on the leaves and wild fruits, on which they get very fat, and their flesh is excellent. Deer exist in great numbers, beside Indian cocks and hens (turkeys) which weigh from twenty to thirty pounds each; wild pigeons more than any other place in the world; partridges, pheasants, wild swans, geese, all kinds of ducks and many other small fowl and animals; so that if settlers can only supply themselves for the first year with bread, some cows for milk and butter, and vegetables....they can live better than the richest nobleman...."[3]

To the poor Mennonites in Germany and elsewhere, such a description sounded like unequalled enchantment. The Hornung family considered emigration, but other letters warned against the hardships of the trip over. Read one: "We learn from New York that a ship from Rotterdam going to Pennsylvania with 150 Palatinates wandered 24 weeks at sea. When they finally arrived at port nearly all the people were dead. The rest....were forced to subsist on rats and vermin and all are sick and weak. The danger of such an occurence is always so great that the most heedless do not run the risk except through extreme want."

GEORGE LUDWIG HORNUNG, now a young man in his twenties was excited about all he heard regarding America. He decided to emigrate, leaving his parents behind in Germany. And so, in 1732, along with other German emigrants, he set sail from Rotterdam, Holland. He stopped first in Cowes in south England where, with 279 Mennonites, Palatinates and others, he took the final step to freedom; they boarded the *Ship Samuel* and prepared for the fearful trip across the Atlantic. They arrived on 11 August 1732.[4]

Young LUDWIG HORNUNG married KATHERINE KEYSER (VIII 185) who had emigrated from Holland. Their first child, a son, was named PETER HORNUNG (VII 92).[5] The young family settled in Skippack, in Pennsylvania, an area originally a part of Germantown which was outgrowing its land allocations. Skippack was founded some 30 years

---

[3]Ibid. pp. 191-2.

[4]Strassburger, *Pennsylvania German Pioneers -- 1727-1755*, Vol. I, pp. 59 and 63.

[5]There is some question as to whether PETER HORNUNG was born in Germany or Pennsylvania. Family legend lists his birth date as 1728, prior to his father's emigration to Pennsylvania, but this is probably in error. Neither LUDWIG HORNUNG'S wife KATHERINE nor

earlier, and several Mennonites from Holland were farming there. Here GEORGE LUDWIG built a cabin of hewed walnut logs, cleared land, and began farming. A Mennonite burying ground and church had been built in 1725, known as the lower Skippack meeting-house. It was re-

EARLY MENNONITE MEETING-HOUSES were simple one room buildings constructed of logs. The minister preached from a platform elevated one step from the floor. He received no salary. Mennonites believed that the New Testament was the only rule of faith and that it was unlawful to swear or wage war on anyone at any time on any occasion.

built in 1735, three years after GEORGE LUDWIG arrived, and was a large plain, one story building, with plain, movable benches "and provided with a narrow platform on one side, elevated one step from the floor, on which was a single bench for the minister."

Mennonites believed that "the New Testament is the only rule of faith; that the first man was not created perfect, that it is unlawful to swear or wage war upon any occasion, that infants are not the proper subjects of baptism, that ministers of the Gospel ought to receive no salary...." and "that washing one another's feet was a sign of true humility...." and that "anyone guilty of a wicked life or perverted doctrine is justly shunned or avoided by all members of the Church, whether

---

5 cont'd.
their son PETER is on the ship's list, although LUDWIG GEORGE HORNUNG is. Moreover, KATHERINE KEYSER was ten years younger than LUDWIG, supporting the contention that they were married after arriving in America.

in eating or drinking, and they shall have no dealings with him....so that they may not be contaminated by him nor made partakers of his sins."

Those Mennonites at Skippack, like others in Pennsylvania, wore simple clothes. Women went to church in short dresses and petticoats, and with white or checked flaxen aprons. The young men shaved smooth and wore white caps. In summer they went without coats, wearing striped homespun trousers, and barefooted. Older men wore wigs.[6] Consumption of liquor was considered a disgraceful bit of behavior, "....acknowledging the pernicious influence on the body and soul which the manufacture, sale and use of intoxicating drinks exert on mankind...."[7]

Reared as a farmer, GEORGE LUDWIG HORNUNG quickly converted his labor into the purchase of fertile land. Soon he had fields of grain and truck crops. He knew, as did the other Germans, about the use of fertilizers for worn-out fields -- quite in contrast to the Englishman's inefficiency. By 1769, living in Parkiomen-Skipake Township, LUDWIG had acquired 160 acres, three horses and six head of cattle. He farmed here for some 14 years.[8]

He replaced his original log cabin with a stone house constructed from the limestone and fieldstone obtained through the gradual clearing of his land. The house-raising was an occasion for fun as well as hard work, the men gathering early in the morning and working day after day until the building had been covered. Meanwhile, GEORGE LUDWIG HORNUNG spurred his neighbors on with hearty meals.

GEORGE LUDWIG'S house contained a kitchen which was the structure's largest room. At one end a large open fireplace was built up with stone and mortar. He attached a stable and cow barn to the house, for his animals were valued highly and well cared for. A trap door led to a basement which provided food storage as well as a hiding place in case of Indian attack. Hams, shoulders and bacon cut from hogs killed each winter were cured over a constant hickory-wood fire in the smokehouse.

PETER HORNING (Hornung), now a young man, worked with his father on their acreage. By 1770 he was well on his way to producing his own large family: three

---

[6]Watson's Annals.

[7]*Bucks County Intelligencer.*

[8]Pennsylvania Archives, Third Series, Vol. XIV, 1897.

sons -- Abraham in 1765, Isaac in 1766, and LEWIS (VI 46) in 1767, and two of his daughters, Catherine in 1763 and Magdeline in 1769.[9] Like other Germans in Pennsylvania, the Hornings were slow to adopt the English language. There was no real need for a second tongue. But, with the growing anti-British feeling brought on by actions thought to be unfair to the Colonists, Pennsylvania Germans found themselves in a house somewhat divided. Many favored taking strong action against the British, even if it meant war. Others felt that the grievances could be resolved without war and bloodshed. Mennonites, however, were in a most awkward position. They understood the aims and goals of both sides, but Mennonites were pacifists. They did not believe in taking up arms against anyone, much less their neighbors, on any occasion or for any reason. In this difficult role, they were criticized by both sides by their refusal to fight.[10]

It was at this point that the Hornings had to decide whether to support the British or American cause. But the family followed their neutral position. They really did not know which way to turn. They truly did not want British interference, but at the same time they did not seek independence from England. Surely, thought PETER HORNING, it is better to live under British rule with all their established laws and security rather than see bloodshed and anarchy. So he and his Mennonite neighbors remained neutral.[11] PETER HORNING still had to face the problem of the distribution of his grain and produce -- within the pacifist framework. He arranged to haul wheat to nearby Valley Forge in 1777 where General George Washington had his headquarters.[12] Such activity was considered an individual matter, and not subject to religious discipline.

---

[9]Information of the family of LUDWIG and KATHERINE KEYSER HORNUNG appears in Appendix A, p. 000.

[10]Daniel Nead, *Pennsylvania Germans* (Lancaster, Pa.: Press of the New Era Publishing Co., 1914) p. 32.

[11]The political feelings of PETER HORNUNG are not known, but those portrayed here represent the views held by Mennonites in Pennsylvania as described in *Flight from the Republic* by North Callahan (Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill Co., Inc., 1967), and *The Pennsylvania Dutch* by William T. Parsons (Boston: Twayne Publishers, 1976).

[12]It is quite probable that PETER HORNUNG felt more strongly about remaining neutral during the War of Independence than the balance of the family. Michael Horning, PETER'S younger brother, for example, was a private in the militia from middle New Providence and is reported to have hauled wheat to Valley Forge and shaken hands with George Washington. (From the Bulletin of Historical Society of Montgomery County, Pa. (Vol. I, No. 6, April 1939.)

After the War of Independence the Hornings found that their income was meager due to the fact that government notes sold at fifteen cents on the dollar. Moreover, Mennonites were treated as though they had been disloyal to the American cause. They watched speculators being paid off dollar for dollar. Many Tories in Pennsylvania with English background who had actively engaged in anti-Colony efforts were welcomed back. PETER HORNING and other Mennonites were deeply offended.

At about this time Governor J.C. Simcoe of Upper Canada (now Ontario) announced that his country would welcome those who felt they could live in a happier atmosphere in his land to the north. He urged families to come to Canada and settle on their newly opened fertile country. PETER HORNING knew little of Upper Canada, but he recalled that King George III of England was of German extraction and, all things considered, he decided to leave his homestead in Montgomery County and move to Upper Canada.

His two oldest sons, Abraham and Isaac, now 21 and 20 years old, would leave ahead of the rest of the family by about a year. Upon arrival they were to write their parents. So it was that in 1786 Abraham and Isaac Horning took off into the wilderness, wondering whether they would ever see their family again.

PETER HORNING and his family began making preparations for their journey to Upper Canada in earnest after Abraham's and Isaac's departure. He was able to sell the farm at a profit, and LUDWIG HORNING gave his son PETER a substantial sum to get him and his family started. After all, LUDWIG recalled his own decision to leave Germany about half a century earlier.

PETER began constructing a boat that would take them up rivers and across lakes. The Horning party consisted of PETER, his wife ISABELLA, their son LEWIS, now 21, and six daughters ranging from 9 to 15 years old. In addition to their personal belongings, a wagon team and a cow were considered essential. The team would draw the boat by wagon over land between waterways. The cow would provide milk during the journey.

In time all was in readiness, and amid sorrowful goodbyes with other family members and parents -- in 1787 -- PETER and his wife and children turned away from their years in Pennsylvania and headed west, overland to the Susquehanna River.[13] From that starting point, they

---

[13]The description of the trip from Pennsylvania to Ontario is based largely on material written by Lewis Horning Taylor, a grandson of LEWIS HORNING, for a book entitled *The Backwoods' Life* on 28 Febru-

embarked on the beautiful river, sometimes treacherous, always rushing southward. The Hornings were prepared to

AN EARLY MAP OF THE THIRTEEN COLONIES showing the route followed by the PETER HORNING family. The journey began in southeastern Pennsylvania, north via the Susquehanna River to New York State, and then several portages to Lake Ontario and west to Fort Niagara in Canada.

move upstream, and for miles upon miles they would travel without seeing any human being.

The tired Horning family finally reached Fort Sunbury where, earlier, it had been a home to many American Patriots who sought refuge from the British. At this

---

13 cont'd.
ary 1910. *The Backwoods' Life* is a history of early life in Upper Canada. Some of the dates in the lives of the Hornings used by Lewis Horning Taylor are in conflict with dates from other sources. There is, for example, disagreement on the arrival date of LUDWIG HORNUNG in this country. Another conflict is the departure date of PETER HORNING and his family for Ontario (Upper Canada). The dates used by this author are to the best of his knowledge the most reliable, after checking the inconsistencies in available data.

point the Susquehanna divides into two rivers: one to the northwest to Williamsport; the other to the east and north, through Bloomsburg and Wilkes-Barre where, during the Revolution, the Wyoming Valley massacre with Butler's Rangers took place. Isolated pioneers and soldiers at the Fort urged them to take the eastern river, for it would, they thought, enable them to travel further north without portage.

They moved all the way up to New York State on the Susquehanna. Each night PETER and his son would build fires at what they thought would be a suitable camping site. The fires would be left burning throughout the night. First PETER would keep watch, then LEWIS, then the oldest daughter Catherine. Wolves and panthers gathered within yards of the sleeping family,their howls and wails continuing into the night until daybreak came.

Then, as happened every morning of the month-long journey, the oxen and cow would be loosed for grazing while the meager food would be cooked for breakfast in preparation for another day on the Susquehanna. Finally, the livestock would be placed aboard the boat, along with all or most of the family, depending on whether some of the children preferred to walk along the banks--when possible. This, however, was dangerous because of the Indians, and was permitted only when the river flowed through open country.

When the Horning family crossed the border into New York State they encountered their first portage. Up to this time the Susquehanna had been fully navigable for PETER'S home-made scow. But now the oxen were called upon to pull the wagon and boat across land to Lake Otsego. Here, the scow was again launched, with LEWIS, his mother and sisters manning the boat while PETER and Catherine drove the team and cow along the banks of the lake.

Two more portages, and two more lakes remained before they would reach Lake Ontario. The last lake, Oneida, had its outlet into Lake Ontario, the major goal of their journey. After their arrival, they rested for three days on the southern shore of the lake near Fort Oswego, still under British control. In 1788 the Oswego trading area had few inhabitants, mostly trappers and traders with the Indians. But they were friendly and helpful and several people asked whether they could provide assistance in any way to this bedraggeld, exhausted family camping in an unknown area, in the midst of wild animals and Indians.

Finally, the embarkation for the last leg of the journey was at hand. All were placed on the boat, ready to move west to Canada on Lake Ontario. They followed

the shoreline as well as could be. The first night, they went ashore for sleeping and eating, and the next day found them again moving slowly westward on the lake. It was late this day when a storm caught the boat, drove it into the shore where it broke, with a good portion of the household goods being lost. All of the family, along with the oxen and the cow, were washed into the lake, but because the wreck took place so close to the land all were saved. However, the family goods had been washed away, and the disheartened family took to an open area where they again huddled, wondering what would happen to them next.

PETER decided to walk to Niagara, Ontario, to seek help -- a trip of some 80 miles. Alone, he began his arduous trip. He knew not whether he would return, or when. Indians, animals, an accident -- any one of many happenings could prevent his return. It was agreed that if help did not come within one week, LEWIS would start out for Niagara and help. But, in six days, the welcome sight of a rescue boat came along the shore. It was PETER and Jean Baptiste Rousseaux, a Canadian government official from Fort Niagara.

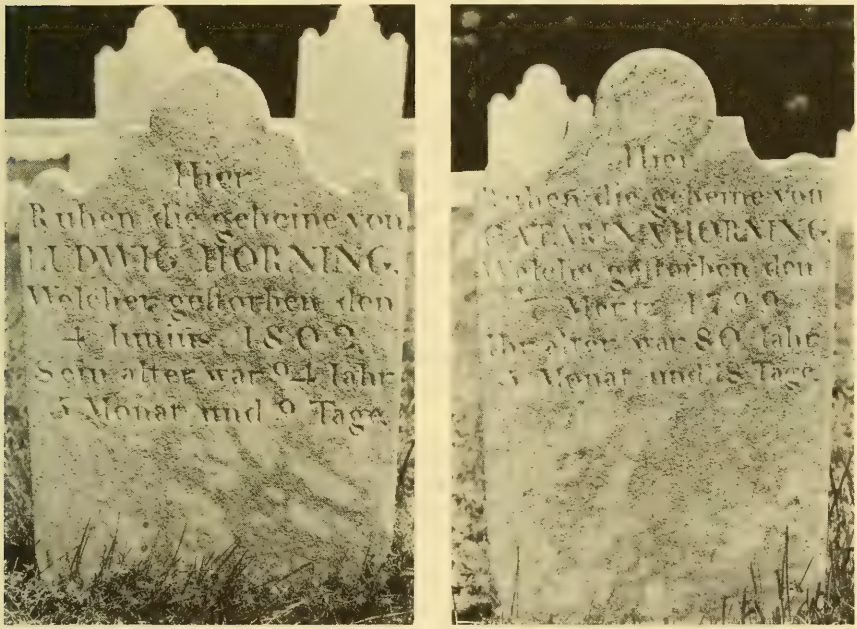
So, with this sailing vessel, the ravaged family of PETER HORNING arrived safely at a point just east of (what today is the city of) Hamilton. Here PETER and his family camped. They had been on United States soil for the last time. They were leaving a wilderness, and they were entering a wilderness.

So it was at this precise moment that in Philadelphia in the U.S., a group of people was gathered to inaugurate the country's first president, George Washington. A new democracy had been formed in America, but the Hornings were now far away from that new country, in spirit and in fact. Instead they were struggling to start their own lives over again. They were exhausted, drained of everything except a determination to succeed in this wilderness called "Upper Canada."

It had been two years since they had seen brothers Abraham and Isaac. Did they arrive safely in Canada? The family was told to look for a cabin along the south shore of the harbor (now Hamilton Harbor), about three miles from the family's encampment. PETER and two of the daughters started out one morning, following an Indian trail westward. They came upon a small cabin, in a clearing. The shanty - like structure was empty, but there was evidence of someone living in it. Then, one of the daughters shouted: "Look at these flowers! I know these flowers. We are at the end of our journey! These flowers are from seeds that mother gave to Abraham before he left Pennsylvania."

The two sons were not far away. They were fishing in Burlington Bay for their next meal. There was great rejoicing, and soon the family was together again. It was here that the family began their new lives. Only four families had preceded them into this wilderness.

This thrifty, hardworking German family found compensation for their willingness to put forth every possible effort. They settled into the growing community life of Barton, in Wentworth County (now Hamilton). But their progress was saddened one day when they re-



TOMBSTONES OF LUDWIG AND CATHERINE HORNING in Lower Skippack Mennonite Church Cemetery in Pennsylvania. The markers are in Row 10, Lots 26 and 27 and are in German.

ceived word from the Pennsylvania Hornings in Skippack that the family's founder in this country had died -- on 4 June 1802. During his latter years LUDWIG HORNING had turned to carpentry, and he finally succumbed at the age of 94.

In his will, prepared in 1797, he stated that

> "....I give and bequeath to my loving wife the free and un-interrupted use, liberty, privilege and support .... I also give her our best bed and all the bedding that be-

longs thereto, a walnut cloaths (chest), two check which stand in our lodging room, the dressor with all belongings....kitchen furniture and household goods as she shall have occasion for. I also give her 350 pounds in gold and silver money. Goods and moneys remaining at her death shall be divided equally among my seven children, hereafter named ....and whereas my son PETER HORNING has heretofore received from me a considerable sum of money I do hereby give and bequeath to him one shilling sterling in full of his share out of my estate.

Whereas my sons John, Eli and Jacob have heretofore received the sum of 300 pounds each from me they are therefore upon a equal footing with their brothers and are entitled to their respective shares hereafter mentioned. I will unto my son John Horning 800 pounds, 200 pounds past thereof.... I do further give and bequeath to my son John my clock case, windmill cutting box, all my carpenter tools, and hand saw, and drawing knife. I give and bequeath to my daughter Margaret Creator or her heirs and assigns the sum of 100 pounds .... to my daughter Barbara Hall 100 pounds .... and to my daughter Elizabeth Hiffilfinger 100 pounds.

I give to be equally divided among my seven children....named Michael, John, Eli, Jacob (sons) Margaret, Barbara and Elizabeth (daughters) to whom I likewise give the remainder and residue of my wife's estate, after her decease, in equal shares."

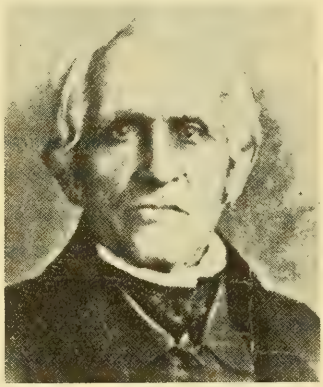
LUDWIG HORNING was buried in the Lower Skippack Cemetery, in the old section of the graveyard near the Lower Skippack Mennonite Church. His wife Katherine had preceded him in death by three years, in 1799, and is buried alongside LUDWIG, in Row 10, lots 26 and 27.

Although far from Skippack Township in Pennsylvania's Montgomery County, PETER HORNING and his family in Canada were becoming prosperous. PETER himself owned 5000 acres in Barton Township, and at the time of his death was one of the larger landholders in the Wentworth County. His son LEWIS HORNING was the only family member who appeared to be drawing away from his brothers and sisters. This became apparent when PETER'S will revealed that all of the sons and daughters received twice as much property from PETER'S estate as did LEWIS. Each of the children received 600 acres, while LEWIS -- in a

last minute change in PETER'S will -- received 300. The remaining land was to be sold and the proceeds to be added to "my personal property to be divided among the above heirs excepting LEWIS."

So LEWIS HORNING went his own way. He already owned a farm of 200 acres before inheriting the 300 from his father. He also operated a general store, a saw mill and a grist mill, all in the County of Wentworth. He displayed considerable business acumen.[14]

LEWIS was married on 19 April 1798 to Mary Gage, daughter of William and Susan Gage and sister of Andrew Gage who married LEWIS' sister Deborah. They were married by a justice of the peace, permitted by law because there was no minister within 18 miles. LEWIS and Mary had eight children in 14 years, and the constant childbearing and heavy work required of a pioneer settler resulted in the early death of Mary Horning on 9 December 1817. She was only 34 at the time of her death.[15] LEWIS HORNING remarried on 23 March 1818, to ELEANOR BLAARE BATES (V 47).[16] Family production continued for another 14 years, with seven more children.[17]



LEWIS HORNING, founder of Horning's Mills, Ontario, Canada, and father of 15 children.

Shortly after their daughter Mary Catherine Horning was born in 1825 Canadian Deputy Surveyor Hugh Black laid out the eastern four concessions of the township of Melancthon (in present day Dufferin County) some 75 miles northwest of Hamilton. In the report he described the "wonderful timber limits, of the beautiful spring water and streams teaming with speckled trout, and the numerous waterfalls

---

[14]LEWIS HORNING never did sell his original 200 acre farm. Instead, he willed it to his son William.

[15]One source lists the date of death of Mary Gage Horning as 9 Dec. 1816, providing a more comfortable margin between Mary Gage's death and LEWIS' second marriage.

[16]A large wooden bowl, some 22 inches in diameter, was probably used by LEWIS HORNING "during the first year of his marriage," according documentation made by MARY CATHERINE GHENT, his granddaughter. The bowl was for many years in the possession of the author's sister, Agnes O'Dell.

[17]The complete family listing of LEWIS HORNING appears in Appendix A, p. 423.

waiting for development."[18] This report was read by LEWIS HORNING who envisioned this area's development as a vast interior settlement.

Within five years, the adventurous LEWIS HORNING of Wellington Square, now 63, set out on foot to investigate this new land and its opportunities. When he gazed on the beautiful spring lake and water possibilities he decided to locate his family there. He returned to Wellington Square (present-day Burlington), organized a party of 14 men -- with axes, a team of oxen, a cow, some household effects, and six months' provisions. They left Wellington Square on a Monday morning, cutting a road through the bush to the spring water lake in Melancthon. Continuing, they then cut saplings, and finally the large trees, making a winding road wide enough for the oxen to travel with their burden. They arrived at the lake (later to be called Horning's Lake) on the second Saturday after their departure -- 75 miles in 12 days.

Included in the original party, in addition to LEWIS HORNING, were Henry Bates (brother of Lewis' second wife), James McGhee, Van Meer, and William Silk. This new land of solid woods was known as "Queen's Bush." LEWIS HORNING negotiated with Crown Lands Department of Upper Canada for the purchase of 2500 acres of land (in what today are the townships of Mono, Melancthon, and Mulmur). Each member of the initial party took up lands for themselves and undertook the beginning steps toward farming. They built small log cabins, cleared enough land for the immediate growing of potatoes, turnips and Indian corn. LEWIS cleared 80 acres on Lot #14 where the first settlement was made.

By 1832 the Horning party was prepared to bring their families into this country of virgin forests. LEWIS had built an expansive frame house for his large family. He dammed the lake stream and its tributary, to be called Schmietendorf Dam. He installed an "overshot water wheel" and erected a saw mill. The settlement took on the name of "Horning's Mills."

HORNING'S new grist mill was run by Henry Bates who had been in LEWIS' employment for many years, in Hamilton as well as in Horning's Mills. As yet there was no church and no postoffice (mail was delivered from Mono

---

[18]This phase of the Horning history is drawn from several sources; *The Backwoods Life* by Lewis Horning Taylor; from an historical sketch appearing in a newspaper (name and date unknown), by Robert Horning, son of LEWIS HORNING; from a series of historical articles appearing in the *Shelbourne (Ontario) Free Press and Economist*, in 1967; and from a talk before the Shelbourne Rotary Club in 1941 by Thomas Russell Huxtable.

Mills; Sherbourne and Orangeville had not come into being). But it was a wild and dangerous life. No professional medical assistance. Angered Indians lived throughout the surrounding area -- frustrated by the white man moving in and taking their lands. Savage wolves, bears, wildcats and lynx roamed at will. Rarely did anyone venture far from home without a gun, carried for protection of one's self from the Indians and wild animals.

One day,during the raising of the framework for one of the mills, a cow belonging to LEWIS HORNING had given birth to a calf in the woods. LEWIS was somewhat perturbed that the wolves might get to the calf. Each day the cow would come out of the woods for food and water, but would leave the calf behind. LEWIS was eager to have the calf brought in and out of danger. He offered a couple of his men a dollar if they would follow the cow back to the woods and bring in the calf.

Lewis Horning, Jr., age 9, overheard the offer, along with three of Mr. Van Meer's children: Oliver, 9, Susan, 14, and Jane, 16. They decided to conduct their own search for the calf. So they disappeared into the woods. During the latter part of the afternoon the children were missed, and could not be found. LEWIS HORNING SR. was taking part of a load of his mill raising party to Mono Mills, some 26 miles away, en route to Hamilton, when his son Robert, age 12, arrived to tell him of the tragedy. LEWIS SR. took off on horseback to his settlement, while young Robert, leaving one horse tied to a tree, set out to catch the raising party which was now about ten miles beyond Mono Mills toward Hamilton -- returning to their homes. They all turned back to Horning's Mills to help in the search.

Another son,Peter, age 13, had already followed the missing children's tracks into the woods where their footprints stopped and two Indians' tracks were found. The Indian footprints disappeared into the vast Melancthon swamp and Peter, knowing that they must retrace their steps in order to escape, kept guard until the raising party arrived the next morning.

The entire group, including the Horning and VanMeer families, began an intensive search by first advancing into the bush. This continued for some eight days at which time it was abandoned. But LEWIS HORNING continued his search by interviewing every missionary and gov-

ernment official who had contact with the Indians. He talked to traders, trappers, and hunters. All clues proved fruitless. One Indian in the area was friendly with LEWIS HORNING, but LEWIS always suspicioned that he knew more than he was willing to tell and that he kept the Indian captors informed as to the search movements.

TABLET AT HORNING'S MILLS commemorating the pioneer settlement. Placed by Archaeological and Historical Sites Board of Ontario, Canada.

Some two years later a report reached the Horning family that an individual claiming to be Oliver VanMeer appeared in the neighborhood of Oakville. LEWIS sent son Peter to investigate, and both Oliver and Peter immediately recognized each other. Oliver's statements were rambling and often incoherent as was expected by Peter Horning who knew that Oliver had been mentally retarded since birth.[19] However, while Oliver could contribute little, the word finally arrived in Horning's Mills that Peter and Oliver had been seen talking together. "....A fond mother's heart yearned as never before to clasp her boy to her bosom, for now she knew he was alive. But alas, she was doomed again to disappointment."

Oliver's statements in essence were that the Indians had "threatened to cleave their skulls with tomahawks .... Jane attempted to call out but was choked into insensibility and the others threatened so that no outcry was made...."

The community of Horning's Mills was crushed because of this experience. However, the following year some brightness appeared with the birth of RACHEL BEVORT HORNING (V 23) on 3 April 1833. She was to be the last child of the Hornings, the fifteenth for LEWIS, and was the first white child born in Horning's Mills. At the time of her birth, her oldest step-brother was 34 years old. LEWIS HORNING was now 66.

---

[19]"Foolish since birth"was a term used to describe Oliver VanMeer's mental condition in the early family writings.

Horning's Mills never recovered from the VanMeer-Horning tragedy. The anxiety of living in the wilderness began to have its effect on some of the families who had moved from Dundas and Wellington Square and Hamilton to Horning's Mills. Moreover, ELEANOR BLAARE BATES HORNING, the mother of LEWIS' last seven children, began to develop a strong desire to leave the backwoods where "almost every object recalled a memory she could not bury." So it was that during the latter part of 1837, the Horning family decided to return to the old homestead in Wellington Square, and by May 1838 the return move was complete. Other families followed.

HORNING'S MILLS IN THE 1970's, about 140 years after its founding by LEWIS HORNING. The town's population never reached 400.

ELEANOR HORNING'S health deteriorated, and she died 3 March 1847. LEWIS, now 80, finally left the old Wellington Square home to live with his eldest daughter, Susannah, the Mrs. Thomas Lotteridge. LEWIS died ten years later, on 5 November 1857 at the age of 90.

* * * *

Four years prior to his death, LEWIS HORNING'S youngest daughter RACHEL married WILLIAM BOYD GHENT, son of DAVID GHENT. Both the Horning and Ghent families had been active in the Canadian Reformer movement and lived near each other in Nelson Township of Halton County. The residents of Burlington were delighted with the uniting of these two pioneer families. The wedding took place on 1 March 1853 in the Methodist Episcopal Church, Samuel Morrison, minister. Witnesses were Emily Ghent-Moore, sister of the groom, and her husband William P. Moore.[20]

---

[20]From the original marriage certificate.

WILLIAM BOYD GHENT, now 24, took his bride to the rural township of Houghton on Lake Erie in the (then) Talbot District (now Norfolk County), some 60 miles southwest of Halton County. Here young Ghent farmed for several years, and it was on this farm that their daughter MARY CATHERINE GHENT (IV 11) and her three sisters were born.[21]

WILLIAM BOYD GHENT as a young man in his forties.

Houghton was largely pine timber country and most of the business activity centered around the township's eight saw mills. After some years of farming WILLIAM BOYD GHENT formed a partnership with H. Fisher in Delhi, a newly-formed community about 15 miles north of Houghton. There they carried on an extensive lumber and milling business. However, WILLIAM BOYD, known for his kindness and complete trust in others, awoke one morning to the realization that he had been swindled out of his investment in the business.[22]

FAMILY OF WILLIAM BOYD GHENT, pictured in front of his farmhouse in Burford Township, Brant County, Ontario. GHENT is at right. RACHEL HORNING is at left, sitting with child in lap.

Disillusioned, he returned to farming, purchasing acreage in Burford Township, in what had by them become

---

[21]Family compositions of the four daughters of WILLIAM BOYD and RACHEL (HORNING) GHENT appear in Appendix A, page 423.

[22]Obituary and family legend.

Brant County. His farm produced wheat in abundance,[23] but his and his wife RACHEL'S lives centered around their four daughters. WILLIAM BOYD GHENT played the violin, and music was a vital part of the family. He devoted himself to the "promotion of sacred harmony" and all four daughters excelled as amateur musicians. Nellie Ghent became the most prominent in the music circles of Norwich and performed often in public. At one recital she sang "The Merry Bells," "When the Leaves Begin to Turn," and "Come When the Lillies Bloom.: A duet sung by Mrs. Agnew of New York and Miss Nellie Ghent, "Wind and Harp," was considered, as reported in a newspaper, "the gem of the evening. The chords of their united voices rang like the sweet chime of a silver bell." The program was brought to a close by singing "God Save the Queen." The reporter noted that Miss Ghent was encored for three of her four renditions.[24]

RACHEL B. HORNING, 1833 - 1908, wife of WILLIAM BOYD GHENT

When WILLIAM BOYD GHENT'S four daughters were in their early twenties, their grandfather DAVID GHENT (See p. 418) died suddenly just five days before Christmas in 1875 in his Nelson Township residence. He had attended church at Wellington Square on "Sabath evening and entered upon his labors of Monday with his characteristic vigor and cheerfulness, but was suddenly seized with a violent heart disease, and died after three hours of intense suffering." Funeral services were conducted by the Reverends Seaman and Myers, assisted by R. B. Den, M. Edward Chalmers and W. M. Histon. He was 71 years old.

In what could be readily termed a eulogy by Mr. Den, it was said that "the Christian experience of the deceased dates back over a period of 60 years....with the Methodist Episcopal Church.... Through all adversities he was a faithful member and unwavering. In May 1844 he was licensed to exhort, and from that time on he served the Church in a local capacity. His child-like faith and cheerful Christian deportment were most remarkable....Quoting one of his friends who said 'I have for many years considered him a man of more than ordinary intelligence: truthful and kind. True to the church

[23] *Smith's Canadian Gazeteer* of Upper Canada (originally published in 1846 by H. & W. Rowsell).

[24] Newspaper report (publication and date unknown).

of his choice and always ready to serve her best interests. As a husband he was superior; as a father indulgent and helpful; as a neighbor, kind and obliging.'.... In private conversation he was often heard to express his assurance of acceptance with Christ and his readiness to depart whenever the Master should summon him. It is well that it was so, for the call came most unexpectedly. His widow, children and large circle of friends mourn, but they cannot mourn without hope. He has left a living record."[25]

DAVID GHENT, 1804-1875, a few years before his death.

MARY GREEN HOWELL GHENT, DAVID's widow, outlived her husband by 16 years. Three years before her death in 1888 she wrote a letter to son, daughter and son-in-law, RACHEL and WILLIAM BOYD GHENT: "Dear WILLIAM and RACHEL: I have not heard from you since you were here at the fair. Now RACHEL, I want you to write and let me know how you are. Are you better than you were when you were down in Toronto? I hope you are better. I am so anxious.

"Edgar Springer came home from Sarnia last Saturday night, sick with typhoid fever. He had been sick eight days. The doctor told him that if he wanted to come home he must come that day or not at all. He is now very sick. Dr. Buck attends him and he says the fever will run its course in three weeks or more. He says he is doing as well as can be expected. He has his bed in the parlor. No one is allowed to see him but themselves.

"Emily Ghent-Moore, sister of WILLIAM BOYD GHENT went home on Monday to stay. There has not been any of them here since Saturday. They are thrashing up there now....I had a letter from MINNIE (MARY CATHERINE GHENT). She was very sick with a sore throat after she went home, but it is better now. She was so sorry that she missed seeing you.

"I expect to go to Hamilton tomorrow if all is well. I wish you to have the molases can. My health is good as usual for which I am truly thankful. Write to me often. Emma Springer had a letter from Warren Springer while I was there. He is now at the doctors in Toronto. He says the doctor received a barrel of apples from Uncle Willie (?) which must have been very much appreciated. There has been a great deal of sickness around....

"Remember me to all the children, your loving Mother"[26]

---

[25] Obituary in newspaper.

[26] From original letter in possession of author.

MARY GREEN HOWELL GHENT had one particular possession of which she was most proud. When she was a young girl a pillow cover was presented to her. "The flax from which it was made was grown on the Ghent homestead (Wellington Square-Burlington) more than 100 years ago. It was spun and woven on the domestic hearth and a better piece of linen than it is could not be procured from the stocks of imported goods on the shelves of any of our merchants. The 'case' has been in Mrs. GHENT'S possession for 74 years; it was in use even before Mrs. GHENT got it, and today does not show the slightest signs of wear. They were fine housekeepers in those days and the articles they made were durable."[27]

On her birthday in 1890 a family gathering took place celebrating MARY GHENT'S 83rd year. The party was on the Ghent homestead where she had lived for more than 60 years. She reminded all that it was on this farm that William Lyon Mackenzie hid in the "peas rick" for several days.

Present at the fete were:her brother Triller Howell of Bronte, Mr. GHENT of Norwich, Mr. D.A GHENT and family of Burlington, Mrs. Earle of West Toronto Junction, Dr. and Mrs. Buck of Halton, Mr. T. Ghent, wife and family of Burlington, Mrs. Gilbert Davis and Miss Davis of Burlington, Mr. Charles G. Davis, wife and family of Halton, Mr. Joshua Freeman, wife and family of Freeman P.O., Mr. S. Freeman, wife and family of Freeman, Mr. William Ghent, wife and family of Halton, Mr. Harry Ghent and Miss Ghent of Halton, Mrs. P. Fisher and daughter of Halton, Mr. Kerns, wife and family of Halton, Mr. D. Springer and family of Nelson, Mr. W. P. Moore, wife and family, Mr. W.G. Moore, wife and family, Mr. H.S. Moore and wife and a number of others from Hamilton.

"Tables were spread in the grove in front of the house, and all fared sumptiously. Mrs. GHENT was the recipient of many gifts, amongst which was a three-storey birthday cake from Mrs. Davis of Burlington. The old lady received numerous congratulations. She looks extremely well, and bids fair to see many more years."[28]

The following year -- 1891 -- was one of mourning for the Ghent family. WILLIAM BOYD GHENT passed away at his residence in Burford Township on 31 July. He was 63 years of age.

---

[27]From newspaper clipping (undated).

[28]From newspaper clipping (undated).

".... Gloom has rested over the neighborhood caused by the death of one who was a friend of all who were friends of the right, and in whose heart there dwelt a kindly feeling for all.... Though unwell, not complaining materially, but whilst conversing with a friend, death came, with the speed and unerring precision with which heart disease accomplishes its final work; brought his life's work to a close.... He was a Liberal, but did not aspire to public office. He possessed superior mental attainments, was a great reader and searcher after truth.... he had a genial and kind disposition, not anxious for this world's goods, but rather to aid and advance the interests of his family and friends and the general good of the community."[29]

Interment was at the Norwich Cemetery. The Norwich newspaper noted that the funeral procession was upwards of three-quarters of a mile in length....horses, wagons, buggies. The funeral "was the most numerously attended of any we remember in the neighborhood."

Before the family could recover from the shock of WILLIAM BOYD GHENT'S death, his mother passed away three months later, on 25 October 1891, in the home of her daughter Emily Ghent Moore at 447 Main Street in Hamilton.

"Mrs. GHENT was a devoted Christian from childhood when she gave her heart to God and became a member of the Methodist Church, and through her long life of 84 years was unwavering in her trust in Him. She was of a retiring, yielding disposition, yet in the cause of right she was unmovable. In her home was always a welcome for the people of God, and she was never so happy as when ministering to the welfare of others. Her unselfish kindness and generousity will long be remembered by many friends, and as a loving mother she is deeply mourned by her family .... Her sufferings through (her last two years), though often severe, she bore with Christian fortitude.

---

[29] Obituary.

The Reverend Mr. Moreton was holding her hand and praying "that her blood-washed soul might have a glorious entrance into the kingdom of God" when her spirit "peacefully passed away to dwell forever with the Saviour." She was buried in the family plot on Burlington Plains. Pall - bearers were: D.W. Springer of Nelson Township, W.P. Moore of Hamilton, S. Earle of Toronto Junction, Sampson H. Ghent of Burlington, D.A. Ghent of Burlington, and Dr. Byron Ghent of Toronto. Squire Howell of Palermo, Mary Ghent's brother, 91 years of age, was in the cortege.[30]

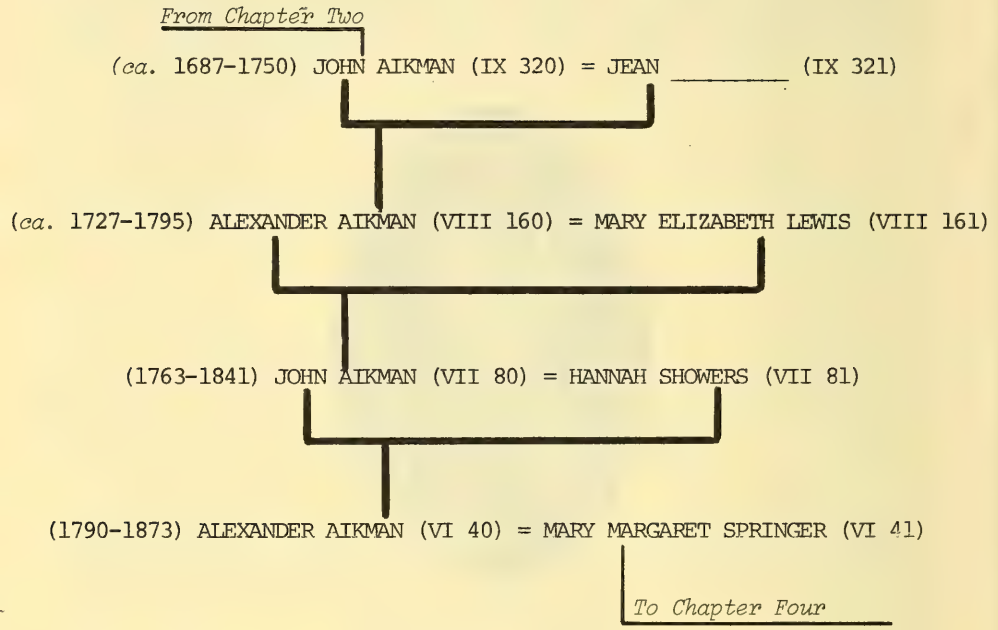
MARY CATHERINE GHENT
at age of 15 years.

By 1870, when MARY CATHERINE (MINNIE) GHENT, daughter of WILLIAM BOYD GHENT, was 15 and living on the family farm in Burford Township in Brant County, she became acquainted with WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN (IV 10) who was living in nearby Norwich.

---

[30]Obituary.

3


From Chapter Two
(ca. 1687-1750) JOHN AIKMAN (IX 320) = JEAN _____ (IX 321)
(ca. 1727-1795) ALEXANDER AIKMAN (VIII 160) = MARY ELIZABETH LEWIS (VIII 161)
(1763-1841) JOHN AIKMAN (VII 80) = HANNAH SHOWERS (VII 81)
(1790-1873) ALEXANDER AIKMAN (VI 40) = MARY MARGARET SPRINGER (VI 41)
To Chapter Four

CHAPTER THREE — Aikman, Showers

When JOHN AIKMAN (IX 320) was about ten years old living in Scotland's Mid-Lowlands on the east coast just north of Firth of Tay, the Union of Scotland and England was taking place. He was old enough to remember the many discussions between his father and friends in Arbroath on whether such a Union was in the true interest of Scotland.

Anne was Queen of England in 1707 when the Union between the two countries was finally negotiated. Anne, a Princess of Denmark, was 38 when she became Queen in 1702, and she ruled until her death in 1714. With the Union in effect Scotland found itself more and more dependent upon decisions being made in London, much to the dislike of many of the Scottish upper class. JOHN AIKMAN as a young man was well aware of the impact of Union with England. As he grew older his education included considerable debate regarding Union with England and the events that led to it.

JOHN also heard many family legends about the Aikmans of Scotland and their roles in the formation of Scotland's history. There was the free baron Alysandre de Aikman of Lanarkshire who was compelled to swear loyalty to Edward I in 1296. James Aikman sat in Parliament in 1473 and again in 1505. One John Aikman was a judge for civil cases in 1566. On 15 July 1661 another John Aikman obtained a charter under the Great Seal for lands at Cairnie in Arbroath from his father, George Aikman, who had acquired them several years earlier. Ten John Aikmans are buried in the Arbroath abbey.[1]

These family traditions were passed along from one generation to another, and young JOHN AIKMAN of Arbroath absorbed these tales with interest. He had heard his family talk of William Aikman of Cairnie in Arbroath who, a generation earlier, had purchased land in 1685 in the province of New Jersey, in that English colony called America. William Aikman died in 1699 and his son, William, sold the properties some eight years later.[2] William Aikman, the son, was becoming a portrait painter of some repute, and during the year of Union in 1707 with England sold the family estate of Cairnie in Arbroath and went to Rome to study art.[3]

---

[1] Various Scottish histories.

[2] The Genealogical Magazine of New Jersey, Vol. XXXII, p. 50 (EJD A:424-9; C2:126).

[3] William Aikman (b.24 Oct. 1682 at Cairney, Scotland; d.June 1731).

As JOHN AIKMAN grew into manhood he was well aware of the problems continually facing the Scottish economy. The economic gains to be developed by Union with England were, at best, slow to materialize. The influx of English capital into Scotland was insufficient to aid the stagnant Scottish economy. English customs and excise taxes were so high that exporting to England by Scottish linen, coal and cattle trades declined after the Union. The future of Scotland,in the minds of many, was gloomy.

About 1730, JOHN AIKMAN'S brother, Alexander, became so enthusiastic about opportunities in America that he left Scotland and sailed for the New World. Here in 1730 he bought a tract of land in Somerset County (later to become Morris County) in New Jersey on the Upper Passaic River. Alexander wrote to JOHN AIKMAN urging him to follow him to New Jersey, pointing out the unlimited land ownership possibilities.[4]

JOHN now had a family in Arbroath: his wife JEAN, two sons, William and ALEXANDER (VIII 160) and three daughters, Agnes, Janet and Margaret.[5] But even with this large family, and the known risks of passage on the wooden vessels of the early 1700's he decided to leave Scotland and the centuries of Aikman ancestry so prominent in the social and political life of the country. The horrifying voyage lasted weeks on end, but the family survived. They disembarked at the New York Harbor and traveled west to Alexander Aikman's home in Somerset County, New Jersey -- some 30 miles west of New York.

JOHN and JEAN AIKMAN and their five children settled near Mendham, Somerset County, New Jersey, where they farmed. In 1739 Morris County was partitioned off from Somerset County. It was here, near Mendham, that the family remained and the children grew into adulthood. When JOHN AIKMAN entered his sixties he passed

---

3 cont'd.
His most successful work is said to be the portrait of John Gay (1685-1732), the English poet and dramatist and author of *The Begger's Opera*. William Aikman left a portrait of the British royal family unfinished at the time of his death.

[4]The Genealogical Magazine of New Jersey, Vol. XXXII, p. 50 (NJW-755L). The circumstances surrounding the emigration of the Aikmans from Scotland to America have not been documented. Levi Aikman, a descendant of JOHN AIKMAN, states in his biography that the early Aikmans were Scotch Irish. This contention, to this author's knowledge, has never been documented. On the other hand, the New Jersey Genealogical Magazine data suggest that the family arrived directly from Scotland.

[5]Ibid.

away -- late in the year of 1755.[6] The executors of his estate were Samuel Niblet, husband of his daughter Agnes, and Alexander Aikman, his brother. All five children survived him.

Of his two sons, ALEXANDER AIKMAN was the younger and, now in his twenties, he continued to farm in Morris County after his father's death. During the early 1760's ALEXANDER married ELIZABETH LEWIS(VIII 162).[7]

The French and Indian War between Great Britain and France, over which country would control the great middle section of America,especially the upper Ohio valley, had ended in 1763.

Great Britain, triumphant, soon initiated a series of taxes aimed at financing the defense of their newly acquired land. It was announced, too, that the defense forces of the American Colonies would be stepped up, with a greater number of men to be drawn from the Colonies. This pronouncement aroused the animosity of settlers in New Jersey as well as in other colonies striving to develop control of their own governmental affairs. The British began taxing the colonies for imports in order to collect much needed funds. The Molasses Act and the Stamp Act imposed by England resulted in vigorous protests. News of the Boston Massacre in March 1770 reached the Jersey communities and farms. Tension was growing between those who insisted on independence from Britain even if it meant war and those who sought a correction of the British acts through peaceful means, but not separation from England. The latter group, British Empire LOYALISTS (later known as United Empire Loyalists) was desirous of continued union with the British Empire rather than independence.

Loyalists, or "Tories" as they were called, contended that revolution was not necessary for the redress of the Colonies' grievances. The Stamp Act was never put in force and was promptly repealed in compliance with the antagonistic feeling it created. Other acts, claimed the Loyalists, would be repealed if only harmony could be restored, rather than the growing tempers inflicting many of the Colonists. Loyalists sought reason and moderation and refused to be hurried into a rebellion.

ALEXANDER AIKMAN'S children were growing up with this hostile climate surrounding them, and they felt the antagonism even though they were not yet adults. ALEX-

---

[6] Ibid.

[7] In later years ELIZABETH LEWIS AIKMAN was known as MARY ELIZABETH LEWIS AIKMAN.

ANDER AIKMAN'S oldest child, JOHN AIKMAN (VII 80) was born on 30 August 1764.[8] Three more sons and three daughters followed.[9]

Even though half the colonists opposed the war with England, the revolutionists were vehement. When the Declaration of Independence in 1776 was passed by a majority of only one, the news came upon those sympathetic to England with suddeness and shock. Even after the fighting began it was thought by a majority of the population that nothing but a redress of grievances was to be demanded. Only in New England was war for independence approved by most of the people. Loyalists in New Jersey and elsewhere denied the truth of the indictments contained in the Declaration of Independence against King George III and Great Britain.[10]

Young JOHN AIKMAN, although only 12 years old at the time of the Declaration of Independence, was alert to the vindictive penal laws against Loyalists. He saw their property seized and the people supporting Britain imprisoned. From these persecutions came retaliations and the line was drawn. The Revolution had begun.

ALEXANDER AIKMAN, JOHN'S father, felt the war was unnecessary, that men of reason could and should decide the issues around the table, with conversations rather than swords. While he agreed that the Colonists had good reason to object to some of the actions of Great Britain, he was one of those who sought correction without war and independence from the Mother Country. But he, like others, was subjected to cruel treatment and one evening in 1777 he announced to his family that they were selling their land and moving to Pennsylvania. New Jersey property values had declined, but the sale was made.

ALEXANDER moved his entire family, his wife ELIZABETH, four sons and three daughters to Fort Augusta (now Sunbury) in Northumberland County -- 140 miles across land haunted by Indians and wild animals. It was the outer frontier. He had heard about this fort and how it

---

[8]The birthdate of JOHN AIKMAN (VII 80) appears both as 1763 as well as 1764. Also, his birthplace has been listed as New York State, but there is no evidence that his parents ever lived in New York State.

[9]See Appendix A, p.428, for a listing of the children of ALEXANDER (VIII 160) and MARY ELIZABETH (LEWIS) AIKMAN (VIII 161).

[10]*The Centennial of the Settlement of Upper Canada by United Empire Loyalists* (Toronto: Rose Publishing Co., 1885) pp. 106-107.

could afford protection for his family while he and his sons undertook the clearing of forests and building a cabin on land he purchased. ALEXANDER AIKMAN, now in his forties, was confident that safety could be had here in this area (later to become Columbia County, Pa.) He

PENNSYLVANIA INDIANS in preparation for warfare. (Wallace, Indians in Pennsylvania, p. 45; courtesy of the Pennsylvania Historical and Museum Commission.)

simply wished to live in peace, farm, and raise his family. But in Northumberland County several Indian tribes were beginning their attacks. Most of them, Mohawks, Onondagas, Cayugas, Senecas and Iroquois, sided with the British, and they came forth with every possible method to drive white men out of the county. Their first attacks came in the form of isolated assaults on homesteads, the shooting of farmers in their fields, and small parties of Indians waylaying travelers.[11]

It was at this time ALEXANDER AIKMAN and his family arrived at Fort Augusta. Feeling that his wife and daughters would be safe at the Fort, he and three sons set out for the acreage he had purchased, some 900 acres near the confluence of Fishing Creek and the North Branch of the Susquehanna River -- 25 miles away.[12] Here he and his sons JOHN, Levi and Alexander Jr. found a heavy growth of timber. Trees were cut and the clearing begun. The cabin built, three acres of turnips were planted. Life was beginning anew for the Aikman family.

---

[11] Edwin M. Barton, *Columbia County Two Hundred Years Ago* (Columbia County Historical Society, Bloomsburg, Pa., 1976), pp. 20-23.

[12] *History of Columbia and Montour Counties, Pa.* (Chicago, A. Warner & Co., Chicago, 1887).

ALEXANDER and his boys returned to Fort Augusta, ready to bring the rest of the family to their new home. It was a part of Northumberland County that had attracted many British, especially the particular area of their farm (later to become Scott Township, Near Bloomsburg, Pa.) Several former New Jerseyites lived nearby, including Moses VanCampen who, like ALEXANDER AIKMAN, had heard of these Susquehanna lands of Pennsylvania. Van Campen had joined the Continental army as an ensign, but later resigned to join the state militia as a lieutenant. In 1778 Lt. VanCampen was ordered to build a fort three miles up from the mouth of Fishing Creek. Nearby lived the Aikmans, the Salmons, the VanCampens, and the Wheelers. The structure was called Fort Wheeler because the house of Isaiah Wheeler was chosen for fortification. The premises of the Wheeler house were made defensible by May 1778. It was surrounded by a barricade of logs chinked with mud, and could contain all the settlers of the immediate area in the case of an attack by the Indians who claimed their lands were being taken from them illegally.

An Indian strike was not far off, and was part of a larger campaign in the Wyoming Valley, an area formed by the Susquehanna. Shortly after the fortification was complete the Indians advanced into the area, aided by the Canadian Butler's Rangers.[13]

The Aikmans and other river settlers now realized that all their lives were in danger. A prisoner escaped from Indian captivity reported that the Indians said they "would clear their enemies from both branches of the Susquehanna this moon." Early in June of 1778 Colonel Samuel Hunter wrote from nearby Buffalo Valley that....

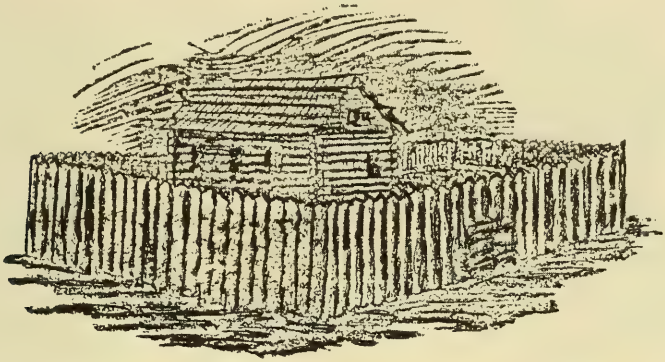
> "We are in a melancholy condition. The back inhabitants have left their homes. All above Muncy (20 miles northwest of the Aikmans) are at Captain Brady's. All above Lycoming are at Antes' mill and the mouth of Bald Eagle (35 miles west of the Aikmans). The people of Penn's Valley are at one place in Potter township.... The back settlers of Buffalo Valley have come down to the river."

The people of Wyoming Valley sent Congress a petition begging aid, but no response was forthcoming. They then sent messages to the two companies of Valley soldiers installed at Valley Forge, seeking permission to

---

[13] Ernest Cruikshand, *The Story of Butler's Rangers* (Tribune Printing House, Wellend, Ont. 1893; reprinted 1975), pp. 43-46.

have soldiers serving from the Valley return home and defend the frightened settlers of the area. But such desperate actions were to no avail, and the dwellers were left helpless in the path of Indians, Canadians and British known to be advancing on the area.



FORT WHEELER was similar to this log structure and twelve foot high, closely set palisades. The enclosure covered about a half acre.

The Canadian Colonel John Butler led his green and buff uniformed Rangers and a detachment of Sir John Johnson's more brightly clad Royal Greens. Under his direction were 400 whites and 700 Indians. The Indians had eaten slain white dogs the night before, claiming that such behavior would give them battle courage. Their canoes skittered on the river like water bugs. They had blacked their faces and striped them red, singing and stamping furiously through their nightly war dances.

The Aikman family, along with others, huddled in Fort Wheeler with what few necessities they could gather. But the Indians were unwilling to storm the Fort. Instead they plundered nearby dwellings. The defenders' supplies of powder and bullets had dwindled as a result of their defensive efforts, and by nightfall the situation was serious. Two of VanCampen's men volunteered to sneak through the besiegers' lines, over eight miles of wild country, to Fort Jenkins where they secured replenishments. They made it back to Fort Wheeler before daybreak and the hardy group of defenders was able to thwart the Indians, and they finally withdrew.[14]

Their cabin burned and most possessions lost, the Aikmans faced a grim life. But they were thankful to be

[14]Barton, op cit. Also, Carl Cramer, *The Susquehanna* (Rinehart & Co., New York, 1955), pp. 122-126.

alive, especially after learning of the horrifying turn of events at Fort Forty, 35 miles up the Susquehanna River just north of Wilkes-Barre. There Colonel John Butler had moved on the Fort, demanding surrender. Instead, the Continental Army decided to attack the Indians and Rangers. There were only 350 men, and their commanding officer told them to stand firm and if they could withstand the first shock the Indians would lose their spirit and retire. Pails of rum were passed around. A new bridegroom dashed back for a last kiss from his bride. A biwigged oldster, marching with his grandsons, turned his silver knee buckles over to the women of his family, fearing that the Indians would take them from his body.

TABLET COMMEMORATING FORT WHEELER near Bloomsburg, Columbia Co., Pa., where ALEXANDER AIKMAN and family took refuge during Indian attack in 1778.

The Continental Army entered the battlefield single file. The opposing Rangers and the Royal Greens were drawn up on a line from the river fort to a thicket-filled marsh. The Yankees were told to fire, advance a step, and fire again. The Rangers and Greens dropped back, giving way slowly. But after a half hour came the war cry of the Indians who suddenly struck from their hiding positions in the nearby swamp. The screaming hordes of painted wildmen, with upraised tomahawks, poured devastating fire into the rear of the Continental Army. Outflanked and outnumbered, the Colonists tried to make a stand, but it was hopeless.

Running through fields of high-growing grain, they were caught as the Indians closed in on them, driving their tomahawks into the skulls of the fleeing army, scalping many. Several fugitives reached the river and hid in the water under overhanging branches. But the Indians discovered them and killed them with tomahawks and spears. It was a bloody six hours. Such was the Massacre of Wyoming.

From the Painting by Chappel.

THE MASSACRE AT WYOMING took place only a few miles from the ALEXANDER AIKMAN family living in Columbia County, Pa. The massacre was one of the most brutal of any in the history of American warfare.

ALEXANDER AIKMAN decided to return to Morris County, New Jersey, and this the family did by the end of 1778. He was able to sell 519 acres of his Pennsylvania land, a portion of his total holdings.[15] Certainly ALEXANDER had lost much of his Loyalist zeal, after living with American patriots in Northumberland County in Penn-

---

[15]As recorded in a deed in Columbia County Court House: an indenture dated 17 June 1793 between James McClenachan and Levy Aikman (who ultimately acquired the family farmlands) mentions the 1778 sale.

sylvania and experiencing the Indian and Ranger attacks on his own family and their river neighbors near Briar and Fishing Creeks on the frontier.

His stay in Morris County, however, was unpleasant because of his wavering loyalty to the British cause. He remained in New Jersey for some three years and by 1782, with the Revolutionary War at its end, he decided to again settle on the remaining Fishing Creek land he had not sold back in 1778. So again began the trek to Pennsylvania, to that fertile community on the Susquehanna (later to become Bloomsburg in Columbia County).

ALEXANDER AIKMAN'S oldest son JOHN, now a mature 18, did not return to Pennsylvania with his father and family. During the late stages of the War young JOHN AIKMAN had become greatly enthused by the warfare carried on by Butler's Rangers in support of the British cause. These Rangers were a bold and courageous band of several hundred men operating out of New York State where the Loyalist strength was greater than elsewhere among the colonies. So JOHN AIKMAN, only 25 miles from the New York boundary, left his family and joined the Loyalist cause in a most active manner.

But for his parents and his brothers and sisters the 140 mile trip back to Northumberland County in Pennsylvania was an arduous one. With their wagon and pack horses they first traveled to Easton, Pa. Roads, often nothing more than wide rocky paths, were then followed to Nescopeck, Pa., some 15 miles northeast of the Briar Creek region where their farm was located. Although the Briar Creek and Fishing Creek communities had now attracted some 1000 inhabitants, bears and wolves roamed in great numbers. Levi Aikman Sr., second son of ALEXANDER, commented that deer were more plentiful than sheep.[16]

The AIKMANS found Briar Creek much to their liking upon their arrival.[17] The Indian troubles had subsided, and the fervor attached to the Revolutionary War was diminishing. Within a couple of years the Aikmans were farming well and becoming active in Bloomsburg church activities.[18] They were members of the Briar Creek

---

[16] Narrative written by John Hervey Aikman, grandson of Levi Aikman Sr.

[17] The Alexander Aikman family's return to the area is specifically mentioned in Barton's history of Columbia County, op cit.

[18] *Migration of Early Settlers into County is Followed by Establishment of Churches:* manuscript dated 8 March 1935.

Church in Center Township.[19]

ALEXANDER AIKMAN died about 1795. The Aikman children gathered for their father's burial, in a private cemetery in Scott Township in Columbia County, Pa. Levi, the new titular head of the family, continued to farm the Aikman acreage.[20]

JOHN AIKMAN lived too far away to be present at the burial of his father. He stayed with the Rangers until the end of the War, devoting much of his efforts to the repairs of artillery at Fort Niagara. Here in 1783 he met HANNAH SHOWERS (VII 81).

Only a few years earlier HANNAH SHOWERS had been living in the Wyoming Valley in Pennsylvania, two miles north of Wilkes-Barre, when the Revolutionary War startled the family with a vengeance. HANNAH'S father was MICHAEL SHOWERS (VIII 162), a highly successful farmer. The home was located on the east bank of the Susquehanna River.[21] MICHAEL and his two oldest sons had already joined Butler's Rangers. On this particular day his daughter HANNAH, 12 years old, was playing near the River with some of her brothers and sisters. Suddenly her mother and sister Sarah came running madly toward them, shouting for them to run to their river landing and get into the boats. "They are coming, and they are destroying everything" screamed HANNAH'S mother. A neighbor had just warned them that some members of the Continental Army were nearing the farm and laying waste to everything in their path. HANNAH'S mother grabbed an apron as she ran from the house, all she could lay her hands on. The dinner was left on the stove, the cattle and sheep in the barnyard, and the horses in the stable.

Other Loyalists also scrambled into their boats, and they rowed upstream on the Susquehanna River, hoping to reach New York State before they were overtaken by the Revolutionaries. New York State was some 50 miles away, and here they could enlist the protection of other Loyalists. But Loyalists in New York were also in deep trouble, so the Showers family and others kept moving northward. They soon ran out of what meager food supplies had been collected before leaving their homes back on the Susquehanna. As they moved north the weather turned cold, and they shivered during the nights when

---

[19]The Briar Creek Church later became the Hidlay (Presbyterian) Church.

[20]John Hervey Aikman, op cit.

[21]Mabel Burkholder, *Early Settler in Action with Butler's Rangers* (Hamilton, Ont. *Spectator*, Oct. 1954). For information on the family of MICHAEL and HANNAH SHOWERS, see Appendix A, p. 429.

they lacked sufficient clothing.

The Showers family finally reached Lachine in Quebec, Canada, where they were billeted by the government. They were provided with scanty rations and some clothing. On 30 May 1781, Captain Walter Butler wrote to Captain Robert Matthews:

> "Lt. Col. Butler desires me to present his respectful compliments to you....There is an old man (48 years old!!) in the Rangers named MICHAEL SHOWERS, tho' he is fit for service, Lt. Col. Butler has permitted him to build a house, and he is planting and commencing farming. He wants permission to bring his family up from Machies (Lachine) ....They can be assisted by four Rangers who were left sick...."

So, that fall, some six months after leaving their Pennsylvania farm home, they were ordered to proceed to Fort Niagara, in their open boats. The route was dangerous and they traveled mostly by night, lying in wait for hours during the daytime. At times the younger children became so famished that several mothers considered killing their dogs in order to provide food. However, friendly Indians gave them black bean bread and berries that lasted until the party was met by British soldiers out of Fort Niagara. They were then convoyed to the Fort.

The relief brought about by the comparative safety of Fort Niagara was virtually without limit. Families greeted each other with emotional embraces. But, once again the families were billeted out, and HANNAH was assigned to the home of Col. John Butler of Ranger fame. Col. and Mrs. Butler, childless, sought to adopt HANNAH, but her mother refused.

Never again did the Showers family see their beautiful farm in the Wyoming Valley along the Susquehanna River in Pennsylvania. The property was confiscated and no compensation was ever forthcoming. MICHAEL SHOWERS was the first Loyalist to be officially allowed to cross from Fort Niagara into Canada to farm.[22] At the close of the war, the family moved to West Flamborough in Ancaster Township, Wentworth County, on MICHAEL'S grants of lots 12 and 13, Concession 1. He lived there until his death in 1796. In the will in which he left his estate to his wife, the last sentence read: "I would wish

---

[22] Article by J. H. Smith in "Papers and Records of Wentworth (County, Ont.) Historical Society, 1916, pp. 42, 43. Also, *Ancaster's Heritage*, published by the Ancaster Historical Society, p. 133.

the children to have learning to read and write."

JOHN AIKMAN was living in Queenston when he met HANNAH SHOWERS. She was staying with the Butlers. They were married on 13 August 1787. His first land grant was Lot 39, Concession 1, in Ancaster Township, Wentworth County, Ontario, given to him on the express condition that he "improve the lot and build a house immediately." So JOHN and HANNAH made their way westward, following an old Indian trail and arriving in Ancaster in 1788. They were one of the first 22 settlers to reach this frontier area. Six years later, however, JOHN reported to the Land Board that his lot was "too broken" (hilly) for farming and asked to exchange it for the lot adjoining, but was refused "because only one lot on the Governor's Road could be granted to one person."[23] Later, however, JOHN petitioned for 200 acres for HANNAH, who qualified for land because she was the daughter of a Loyalist, and in 1798 she was granted 200 acres in nearby Barton Township, Wentworth County, Lots 10 in Concessions 2 and 3. There he built a log house, near a spring and an inlet (to the Hamilton Harbor at what is now the southeast corner of King Street and Sanford Avenue).[24] He acquired other land later along the shore of nearby Burlington Bay and in Saltfleet Township.

Wolves and deer frequented the grassy plains nearby. Soon HANNAH'S sister, Magdelene, now married to Captain William Depew moved to the neighborhood. Another sister, Mary, moved to Barton after her marriage to William Lottridge in 1800. Also living in the area was RICHARD SPRINGER (VII 82).

JOHN AND HANNAH AIKMAN farmed during their early married life, with emphasis on the growing and harvesting of fruit. Their first child, ALEXANDER AIKMAN (VI 40) was born 26 January 1790. Their second son, John Aikman Jr. was born a year later.[25]

In 1795 JOHN SR. became a charter member of the Barton Lodge of the Free and Accepted Masons. Meetings of Barton Lodge No. 10 were held at his house. At a session during 1798 JOHN, now a Senior Warden in the

---

[23] JOHN AIKMAN was awarded 1000 acres of Crown land, acreage of that size usually being reserved for officers in the Rangers. Family legend frequently refers to his Ranger membership, placing him in the "New York Regiment." However, his status as a British Empire Loyalist has been difficult to establish.

[24] Aikman Avenue nearby commemorates the family holdings.

[25] The listing of the children of JOHN and HANNAH AIKMAN appears in Appendix A, p. 430.

To His Honor Peter Russell Esquire
Administrator of the Province of Upper Canada
&c &c &c
In Council
The Petition of John Aickman
of the Township of Barton

Humbly Sheweth —

That your Petitioner is married to Hannah, the daughter of Michael Showers, a Loyalist U.E. who served in Butlers Rangers — who having never received any Land, prays your Honor would be pleas'd to grant him 200 Acres in behalf of his wife and your Petitioner as in Duty bound will ever pray —

John Aikman

Niagara
14. Oct. 1796

PETITION OF JOHN AIKMAN to Township of Barton, Wentworth County, Ontario, stating that he married a daughter of a "Loyalist U.E." and that he seeks Crown land "on behalf of his wife."

Lodge, moved "....that Lodge No. 10 meet the first Friday of every month, instead of Saturday." The motion lost. "Brother JOHN then said that the lodge shall sit no more at his house if it is to sit on Saturday." Two meetings were held to discuss the issue further, whereupon "Brother AIKMAN agreed for the Lodge to continue to sit at his house on condition that the Lodge sit no longer than 10 o'clock, let whatever business be before the Lodge." Meetings continued at the AIKMAN house until 1802.[26]

That the Lodge had an interesting reputation was revealed by the members when it passed a resolution stating that "...Lodge No. 10 wishes in every degree to fulfill their duties to the Grand Lodge as Masons ought to do....and hopes that the Grand Lodge will not consider them a disorderly body...." Sometime earlier, the Lodge passed a motion

> "that the liquors for the use of the Lodge shall be purchased with the money belonging to the Lodge, by the barrel or quarter cask, and that said liquor be deposited with Brother AIKMAN; and that he is to be accountable for the same."

Later Brother AIKMAN was asked "to furnish the Lodge with liquor and light."

JOHN AIKMAN was not the most meticulous member of the Lodge. Once he was fined "4s for not furnishing the Lodge with liquor..." and later was fined $2 for not furnishing the Lodge room agreeable to the minutes of a former lodge night." Later he was fined for not putting a handle on the seal, as promised. At another time a motion was made that Brother J. AIKMAN, Treasurer, "be fined 5s New York currency for his non-attendance and disappointing the Lodge." The motion lost, but another motion to fine him one dollar was carried.[27]

Captain JOHN AIKMAN considered building a grist and saw mill in about 1799. His younger brother William from Briar Creek, Bloomsburg, Pa. visited the Aikmans earlier that year, and JOHN thought that he and William might join the venture. They wrote to their brother Levi Aikman in Briar Creek for parts, but nothing ever came of it. In 1811 he began the development of an establishment for the manufacture of plows and wagons, the shop located on King Street, south side at the Gore.

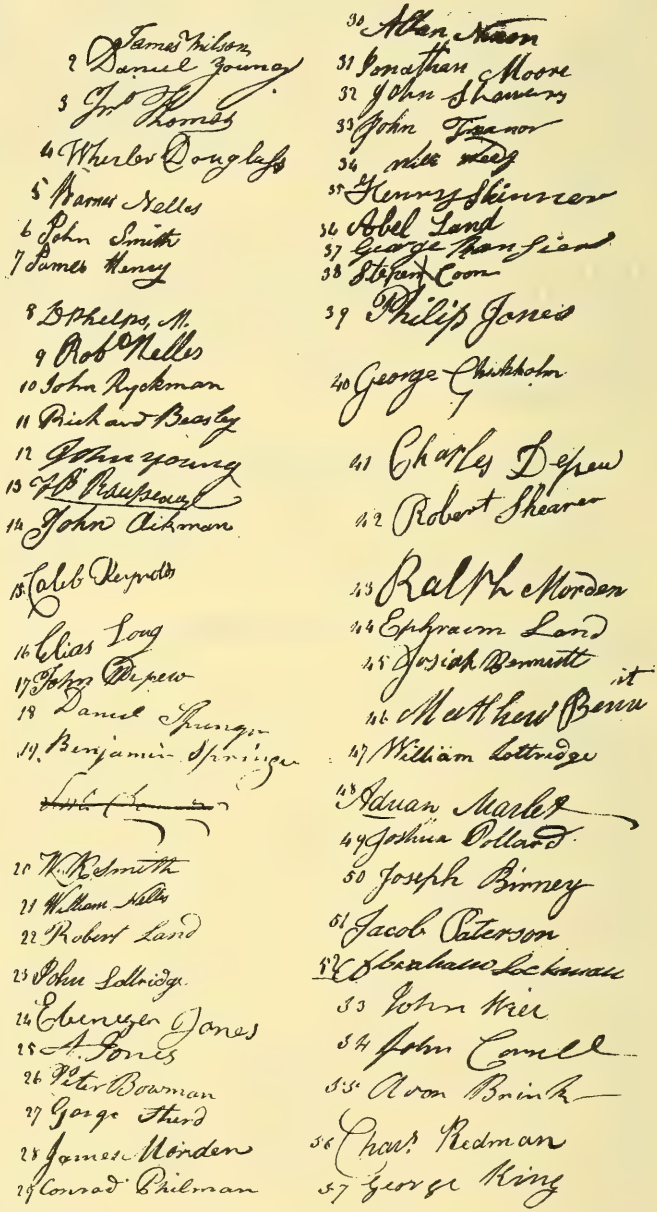
---

[26] From "Historical Sketch of the Barton Lodge," published in 1895.

[27] Ibid.

INDEX TO NAMES.

1 James Wilson.
2 Daniel Young.
3 John Thomas.
4 Wheeler Douglass.
5 Warner Nelles.
6 John Smith.
7 James Henry.
8 D. Phelps, M.
9 Robt. Nelles.
10 John Ryckman.
11 Richard Beasley.
12 John Young.
13 J. B. Rousseau.
14 John Aikman.
15 Caleb Reynolds.
16 Elias Long.
17 John Depew.
18 Daniel Springer.
19 Benjamin Springer.
20 W. K. Smith.
21 William Nelles.
22 Robt. Land.
23 John Lottridge.
24 Ebenezer Jones.
25 A. Jones.
26 Peter Bowman.
27 George Sturd, (probably Stuard).
28 James Morden.
29 Conrad Philman.
30 Allan Nixon.
31 Jonathan Moore.
32 John Showers.
33 John Treanor.
34 William Wedge.
35 Henry Skinner.
36 Abel Land.
37 George Ransier.
38 Stephen X Coon.
39 Philip Jones.
40 Geo. Chisholm.
41 Charles Depew.
42 Robert Shearer.
43 Ralph Morden.
44 Ephraim Land.
45 Josiah Bennitt.
46 Matthew Bennitt.
47 William Lottridge.
48 Adrain Marlet.
49 Joshua Pollard.
50 Joseph Birney.
51 Jacob Paterson.
52 Abraham Lockman.
53 John Will.
54 John Connell.
55 Aaron Brink.
56 Charles Redman.
57 George King.



NAMES REGISTERED IN MINUTE BOOK of the Barton Lodge, by those in attendance on 31 January 1796. JOHN AIKMAN is No. 14. Other members related to the Aikman family include Daniel and Benjamin Springer, John Showers, Charles and John Depew, and others.

CHAPTER 3

JOHN AIKMAN SR. was now 47. His brother in Briar Creek wrote him that their mother had died. JOHN responded.

Niagara
The 9th November 1811

Dear Brother. I received your letter of the 11th of October which gave me joy on the one hand but likewise grief on the other to heare of the deth of our mother for I had a hope of seeing her once more but as this is the case with all ones to dy so all we have to save is to prepare to meet her in another world wich I hope you and I will withe all our friends, may by a well ordered life may live to the glory of god in the world that we at last may be brought to meet at the right hand of power there is to praise redeeming love....you wanted to now when I intended coming out. I had amine to have come out this fall but I did not get ready. if nothing happens more than I now of I shall come out next fall.

We are all well....we live in Peace and plenty.Remember me to all enquiring friends, no more but sill remain your

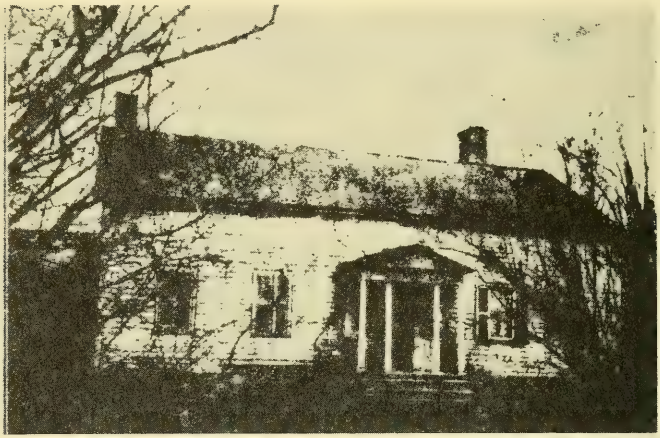
Affentionate Brother
JOHN AIKMAN

Three of JOHN'S and HANNAH'S sons were engaged in the War of 1812-14 with the United States. ALEXANDER and John Aikman Jr. were sergeants in Captain James Durand's flank Company of the Fifth Lincoln Militia, and fought at Queenston Heights. JOHN SR. was a Captain in the Lincoln Militia and commanded a Company of that Regiment.

Just before the war broke out the AIKMANS decided to build a better house, having lived in the initial log structure for about 15 years. Up to this time most of JOHN'S funds had been invested in his plow and wagon business. The house was far enough advanced to be habitable when the War of 1812 broke out and was used by Army officers as a social center for relaxation between campaigns. A general proposed that the mechanics in the Army finish the house, but CAPTAIN AIKMAN declined the offer, saying that the soldiers had sufficient duties without placing additional burden on them.

All three Aikman sons in the War of 1812-14 survived and returned to peacetime occupations. Two years later CAPTAIN JOHN SR. again wrote to his brother:

"...when the lord caused the clamour of war and bloodshed to sease and withdrew the sword from us and blest our land with Pease again. One would have thought the people

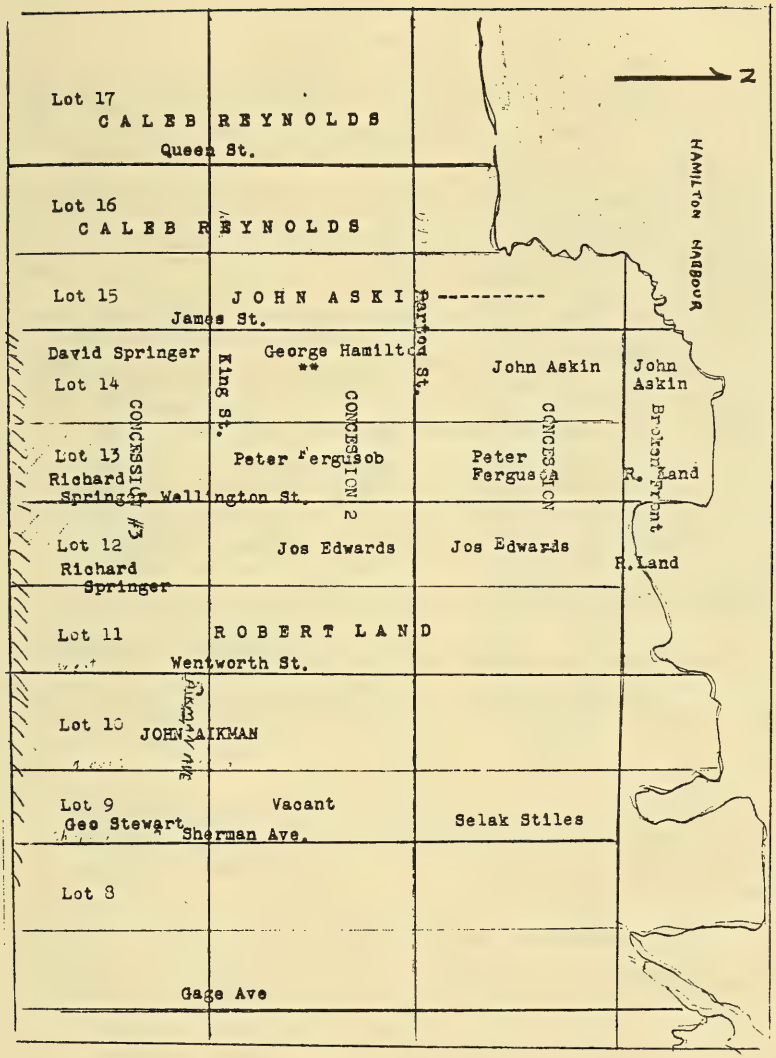


HOME OF JOHN AIKMAN at S.E. angle of what is now the corner of Sanford Avenue and King Street in Hamilton, Ontario. It was here that the Barton Lodge met during the late 1790's.

would have been thankfull and humbled themselves but it appears to have the contrary afect for wickedness abounds in every direction. It appears to me that the land is threatening us with more calametes for we have the gloomyest prospect this season I ever saw. we have a grate Drouth and very cold and frosty so that there is at present poor hope of either grane or goods....I must acknoledge that I have bean very neglectful in not riting to you but at the same time I will not excus you for your neglecting to rite. please rite to me by the barer...."

JOHN AND HANNAH AIKMAN had been members of RICHARD SPRINGER'S Methodist Bible class for many years. He was their next door neighbor. Although Anglicans, the Aikmans had long worshipped with Methodists inasmuch as there was no Anglican church closer than Queenston. CAPTAIN JOHN AIKMAN SR. was one of the first trustees of the First United (Methodist) Church at the corner of Wellington and King, where it was constructed in 1824.[28]

[28] A memorial tablet was placed in the First United Church of Hamilton in 1924 on the occasion of its centennial. The church was



LANDS OWNED BY CAPTAIN JOHN AIKMAN AND RICHARD SPRINGER, next door neighbors, are shown here in Barton Township, Wentworth County, Ontario (now Hamilton). Both men were awarded Crown land during the early 1800's in Concession #3.

DECEMBER 12TH. 1800.

Read a Letter from the Grand Secretary informing this Lodge of Communication received from the Grand Lodge of Pensylvania: anouncing the Death of the R.W. G. Master Washington, and requesting this Lodge to go in mourning at their public and private meetings. Six months including their first meeting: in Consequence of which Br Aikman moved 2d by Br J. Showers. that a piece of black ribbon should be purchased for that purpose — the motion being put was Carried. Br John Lottridge agreed to furnish the Lodge with the ribbon. Lodge Closed in perfect Harmony 10 Oclock.

Hamilton, Canada, Oct. 22nd, 1910.

We certify that the above is a fac simile of a portion of the minutes of a meeting of The Barton Lodge No. 10, (old number) bearing date December 12th, 1800.

Edward B O'Reilly M.W. I P M
Archivist

The Barton Lodge No. 6, G. R. C., A. F. & A. M.

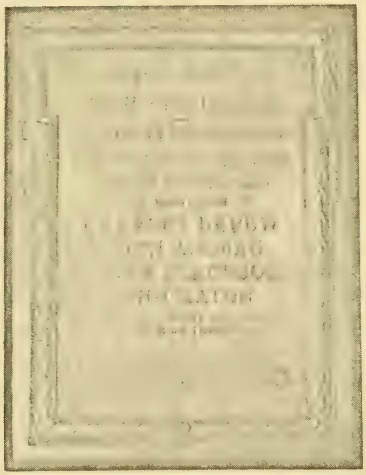
GEN. GEORGE WASHINGTON'S DEATH resulted in the Barton Lodge going into mourning for six months, as recorded in these minutes. JOHN AIKMAN made the motion, and it passed despite the fact that many members of the Barton Lodge had fought against Washington during the American Revolution. Washington was a member of the Masonic organization.

JOHN AIKMAN became quite religious during the latter part of his life. When 70, in 1834, he wrote his last letter to his brother Levi in Pennsylvania:

Hamilton
September 22 1834

Dear Brother

Oppertunity now serves to have a few lines convailed to you....I therefore imbrace the oppertunity of informing you that through the mercy of god we enjoy a good measure of helth but through the infirmmeties of old age I find myself dayly tinking that eir long this frail boddy must return to its native dust. O may the god of all mercy give us all the aid of his grace and holy spirrit that.... we serve god axceptably in this world and though we never see each other ... again that we may all meet in heaven where we may spend an endless Eternity in praising our god and creater...god has visited our land with an aufull calamaty this season the Collery which has taken of thousands of(f) the stage of action.... Although it has a number of very worthy men and women fell a victim by the diseis but it is now subsided. the lord has through his mercy spared us that it has not entered into the dwelling of any of our familf connections.... I was sorry to hear of the Deth of our brother James Hutchison but the will of the lord must be done and it is our duty to submit patiently to his will, and my dear sister (Mary) I can simpethise and mourn withe you for the loss of your Near and Dear friend and companion in life.... But that you are among your friends and relatives and god has promised to be a father

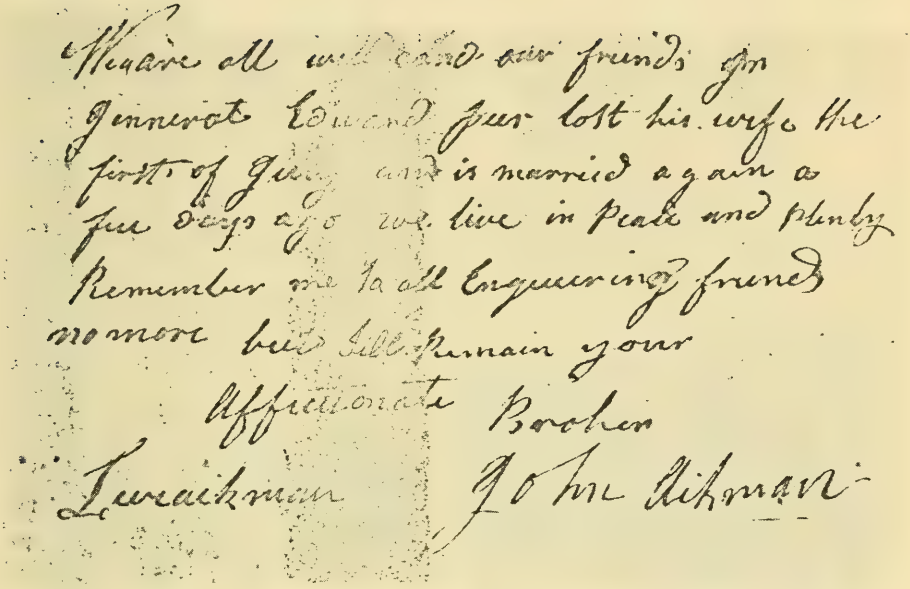


JOHN AIKMAN WAS AN EARLY trustee of Hamilton's First United Methodist Church. This plaque was unveiled in 1924.

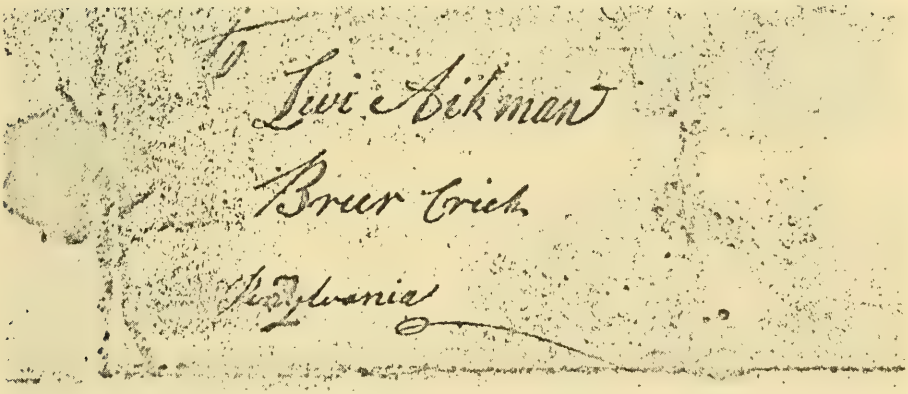
28 cont'd.
destroyed in 1969 and the plaque lost. It listed JOHN AIKMAN as one of the original trustees, along with Charles Depew, Peter Ferguson, and John Eaton. RICHARD SPRINGER'S name appears as "the founder of Methodism in Hamilton."

Niagara 9th November 1841

Dear Brother I received your letter of the 14 of October which gave me joy on the one hand likewise greaf on the other to heare of the deth of our mothe for I had a hope of suing hur once more but as this is the case with all once to dy so all we have to devo is to Prepare to meet hur in an other world wich I hope you and I withe all our friends may by a well ordered life may live to the glory of god in this world that we at last may be bought to meet at the Right hand of power thare to Praise redeming love through the annils of an unbounded Eternity you wanted to now when I intended comming out I had amind to have come out this foll but I did not get Ready if nothing happens more than I now of I shall come out next foll



We are all well and our friends Jm
Jennerot Edward Peer lost his wife the
first of Jany and is married again a
few days ago we live in Peace and plenty
Remember me to all Enquiring friends
no more but still Remain your
Affectionate Broher
Lewiaikman John Aikman



To Lwi Aikman
Breer Crick
Pennsylvania

and a friend to the widow. It is my wish to see you once more but it apears to me that I never shall for I feel myself two feble to undertake the journey again, and it apears that you are afraid to set out to come so far from home. therefore we must be content ourselves with hearing from each other and may the mercyfull god give us grace that we may pray for each other that we at length meet in heaven where parting shall be no more. please to give my love and best respects to all my friends and family connections tell them that I never expect to see them in this world. may the god of all grace and mercy may keep us all under his hand wile we are passing through this vale of tears

JOHN AIKMAN[29]

THE ORIGINAL Methodist Church at King and Wellington in Hamilton where JOHN AIKMAN was buried in 1841.

JOHN AIKMAN died on 1 November 1841, buried in the Methodist churchyard in Hamilton. His brother, Levi Sr., died five years later in Scott Township, Columbia County, Pa. HANNAH AIKMAN died in 1863, buried in the same Hamilton churchyard with her husband.

* * * *

When ALEXANDER AIKMAN, oldest son of John, was a young man in the early 1800's, a second war between the United States and Great Britain was brewing. The British nation, heavily involved in a war with France, was determined that American ships should not engage in commercial trade with France. This resulted in a series of blockades that aroused the political leadership of the United States. In 1812, the U.S. declared war on Great Britain which included Canada.

[29]The originals of this and additional correspondence between JOHN and Levi Aikman have long been in the possession of John Aikman of Hamilton, great, great, great grandson of JOHN AIKMAN.

In the United States the war was unpopular, and many people thought it was an act of greed on the part of the United States. A first step in American strategy was the planned occupation of Canada by force. The population of the U.S. in 1812 was about eight million persons, with more than a million of that number being slaves. The population of Canada, on the other hand, was about one half million, with most of those being non-English speaking French. Canada saw the War of 1812 as a defensive war, hoping to maintain its geographic boundaries plus continued alliance with Great Britain. The odds against the Canadians were overwhelming.

But the U.S. was ill-prepared for war. There were less than 7000 in the country's regular army. Canada had about 4000 regulars, most of them specially raised for the war now threatening. An American General,William Hull,was placed in charge of 1500 troops from Ohio. He was ordered to advance upon Detroit and then invade Upper Canada from that western point in present day Ontario. But Sir Isaac Brock, the British general, met Hull's invasion and defeated him on 16 August 1812, only two months after the outbreak of the war.

An American Captain, John E. Wool, was then ordered to attack the Canadians at Queenston Heights near Niagara. General Brock had returned to his Niagara troops and that fall led the Canadian regiments against the Americans. ALEXANDER and John Aikman Jr. were sergeants in Captain James Durand's flank company of the 5th Lincoln Militia. ALEXANDER in 1812 was 22 and John Jr. a year younger. The Queenston Heights military strength was 350 men, many untrained and most ill clad. By November clothing arrived and, in addition to militia men having to purchase shoes, shirts, stockings and blankets, they wore "green jackets, red cuffs and collar and whitelows--blue gunmouth trowers and felt regulation cap."[30]

The Battle of Queenston Heights was bitterly fought, with odds favoring the Americans. With greater numbers, they advanced and took key positions against the Canadians.

> ".... And backward, surely backward, the (Canadian) patriot heroes move,
>
> With death to left and death to right and death on high above.
>
> But hark! When hope has almost fled, at the hour of sorest need,

---

[30] R. Janet Powell, *Annals of the Forty*, No. 1 (Grimsby Historical Society, 1950, Revised 1950), p. 49.

Is heard the clatter of iron hoofs and the neigh of a coursing stead.

Now let the martial music breathe its most inspiring notes,

As bursts the shout of welcome from faltering veterans' throats!

What spell so much could nerve them in that losing battle's shock,

BATTLE OF QUEENSTON HEIGHTS, a drawing by John L.Thompson in War of 1812 (J.B. Lippincott Co., Philadelphia, 1887).

"Courage, boys! It is the General! Onward comrades! On with Brock!"

Now forward to the battery! They lend a ready ear;

There's a hero's form to lead them and a hero's voice to cheer.

And o'er the level plain they press, and up the sloping hill,

'Mid hiss of shot and volleys' smoke his cry is "Onward!" still.

And now they pass the low revine, and they clamber o'er the wall;

The fatal death-shot strikes him; they see their leader fall.

"Push on, push on, York volunteers!" brave words -- they were his last.

And like the vision of a dream the charging column passed.

....You've read the rest; their comrades came to stay their second flight,

Dashed on to meet the foe in blue and hurled them from the height...."[31]

* * * *

The War of 1812 dragged on for more than two years, and resulted in a stalemate. Canada's geographic integrity was preserved, and its alliance with England remained unimpaired. ALEXANDER and John Aikman Jr. survived the conflict, John being mustered out in 1814.[32]

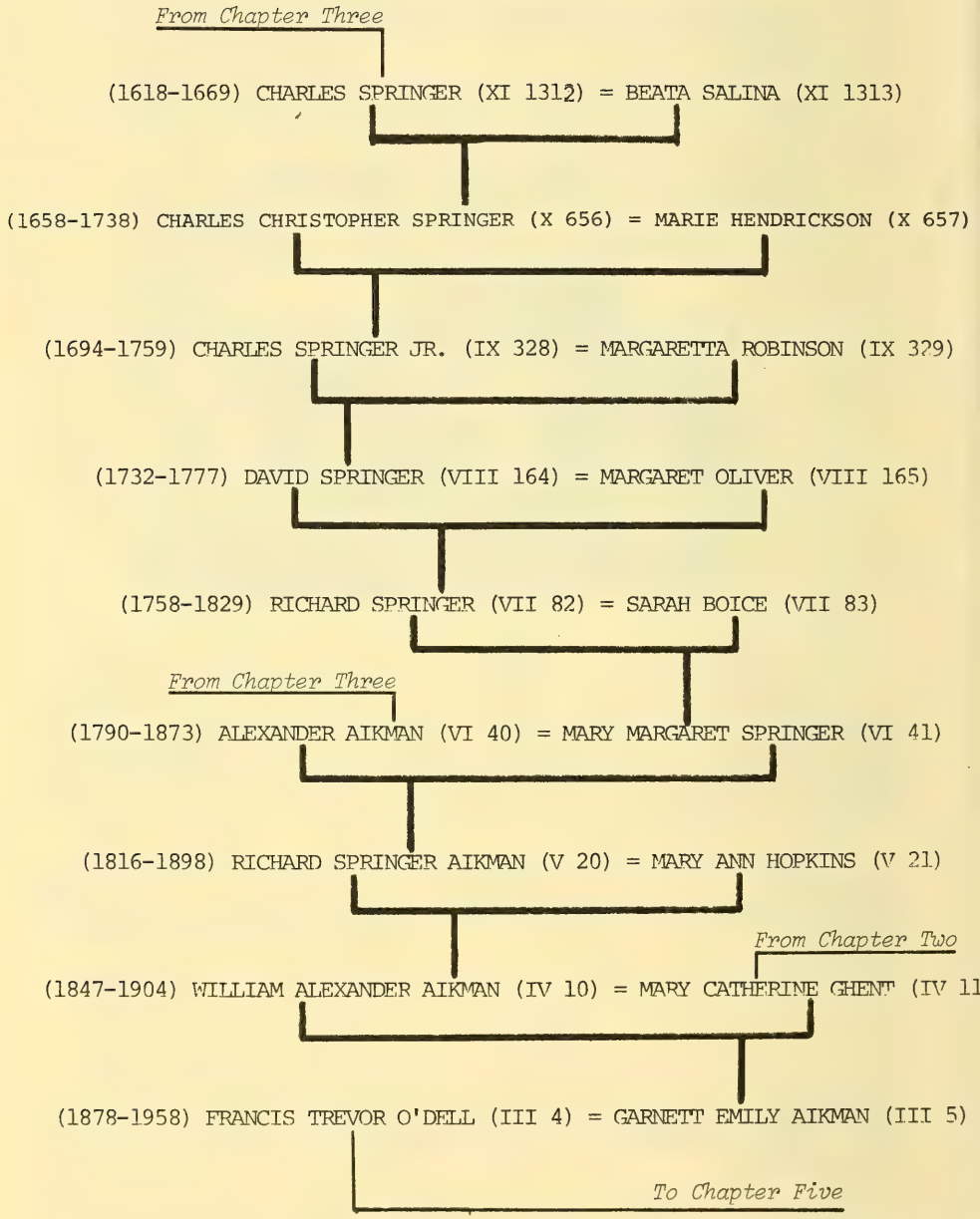
ALEXANDER in the interim was courting MARY MARGARET SPRINGER (VI 41), the daughter of RICHARD AND SARAH (BOYCE) SPRINGER (VII 83), the Aikman's longtime neighbors.

---

[31] *Journal and Transactions* (Wentworth Historical Society, Vol. I, 1892, Reprinted 1967-68), "Battle of Queenston Heights" by William Thomas White.

[32] Ibid, as reported in Powell's *Annals of the Forty*, No. 1, p. 80. John Aikman Jr. later became a colonel in the militia.

4


From Chapter Three
(1618-1669) CHARLES SPRINGER (XI 1312) = BEATA SALINA (XI 1313)
(1658-1738) CHARLES CHRISTOPHER SPRINGER (X 656) = MARIE HENDRICKSON (X 657)
(1694-1759) CHARLES SPRINGER JR. (IX 328) = MARGARETTA ROBINSON (IX 329)
(1732-1777) DAVID SPRINGER (VIII 164) = MARGARET OLIVER (VIII 165)
(1758-1829) RICHARD SPRINGER (VII 82) = SARAH BOICE (VII 83)
From Chapter Three
(1790-1873) ALEXANDER AIKMAN (VI 40) = MARY MARGARET SPRINGER (VI 41)
(1816-1898) RICHARD SPRINGER AIKMAN (V 20) = MARY ANN HOPKINS (V 21)
From Chapter Two
(1847-1904) WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN (IV 10) = MARY CATHERINE GHENT (IV 11
(1878-1958) FRANCIS TREVOR O'DELL (III 4) = GARNETT EMILY AIKMAN (III 5)
To Chapter Five

CHAPTER FOUR — Springer, Aikman

It was in London, England, 1678. CHARLES CHRISTOPHER SPRINGER (X 656) was 20 years old. He was attending a theological school, having been sent to London for study by his Swedish mother in Stockholm.[1]

CHARLES SPRINGER was intelligent, strong. During this school year he was living with the Swedish ambassador to England in London. One night as he was returning home from school in the ambassador's four-horse *post-chaise,* the doors of the carriage were flung open and two men dragged him to a wagon. Here he was tied and quickly transported to a merchant vessel bound for Virginia on the other side of the Atlantic.

CHARLES SPRINGER was thrown into the bowels of the ship along with the dregs of London also kidnapped off the city's streets. Most were drunks, thieves and similar ne'er-do-wells. Some had even volunteered for the trip in order to start a new life in a new world. Others were prisoners being shipped out of England as a penalty for the crimes committed.

Shortly after embarking, an officer of the merchant ship came below and announced what was happening: they were sailing for Jamestown, Virginia, where each would be sold to bidders from the tobacco plantations.

This practice of kidnapping men off the streets of London was a common practice during the late 1600's by greedy owners of merchant ships. Even though they had full cargos, they knew that eight or ten more human bodies would not overload their ships and these bodies could be sold at handsome profits to the tobacco plantation owners avidly seeking labor.

These all-wood frigates or schooners sailed back and forth across the Atlantic during the 1600's, bringing tobacco to England and returning to America with manufactured goods much needed by the colonists. Tobacco had been grown in Virginia for about 50 years, but its shipment to England had begun only 15 years before CHARLES SPRINGER'S kidnapping. The Virginia planters needed labor. So great was the demand for tobacco in England that growers' profits were limited only by their capacity to grow and cure the product. The unscrupulous owners of merchant ships knew that this white slave traffic was acceptable to the plantation owners, and profitable to all.

---

[1]Many historical records refer to CHARLES CHRISTOPHER SPRINGER as CHARLES "CARL" SPRINGER. "Carl" is the Swedish form of "Charles."

Two days out to sea CHARLES SPRINGER began to realize what had happened to him. He was being taken to a foreign shore, even though Virginia was a royal Colony. His life would be drastically redirected, through no choice of his own. His future was an absolute unknown. During the many weeks that followed on the turbulent sea he had opportunities to recall his pleasant home life in Stockholm where he lived with his parents, CHRISTOPHER SPRINGER (XI 1312) and BEATA SALINA (XI 1313), eldest daughter of DR. BALTZAR SALINIUS, (XII 2626), for many years the personal physician to Sweden's King Carl X.[2]

BEATA was CHRISTOPHER'S third wife. They lived in a northern suburb of Stockholm in a house just opposite the Santa Clara (Lutheran) Church which the family attended. CHARLES' father was a somewhat wealthy man, having an extensive library and a valuable collection of silver. He had died when CHARLES SPRINGER was eleven years old, in 1669. For many years he had been in the Treasury of King Gustaf Adolph, later being appointed to a judgeship in the County of Upland. CHARLES remembered him as Archives Inspector of the Royal Exchequer, a position he held at the time of his death.[3]

CHARLES' mother, upon the death of her husband, became the royal housekeeper of the Dowager Queen Hedwig Eleanora, widow of King Carl X. It was CHARLES SPRINGER'S mother who urged him to pursue his theological study. She could afford to send him to London for schooling. It was she who arranged for him to live with the Swedish ambassador in London.

But all this was behind him now. Against his will, he was being forced into slave labor.

Upon arrival at Jamestown,[4] CHARLES SPRINGER was placed on the block, along with the thieves and drunks. He was "sold like a farm animal" to a planter who explained that he would be enslaved for five years, then

---

[2]The Springers in the U.S. have been one of the most researched families by genealogists. Of several books published over the years, the most recent is *Charles Springer's Family in Swedish History*, by Baldwin Maull and published in 1978 by the Delaware Swedish Colonial Society, Wilmington, Del. Perhaps the most thorough research effort on the Springers was conducted by Courtland B. Springer, a direct descendant of CHARLES CHRISTOPHER SPRINGER. The resultant genealogical research data, considered highly authentic, is now in the possession of Mr. Springer's family.

[3]Complete documentary on the Springer family is in the Royal Archives, Stockholm.

[4]The precise location of the Virginia plantation where CHARLES SPRINGER labored as a white slave has never been established.

freed. His work was "unspeakable," consisting largely of "clearing land and cutting down forests."[5] CHARLES SPRINGER worked under a "very hard master." The summer heat was unbearable. The fact that he could read and write was of no significance to the plantation owner or the foreman supervising the field crew. CHARLES SPRINGER was a slave, and he would labor in that role for five years.

During this period CHARLES accidentally heard about a Swedish settlement on the Delaware River, several hundred miles to the north. It was called "New Sweden," at Christina, Delaware. He was determined to seek out his own people in America and this he did after being ultimately freed after his five year slave term. He was given, according to Virginia law, a small amount of money, some clothing, and a signed release showing that he was in fact a freeman.

It was this release that enabled him to travel to the Delaware River without being challenged, except by the hardships of the day: no roads, no food, no transportation. He was 26 years old when he arrived at Christina, at the confluence of the Delaware and Christina Rivers with Brandywine Creek.[6] CHARLES CHRISTOPHER SPRINGER was a mature and strong man, well disciplined and dedicated to Christianity.

He was overjoyed with the welcome he received by the Swedes of Christina. They had settled here some 50 years before and had struggled untold hardships.

In 1655, about 30 years earlier, the Dutch established themselves at Fort Casimir, four miles down the Delaware River (near present-day New Castle). They seized the Swede's Christina fort, raided farms and town, and dismantled the fort. Not a shot was fired, but the Swedes, looking at the Dutch warships, cannon and a force of some 300 compared to Christina's 30, thought it prudent to surrender.

Nine years later the English conquered the entire Delaware River area, and Christina submitted to British rule, like much of the eastern shore of America.

CHARLES SPRINGER discovered that he was the only person in the Swedish settlement who could read and write. He soon became a leader in the community, impressing his new friends with his dedication to hard

---

[5]The terms or phrases in quotation marks are those used by CHARLES SPRINGER in a letter he wrote to his mother in 1693. Original letter is in Royal Archives, Stockholm, *Acta Eccles* V:186.

[6]Present day Wilmington, Delaware.

work and Christianity. Within a year and a half he married MARIA HENDRICKSON (X 657) on 27 December 1685. He acquired two plantations, living on one of them, an 800 acre tract called "Oak Hill," bordering the east side of Red Clay Creek in the neighborhood of Wooddale.[7]

He raised a variety of farm goods, plus livestock. Although he lived four miles from Crane Hook, as a prosperous farmer he had horses for his many trips to Christina where he was in great demand by many members of the community for assistance in solving their personal problems, reading mail, handling tax matters, carrying on correspondence.

Much of his time during these early years at Christina was devoted to the conduct of religious services. Before his arrival a wooden church had been constructed in 1667 near the mouth of the Christina River, across from the old fort. He was a reader in the church for many years, there being no ministers available.

It was CHARLES CHRISTOPHER SPRINGER who was asked to write a letter to John Thalin, postmaster at Gotheborg, Sweden, with regard to Christina's spiritual difficulties. This and subsequent letters were brought to the attention of Sweden's royal chancellory.[8] King Charles XI,as a result, arranged to make funds available for three missionaries to be sent to America, one of whom, the Rev. Eric Bjork, being assigned to Christina.

Among the parishoners greeting the new minister on 27 June 1697 was CHARLES SPRINGER who turned out to be of great aid to the newly arrived spiritual leader. Soon a new church building was being discussed, and the site chosen was a knoll rising in back of the old fort from which one could see the broad bay of the Delaware River. Land for the church was donated by John Stalcop, who, along with CHARLES SPRINGER, was now a church warden.

A mason and bricklayer, Joseph Yard, was hired and the agreement for construction was signed. Under its terms, Yard would receive 86 pounds, silver money "with the help of God to lay all the stone and Brick work of a church which is to be built....the length of it shall be 66 foot from out to out, and to be laid in ye ground, a good and firm foundation, and the height from ye Topp on ye ground upwards 20 feet, and ye thickness of ye wall from ye foundation to the lower ends of the windows 3 foot thick...and all ye windows and doors upon the Church shall be arched, and the doors and Windows Arched

---

[7]Book of Surveys (Penn.) 337, 338; Deeds, Book I-1,1; 15 August 1699.

[8]Originals of correspondence in Royal Archives, Stockholm.

THE OLD SWEDES (HOLY TRINITY) CHURCH did not have the portico as shown in this drawing during CHARLES CHRISTOPHER'S lifetime. The portico was added in 1762, some 24 years after his death. The church building is the oldest in the U.S. now standing as built and in use as a place of worship. (Drawing by Walter Stewart)

and Quined with Bricks...."

The total cost of the church was 800 pounds in Pennsylvania currency, much of which was raised by the ardent CHARLES SPRINGER. Church construction required only one year, the consecration taking place on 4 July 1699, Holy Trinity Sunday. Thus was the church named the Holy Trinity Church.[9]

The Rev. Bjork was unstinting in his praise of CHARLES SPRINGER. After his arrival at Christina, Bjork wrote in a report that "The Church had nobody but their reader, CHARLES CHRISTOPHER, a plain, honest, pious man ....he was very zealous and spared no pains to promote their spiritual welfare, as I myself always witnessed."

Upon completion of the Church, CHARLES SPRINGER stated his desire to resign as church warden, but Bjork recorded that at a meeting of the congregation "They all stuck to CHARLES SPRINGER for one on this side, as they could not get along without his assistance in the Church and wished that he remain in office so long as God should spare him or at least as long as he was able to attend to the work."

CHARLES sought and was awarded his naturalization papers in 1701. He continued to serve not only the church but many of the members of the community by handling their real estate affairs, tax problems, and other personal business transactions. By 1709 CHARLES' and MARIA'S last child was born, completing a family of eleven children -- first, four daughters, then seven sons. CHARLES SPRINGER JR. (IX 328) was the oldest son, born in 1694.[10]

As the 1700's dawned,The Old Swedes Church acquired more and more land, amounting to several hundred acres (in the present day city of Wilmington). This land, following a Swedish custom, was known as "priest or glebe" land, to secure a source of revenue for the support of the church. The land had been given to the church by John Stalcop, by agreement dated 29 September 1699.

But Stalcop died without making a conveyance,so Ann Stalcop executed a deed for the land on 18 May 1703 to CHARLES SPRINGER, longtime warden and trustee of the church.[11] One of the church's tracts was disposed of by

---

[9]Over the years the Holy Trinity Church has become known as the Old Swedes Church.

[10]For a listing of the children of CHARLES CHRISTOPHER and MARIA HENDRICKSON, see Appendix A, p. 430.

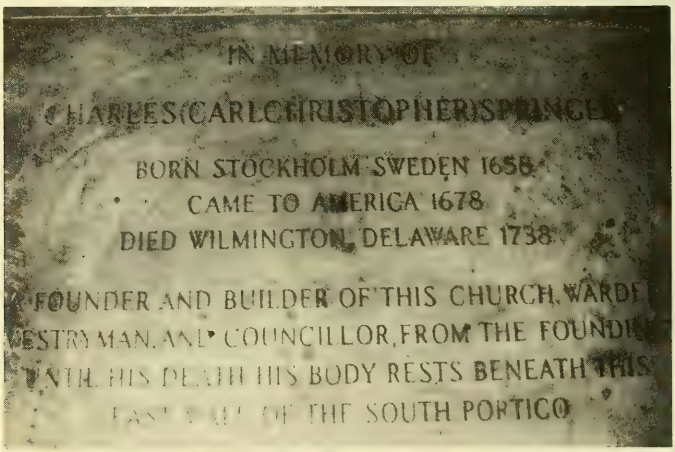
[11]Deed Record G, Vol. 1, pp. 576-79.

THE INTERIOR OF OLD SWEDES CHURCH IS MAINTAINED TODAY as it was originally constructed. In 1899, in preparation for the 200th anniversary of the consecration of the church, the interior was renovated in keeping with the Rev. Eric Bjork's description he wrote in 1700 to a clergyman in Sweden just one year and a half after the completion of the church.

1724, but the balance was farmed and the revenue went to pay the pastor's salary and maintain the church. As the town grew this land was divided into lots and leased or sold by a trustee representing the congregation. CHARLES SPRINGER was this trustee.[12]

The provisions of the original Stalcop deed required that every time the church authorities desired to sell any of this land, they were required to issue a deed bearing the names of every member of the vestry and congregation. This procedure became so burdensome that the church entered into a deed of trust with CHARLES SPRINGER whereby he could issue deeds in the name of the congregation. This procedure was followed for many years for the "Plot of Tract No. 1" (as shown in the accompanying map).

In 1733 CHARLES CHRISTOPHER SPRINGER, now 75 years old, was elected a member for life of the Church Council. He had been reelected annually since the council was formed. Five years later, on 26 May 1738, he was returning by boat from a trip to Gloucester County where he testified on 24 May to the validity of a deed of sale



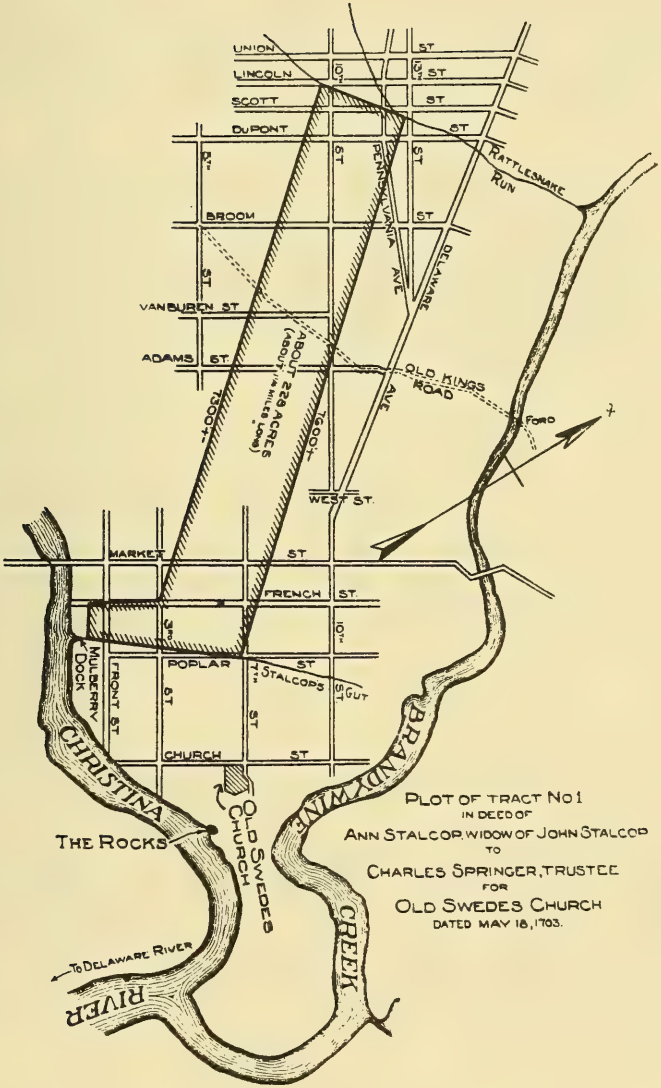
CHARLES CHRISTOPHER SPRINGER'S GRAVE was originally just outside the church, but with the addition of the South Portico his body rests today beneath the east wall of the South Portico.

witnessed by him 53 years earlier. He died suddenly in the boat on the Delaware River "probably of apoplexy."[13]

---

[12]Charles M. Curtis and Charles Lee Reese Jr., *Old Swedes Church* Delaware Tercentenary Commission, Wilmington, Del., 1938.

[13]Items of family history written by the Rev. Cornelius Springer, dated 15 Dec. 1865 (Historical Society of Delaware, Genealogical Records).



(From *Old Swedes Church*, published by Delaware Tercentenary Commission, 1938)

He was 80. He was laid to rest in a grave just outside the church.

At the time of his death,his oldest son CHARLES JR. was 42 and active in farming in the area. This son of the elder CHARLES married MARGARETA ROBINSON (IX 329), daughter of EDWARD ROBINSON (X 658). The spiritual life of the family of the elder Springer was dominant in his son's family life as well. In 1732 DAVID SPRINGER (VIII 164) was born to CHARLES JR. and MARGARETA, the first of four children.[14]

The religious training in the Springer family,begun two generations earlier, manifested itself in the education of young DAVID SPRINGER. He was educated for the ministry and soon became an Episcopal circuit rider, a traveling minister. He drifted away from Wilmington by 1755 and found his services helpful to various settlements in Albany County, N.Y. There he married MARGARET OLIVER, a widow, of the city of Albany where some 1280 acres of her dowry were located.[15]

Their first child was RICHARD SPRINGER (VII 82), born in 1758, eighteen years before the Colonies' Declaration of Independence from England. Eight more children followed, a family of four sons and five daughters. During the early 1770's the clamor in the Colonies for redress of Great Britain's acts became prevalent. However, in eastern New York, more than elsewhere, a majority of the people opposed separation from England, and the Loyalist cause flourished. Two of DAVID SPRINGER'S sons, RICHARD and Daniel, joined Butler's Rangers whose headquarters were in New York State.

The Springer home in Albany County was close to areas fast becoming a part of the Revolutionary War action. Early in 1777 the British plan was to strike from three directions along the valley of the Hudson River, in the vicinity of the Springer home. Such a plan would cut off New England from their confederate colonies further south. The British General John Burgoyne would move, with 8000 men, down from Lake Champlain and Lake George, not too many miles north of the Springers. Col. St. Leger would converge along the Mohawk Valley, as far away as Oswego. General Howe would be moving in strength

---

[14]For the children of CHARLES SPRINGER (JR.) and MARGARETA ROBINSON, see Appendix A, p. 431.

[15]As stated several years later in her petition for Crown land in Canada. MARGARET OLIVER (Oliviere) is said to have been born in Paris, France.

up the Hudson from the south. In total, some 33,000 men would effectively gather and control the whole of the great valley of the Hudson.

Burgoyne easily took the forts that guarded the lakes. He even took Fort Ticonderoga at the north outlets of Lake George without a blow being struck. The fort was on a precipitous height, which the Americans thought inaccessible by any sort of carriage. It rose above strong fortifications, beyond a narrow strip of water. But the English dragged cannon to Ticonderoga's summit, and the Americans withdrew.

The War was going well for the English. In contrast General George Washington was claiming that he was losing more men by desertion than he was gaining by enlistment. Without pay and clothing, men were deserting in disgust by the score. Burgoyne, however, also needed men. He left 1000 soldiers at Fort Ticonderoga as he swept further south. He had already lost another thousand at Bennington, Vt. earlier. When he reached the area of Saratoga near the Springers, some 14,000 Americans were poised for attack.

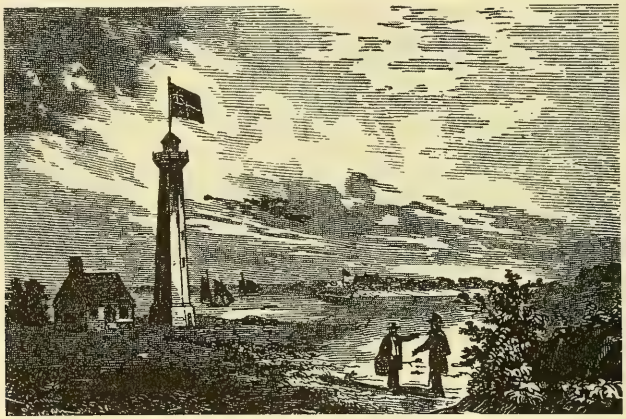
Burgoyne issued a call for Loyalists to join with him in the battle. DAVID SPRINGER, now 45 years old, responded along with many others. They were enroute to Stillwater, N.Y. for enlistment when they were seized by Americans and killed. Only days later, Burgoyne lost the Battle of Saratoga, and from that battle on the British fortunes declined. The tide had turned.

MARGARET SPRINGER, now alone with several of her daughters, lived in total fear and finally set out for Ft. Niagara, Canada, leaving her property and possessions behind. A few years later, in 1793, she sought land from the Crown, through this petition:

> "The petition of Margaret Springer, Widow of the late David Springer Humbly sheweth: That your Petitioner's late husband after many proofs of his Loyalty and attachment to the Crown--from earliest period in the disturbances in America, lost his life in an attempt to join the army of General Burgoyne at Still-Water (1777) accompanied by several other Loyalists, having been overtaken and attacked by the Rebels in superior numbers.
>
> "That your Petitioner, after her husband had been killed, was stripped of all her moveable and immovable property and to a considerable Value and left to struggle with a numerous & young family against all

the calamities of her Situation in the midst of the Murderers of her husband and the Robbers of her property...."

Richard Beasley, husband of her daughter Henrietta, certified that MARGARET SPRINGER had five children, and



FORT NIAGARA was a haven for British subjects fleeing the American Colonies during the War of Independence. It is located at the foot of the Niagara River where today is Niagara-on-the-Lake.

the petition sought land for each of them as well. The Land Board granted 400 acres to MARGARET and 200 acres each for the children listed in the petition: Rachel, Henrietta, Mary, Martha and Benjamin. RICHARD, John and Daniel Springer, the other sons, all submitted petitions for Crown land, and because of their work on behalf of the British cause were awarded land in Barton Township, in Wentworth County (present day Hamilton).[16]

MARGARET, now nearing 60 years of age, and all the children except RICHARD walked the 50 miles from Fort Niagara to Barton Township to settle anew, all having survived the horrors of the War between the Colonies and England.[17]

Son RICHARD SPRINGER followed the rest of the family, and was granted Lots 12 and 13 in Concession 3 in Barton Township. On one side of his newly acquired land were the lots granted to his brother Daniel, while the farm on the other side was that of JOHN AIKMAN SR. Bar-

---

[16]Information of the children of DAVID and MARGARET OLIVER SPRINGER is found in Appendix A, page 431.

[17]*op cit.* Annals of the Forty, No. 8, p. 67.

ton Township, divided by the steep Niagara Escarpment, had about half the township on the mountain and the other half below, much of it swamp, muddy ravines and creeks. This was where the Aikmans and the Springers ultimately settled into their farm lives. MARGARET SPRINGER'S son-in-law, Richard Beasley, developed into one of the large landholders, along with PETER HORNING and George Hamilton, all United Empire Loyalists.

When 28 years old, RICHARD SPRINGER married SARAH BOYCE (Boice), on 20 November 1786. She was from Poughkeepsie, N.Y., and was eleven years younger than RICHARD. They had ten children.[18]

RICHARD SPRINGER'S first Barton Township home was a log cabin, but he improved and enlarged it. An ardent Methodist, he organized Methodism in Barton Township and became a preacher and Sunday School teacher. As more and more people were attracted to him he organized a congregation. In the beginning he held services in the kitchen of his home. Later, when his followers became too numerous for his house, he moved them to his barn.

In the first ardor of his early conversion, RICHARD once prayed that "The Lord send down fire and burn the world up." Presumably he meant it spiritually, but his wife SARAH ran out in horror fearing "his head was turned."[19] RICHARD with his wagon would often take his followers to such places as the Old Bowman Chapel and the one at Stoney Creek, riddled by the bullets of the War of 1812.

In 1824 property at the corner of King and Wellington in Hamilton became available from the Land family, and RICHARD spearheaded the building of the first Methodist Church. One of RICHARD'S sons-in-law, Amos Dey Knight, was the building contractor. It was the first church building of any denomination in Hamilton.

RICHARD SPRINGER died five years after the building of the church on 25 May 1829. He was 71 years old. Buried in the church's graveyard, his headstone bears this epitaph:

"My flesh shall slumber in the ground
Till the last trump of joy shall sound;
Then burst the chains in sweet surprise
and in my Savior's image rise."

(E. Evans Sculpt.)

---

[18]The children of RICHARD and SARAH BOICE (BOYCE) SPRINGER are listed in Appendix A, p. 432.

[19]Family legend.

SARAH BOYCE SPRINGER died 18 years later, on 28 November 1847 in Hamilton, at the age of 78.

* * * *

The Springers and the Aikmans had been neighbors in Barton Township for many years before two of their children, MARY SPRINGER and ALEXANDER AIKMAN, were wed on 14 April 1813 in Hamilton, the year the village was laid out. MARY was just a few days shy of her twentieth birthday; ALEXANDER was 23. As his father's wagon and plow business grew, ALEXANDER AIKMAN devoted his time after the War of 1812 to the raising of crops and fruit on the Aikman farm. It was on this farm that their eight children were raised.[20]

Until the early 1830's that area of Barton Township below the mountain was less than half cultivated. The swamps with the harsh swamp grass along with ravines and creeks discouraged farming in many sections. However, the city of Hamilton in the township was showing signs of growth and the urbanization was pushing into farming areas.

In 1830, already a center for trade and finance, Hamilton saw the opening of the Burlington Canal, linking Hamilton Bay with Lake Ontario. Captain JOHN AIKMAN, ALEXANDER'S father, was one of the canal commissioners. Because of the swamps most of the town was located about a mile from the Bay, on gently rising ground where the Aikman farm was located. Prior to the completion of the Burlington Canal vessels could reach only Burlington Beach, a distance of some ten miles from Hamilton. With the opening of the canal, trade to Hamilton increased rapidly, and soon the community became a principal market for western merchants.[21]

When ALEXANDER AIKMAN'S wife MARY SPRINGER died in 1836 at the age of 43, Hamilton's urban growth was crowding the Aikman fruit growing farm. ALEXANDER remarried within the year on 18 January 1837 to the 40 year old Mary Elizabeth Clement.[22] They moved to nearby Ancaster Township where they farmed on land given to ALEXANDER by his father, Captain JOHN AIKMAN SR. Here on 28 April 1838, a son was born, named Peter Augustus

---

[20]ALEXANDER and MARY MARGARET SPRINGER AIKMAN had eight children. They are listed in Appendix A, p. 433.

[21]Smith's *Canadian Gazetteer*, 1846.

[22]Daughter of John Clement of Niagara, she was born 10 Oct. 1796.

Aikman.[23]

Four years later, on 29 December 1842, ALEXANDER'S second son by his first wife, RICHARD SPRINGER AIKMAN (V 20) married MARY ANN HOPKINS (V 21).

Ancaster by 1845 had twice the taxable property of any other township in the county and it was becoming somewhat of an industrial area. Saw and grist mills were prevalent, and a distillery making whisky sold the product for 25¢ a gallon. Again, ALEXANDER found himself being crowded by the encroaching urbanization, and his life as a farmer was being threatened. So he decided again to move further west, into Brant County, 25 miles from Ancaster.

It was in 1845 that ALEXANDER AIKMAN sold his Ancaster farmland. His brother-in-law, Thomas Hammill, husband of his sister Mary Aikman, bought the 150 acres in Lot 39, Concession 1. The price was approximately one dollar an acre, and with these and other funds ALEXANDER later acquired a farm near Paris in Brant County.

There were fewer than 1000 people living in Paris when ALEXANDER bought his farm. The town had been laid out only six years earlier. The village of Paris received its name, not from Paris, France, but from the large quantities of gypsum or "plaster of Paris" found in the area. When the Aikmans moved to Paris, there were three physicians, five taverns, three distilleries, six blacksmiths, five wagon makers, one whitesmith (tinsmith), five tailors, seven shoemakers, two schools for young ladies and of course other merchants and professional people.

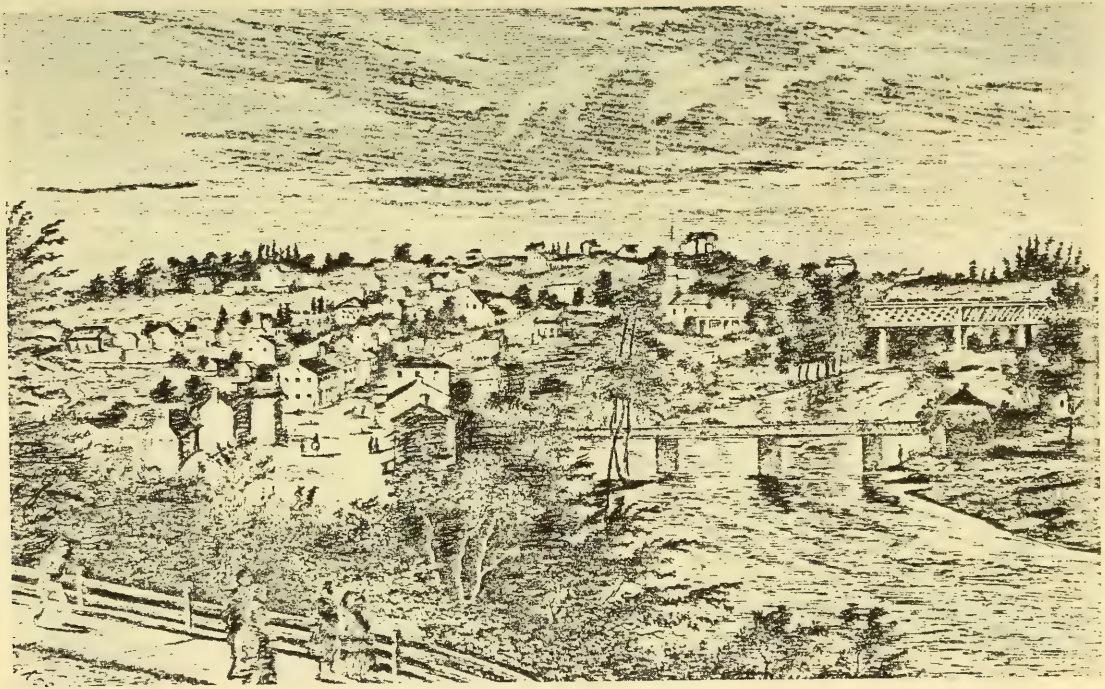
The farming area surrounding Paris was rolling,with fine, flourishing and well cultivated farms.[24] The appeal of these farms influenced ALEXANDER and MARY ELIZABETH AIKMAN and their four youngest children to move to a more peaceful area, distant from the crowded Ancaster of Wentworth county.

Their oldest son, John Alexander Aikman, now in his thirties, bought a farm near Norwich in adjoining Oxford County, Ont. The second son, RICHARD SPRINGER AIKMAN, followed his father to the Paris area where both famil-

---

[23]Peter Augustus Aikman became a well-known physician in Windsor, Essex County, Ont. In 1893 he created a remedy known as "Orangeine." A company with capital said to be $350,000 was formed in 1898 to manufacture and market the product. Earlier he had invented the "Aikman Automatic Car Coupler" used to couple railroad cars.

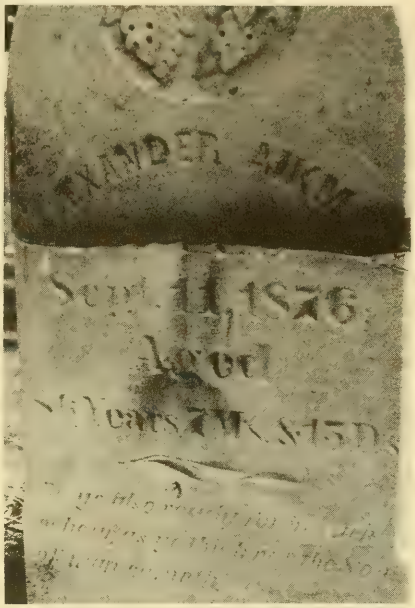
[24]*op cit. Canadian Gazetteer.*



PARIS, ONTARIO, AS IT SOMEWHAT APPEARED TO ALEXANDER AIKMAN *and his family when they moved to Brant County during the 1840's. Actually, the drawing was made during the early 1860's as evidenced by the Great Western Railway train crossing the more distant bridge.*

ies lived until the late 1850's.[25] It was in Paris that four children were born to RICHARD S. and MARY AIKMAN, including WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN (IV 10).[26]

The Aikman farm near Paris was run largely by ALEXANDER, the original immigrant to Paris. But by the time he approached 70 his health was of concern to his family. It was decided to sell the farm, and ALEXANDER AIKMAN would move to Colchester, in Essex County, where he could live with his youngest daughter, Hannah Ryerson Aikman. Colchester was about 20 miles from the U. S. border at Windsor - Detroit. Hannah, in 1872, married William Warden Woodbridge, becoming his second wife.[27] ALEXANDER died four years after the Woodbridge marriage, and was buried in the Christ Church Cemetery of Colchester.[28] On his tombstone is this:



TOMBSTONE OF ALEXANDER AIKMAN in Christ Church Cemetery in Colchester, Essex County, Ont.

[25]Evidence of RICHARD S. AIKMAN and family living in Paris during the early 1850's is the biography of his son, Samuel Oliver Aikman, who in 1915 stated that he was born in Paris in 1854. WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN (IV 10), RICHARD'S first son, was born in Paris in 1847, suggesting that the family moved to Paris at about the same time as ALEXANDER AIKMAN, the father of RICHARD S. AIKMAN.

[26]The children of RICHARD S. AIKMAN and MARY ANN HOPKINS AIKMAN are listed in Appendix A, p. 434.

[27]The children of Hannah Aikman and William Woodbridge are listed in Appendix A, p. 434.

[28]ALEXANDER'S second wife, Mary Elizabeth Clement, died on 13 January 1892 in Utica, Macomb Co., Mich. at the age of 95. Several children of ALEXANDER and MARY SPRINGER AIKMAN purchased land in Colchester in Essex County after their father moved there to live with his daughter Hannah. As early as 1862 Oliver Tiffany Aikman and David Springer Aikman bought land in Concession 3. Later, from 1880 until 1887, Daniel Showers Aikman, RICHARD SPRINGER AIKMAN, and Dr. Peter Augustus Aikman (ALEXANDER'S son by his second marriage) were all engaged in real estate transactions with William Woodbridge (based on data from Registry Office, Sandwich, Ont.)

"Be ye also ready
for in such an hour as ye think not
the son of man cometh"

RICHARD S. AIKMAN'S older brother, John Alexander Aikman, urged him to move his family to nearby North Norwich in Oxford County. This they did. RICHARD'S family by the late 1850's was comprised of one daughter, Sarah Ann Aikman, born in 1843, and five sons. Sarah was married in Norwich in 1864 to Samuel Elisha Kelly, age 30. Sarah Ann was 20. The wedding was performed in the Wesleyan Methodist Church of Norwich by the minister of the church, Solomon Snyder. RICHARD'S brother, John Aikman, was the witness.

Son WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN was 23 years old by 1871. With his father RICHARD they formed Aikman & Son, Bakers and Confectioners, commencing business on the first day of that year. The Norwich firm also retailed and wholesaled cigars. Unique was their "revolving oven," advertised in the *Norwich Standard*.[29]

WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN at 23 years.

The second major event in the Aikman family during 1871 was the December 29 wedding of WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN to MARY CATHERINE (MINNIE) GHENT. (See Chapter Two, page 48.) MINNIE lived just a couple of miles away from the Aikman homestead in North Norwich in Oxford County. The couple had met through the activities of the Norwich Wesleyan Methodist Church where both the Aikmans and Ghents were most active. The Wesleyan Church (later to become the United Church of Canada) had, only a few years earlier, constructed a new building at a total cost of $2900. Subscriptions amounted to $2100 and the balance was derived from "tea meetings, rental of pews, etc."

The wedding, however, was held in the home of MINNIE'S parents, WILLIAM B. and RACHEL GHENT. The Ghent farm was in nearby Burford Township in bordering Brant County. MINNIE had just turned 15 at the time of her marriage. The ceremony was performed by the Rev. John Wood.

The financial panic of 1873 in the United States severely affected Canada. It was brought on by rapid overexpansion and speculation, and tossed both countries

[29]Much of the information regarding the family of RICHARD S. AIKMAN in Norwich was furnished through the kindness of the Norwich and District Historical Society.

No. 2945

By His Excellency The Right Honorable JOHN, BARON LISGAR, *of Lisgar, and Baillieborough in the County of Cavan, Ireland, in the Peerage of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, G. C. B., G. C. M. G., one of Her Majesty's Most Honorable Privy Council, Governor General of Canada, &c., &c., &c.*

WHEREAS Her Majesty has been graciously pleased to authorize Me to grant Licenses for the Solemnization of Marriages: And Whereas

William A. Aikman of Norwich in the County of Oxford and Mary C. Grant of Dunford in the County of Wentworth

are determined to enter into the Holy Bans of Matrimony, and are desirous of having their Marriage publicly solemnized; in order that such their honest desires may the more speedily have the due effect, and that they may be able to procure the same to be lawfully Solemnized without Publication of Bans, I do hereby, for good causes, give and grant this License of Faculty as well to them, the said Parties contracting, as to all or every Person or Minister, duly ordained and lawfully exercising his Ministry within the Province of Ontario, to solemnize and perform the same: *Provided always*, that by reason of any Affinity, Consanguinity, Precontract, or any other lawful cause, there be no legal impediment in this behalf, otherwise, if any fraud shall appear to have been committed, at the time of granting this License, either by false suggestions or concealment of the truth, that then this License shall be null and void, to all intents and purposes whatsoever.

Given under my Hand and Office Seal, at Norwich this twenty sixth day of December in the year of Our Lord, one thousand eight hundred and Seventy One, and of Her Majesty's Reign the 34th

Deputy Governor.

MARRIAGE LICENSE issued to WILLIAM A. AIKMAN and MARY CATHERINE GHENT on 26 Dec. 1871. They were married by John Wood, minister of the Norwich Wesleyan Methodist Church from 1768-1872. Richard Rawlings and Miss Clara Aikman were witnesses.

into economic depression. This condition influenced prices of farm produce and other products. The Aikman & Son confectionary and bakery firm felt the impact of the widespread depression. In 1878 WILLIAM ALEXANDER and his brother Samuel O. Aikman organized the Aikman Bros. Livery Stables. But this did not produce a satisfactory income so WILLIAM decided to move to Paris and take up farming. Years earlier he had acquired some experience in "setting out an orchard."[30]

WILLIAM A. AIKMAN was not a tall man, about five feet nine inches. He had black curly hair, and a mustache. Samuel, his younger brother, was much taller, being well over six feet. WILLIAM and MINNIE were childless after five years of marriage, so they adopted a boy in 1876. He was named Alexander. Two years later they had their own son, Richard Springer Aikman II.

RICHARD SPRINGER AIKMAN JR.

After the demise of the Aikman Bros. Livery Stables in Norwich, and WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN'S farming experience near Paris in 1878, the two brothers discussed with their father the feasibility of re-entering the bakery business -- but this time in the United States. With the advent of railroads between Toronto and Detroit and Port Huron, Michigan, many Canadians were emigrating to Michigan. Moreover, their father, RICHARD S. AIKMAN, was in declining health and unable to maintain the head of the family status. Now 62, he was finding his daily chores a hardship and continued effort could jeopardize his well-being.

So the Aikmans decided to emigrate to the United States -- some 100 years after their ancestor CAPTAIN JOHN AIKMAN left the American colonies and located in Canada--at Fort Niagara as a member of Butler's Rangers during the American War of Independence.

The move to Port Huron could not take place until late in 1879 because MINNIE AIKMAN was again pregnant. When EMILY GARNET BARKER AIKMAN(III 5) was born on 9 May 1879 plans for the move began to develop more rapidly.

The Grand Trunk Railway was now running regular trains between Toronto and Port Huron, passing through Guelph and Stratford,to the north of Paris, and continuing west through St. Mary's to Point Edward, a suburb of Sarnia on the St. Clair River across from Port Huron.

---

[30]According to the Canadian Census of 1871 WILLIAM A. AIKMAN was identified with Aikman and Son, but he was also listed as "setting out an orchard on 1 May of that year.

Later that year -- 1879 -- three generations of Aikmans left Canada. There were RICHARD SPRINGER AIKMAN and his wife MARY ANN. Their two sons accompanied them:

HOME IN WHICH GARNETT AIKMAN WAS BORN, near Paris, Ont. in 1879. This picture of house and GARNETT AIKMAN was taken some 50 years later.

WILLIAM ALEXANDER and Samuel. And then there were the children of WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN: their adopted son Alex, age 8, their son Richard, age 3, and the infant daughter EMILY GARNETT.

At Point Edward they ferried across the St. Clair River to Port Huron, a small town that had been incorporated only 21 years earlier.[31] WILLIAM ALEXANDER and MINNIE and their three children moved into a house on Military Street. Samuel lived with them for a couple of years, until he married Fannie E. Stockwell Bennett of Lexington in Sanilac County in 1881.[32] The two brothers organized their baking company shortly after their arrival, and they named it Aikman Bros. Bakery, located first on Military Street and later at 1309 Tenth Street. It was largely a wholesaling operation. Their father,

---

[31]The Grand Trunk Railroad Tunnel under the St. Clair River between Sarnia, Ontario, and Port Huron, Michigan, was not completed until 1891. Thus, all passengers prior to that date traveling from Canada to Port Huron on the Grand Trunk were ferried across the St. Clair River.

[32]In a 1915 *History of Michigan*, Samuel Aikman gives his wife's maiden name as Fannie E. Bennett.

FAMILY OF WILLIAM ALEXANDER AND MINNIE AIKMAN *in 1866 while living in Port Huron, Mich.* GARNETT AIKMAN *is in center, with her brothers Richard at left and the older Alexander at right.*

RICHARD SPRINGER AIKMAN, worked at the bakery, first as a foreman and later as manager.[33] He and his wife lived next door to WILLIAM ALEXANDER and MINNIE when they were living at 1215 Ninth Street, Port Huron.

THE ST. CLAIR RAILROAD TUNNEL between Port Huron and Sarnia, Ont. was opened for traffic in 1891, eleven years after the Aikmans made their trip from Canada to Port Huron. (From Families, published by Ontario Genealogical Society, Vol. 18, No. 14, 1979.)

The bakery prospered. By 1888 the Aikman brothers opened a restaurant in conjunction with the bakery. At noon WILLIAM would announce the opening of the restaurant's doors by the ringing of a large hand bell which he would toss and twirl into the air, much to the fascination of the customers. The firm entered the wholesale trade of roasting peanuts. MINNIE AIKMAN worked for a while in the restaurant's office.

When their daughter, GARNETT AIKMAN, was ten years old they gave her two ponies, Darby and Dandy, with complete sets of harness and two buggies. Few were the ten year old girls in Port Huron who could boast of two ponies and their own buggies. But her father was strict, and the harnesses had to be hung in a precise manner and cleaned daily.

At the dinner table, none of the children was permitted to talk until spoken to. Much of the table con-

---

[33]As listed in the Port Huron city directories during the 1880's, and the U.S. Census for 1880 of St. Clair County, Mich.

GARNETT AIKMAN and one of her ponies

versation centered about their religious convictions. The Aikmans had joined the Plymouth Brethren Church, a group that believed the Bible to be their only guide, feeling it was "inspired and inerrant." The Plymouth Brethren recognized no division of clergy and laity, claiming that they were part of a "priesthood of all believers." There was no salaried or ordained minister in the usual sense. Any member during a meeting would be expected to respond to a call to lead the group in prayer and preaching.

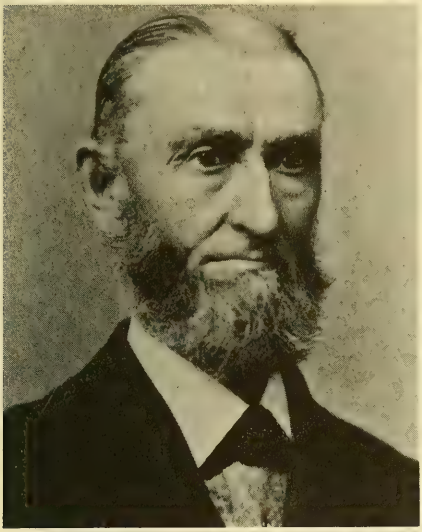
The Plymouth Brethren were not accepted in Port Huron's social life as were the more traditional Protestant denominations such as the Methodists, Presbyterians and Episcopalians. GARNETT AIKMAN was required by her father to attend the Brethren meetings. She would walk in devious directions enroute in order to pretend to those who might recognize her that she was not really going to that "meeting of people who do nothing but pray." The Plymouth Brethren did not have a church building, meeting instead in second floor halls of small buildings. WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN was a frequent "preacher" during these Plymouth Brethren meetings.

On 29 December 1892 GARNETT'S grandfather and grandmother, RICHARD SPRINGER and MARY ANN AIKMAN, celebrated their golden wedding anniversary. Fifty friends gathered at the home of their son, WILLIAM ALEXANDER and the "aged couple received many handsome presents, among them being a pair of gold eye glasses for both Mr. and Mrs. Aikman."[34] However, RICHARD AIKMAN'S health was failing and he was especially hard of hearing. He died in 1898, and was buried in Lakeside Cemetery, Port Huron. His wife died after 1900 at Frewsburg, Chautauqua County, New York.

GARNETT attended the Washington School in Port Huron and in 1894 was given a "Certificate of Promotion" from that elementary school to high school. Her final year at Washington School was marked by the following grades: U.S. History, 87; Arithmetic, 95; Physiology, 96; Grammar, 88; Spelling, 93; Definitions, 89. Her attendance was 199 1/2 present, absent, 1/2, number of times tardy, 0.

[34]Quoted from an item in the *Port Huron Daily Times*.

GARNETT'S high school activities and social life were curtailed by the rigorous discipline enforced by her father. He was so exacting with regard to all three



RICHARD S. AIKMAN AND HIS WIFE MARY ANN at about the time of their fiftieth wedding anniversary in Port Huron, Mich.

of the children that her brother Richard left home when of high school age, and took off for California.

There was no card playing or dancing in the Aikman house, and the singing was mostly of religious hymns. GARNETT'S mother, MINNIE AIKMAN, was a warm and kind person, and she and her daughter were very close. GARNETT learned to play the piano and as the family gathered after dinner around the piano, any songs other than hymns were of a sobering nature indeed. GARNETT'S book of piano pieces included tunes with such gruesome lyrics as "The Fatal Wedding":

The wedding bells were ringing on a moonlight winter's night,
The church was decorated, all within was gay and bright;
A mother with her baby came and saw the lights aglow,
She thought of how those same bells chimed for her three years ago!
"I'd like to be admitted, sir," she told the sexton old,
"Just for the sake of baby, to protect him from the cold."
He told her that the wedding there was for the rich and grand,

And with the eager watching crowd outside she'd have to stand.

Refrain

While the wedding bells were ringing, while the bride and groom were there,
Marching up the aisle together, as the organ peeled an air;
Telling tales of fond affection, vowing never more to part,
Just another wedding, just another broken heart.

She begged the sexton once again to let her pass inside,
"For baby's sake you may step in," the gray haired man replied;
"If anyone knows reason why this couple should not wed,
Speak now, or hold your peace forever," soon the preacher said!
"I must object," the woman cried, with voice so soft and mild,
"The bridegroom is my husband, sir, and this our little child."
"What proof have you?" the preacher asked, "My infant," she replied.
She raised her babe, then knelt to pray, the little one had died.

Refrain

The parents of the bride then took the outcast by the arm.
"We'll care for you through life," they said,
"You've saved our child from harm."

The outcast wife, the bride and parents, quickly drove away.
The husband killed by his own hand before the break of day!
No wedding feast was spread that night; two graves were made next day:
One for the little baby, and in one the father lay.
The story has oft been told by firesides warm and bright,
Of bride and groom, of outcasts, and the Fatal Wedding night.

Refrain

Or the sorrowful piece entitled "Wait, Mister Postman":

The postman was late, and was running along, to
gather the letters in time,
When he heard a sweet voice, like a meadowlark's
song, or a mellow toned silver bell's chime.

"Wait Mr. Postman, don't hurry so fast
Wait Mr. Postman, I've caught you at last,
This letter must go in the mail before seven
The letter I've written to mama in heaven."

The postman was rough, but he paused and looked down,
and saw a wee bit of a girl
With trusting blue eyes and with tresses of brown
wreathed in many a beautiful curl.

"Wait Mr. Postman, please bend down your head;
Wait Mr. Postman, my mama is dead,
This letter must go in the mail before seven,
This letter I've written to mama in heaven.

"Wait, and I'll read what I've written," said she.
"Dear mama, I'm lonesome and sad.
Since you went far away, won't you please send for me?
If you would I'd be ever so glad.

"Wait Mr. Postman, don't hurry away,
Wait Mr. Postman and answer me, pray,
Will mama get this, if it's mailed before seven,
This letter I've written to mama in heaven?"

GARNETT AIKMAN studied the piano largely under the direction of her mother, and during her high school days began giving piano lessons. One of her pupils was Edna O'Dell, older sister of FRANK O'DELL (III 4), whom GARNETT had met at a high school dance some months earlier. FRANK O'DELL and GARNETT AIKMAN were attracted to each other, to the extent that GARNETT thought it well to turn aside a young man attending the University of Michigan in 1897 when GARNETT was 18 years old. This young man's name was Leonard Haight, and he wrote this letter.

91 S. State St.
Ann Arbor

Dear Friend Garnie:

Your pleasant letter arrived yesterday morning and was duly welcomed. I see by its contents that you are in something of a quandry in regard to accepting my invitation. I knew you would be expecting an early reply to your letter and I would have written yesterday, but my time was complete-

ly taken up finishing up my last work of the year and preparing for examinations this morning. But I have a few moments this afternoon in which I will write you these few lines.

GARNETT AIKMAN AT AGE 18

Your accepting Frank O'Dell's invitation was the most natural and expected action under the circumstances. I am sorry I could not let you know sooner whether I should be back in time or not, but I did not know myself until yesterday. I expect to return in time for both the hop and graduating exercises.... I relieve you of all responsibility of the invitation I gave you, and would advise you to keep this one. You will have company to the party and that's the main thing....

We had quite a bicycle parade in Ann Arbor Tuesday evening. The college professors and instructors turned out and joined in the fun with the students and the younger boys and girls of the city. There were many pleasing and beautiful designs and costumes in the parade. A number of high wheels also appeared, and quite a lot of fun resulted.

Well, Garnie, I will close now. Don't worry any more about the invitation matter. Let it stand as it is now. No doubt there will be another chance to accept my invitation; perhaps with Frank O'Dell such would not be the case. So goodby for the present, I am

Sincerely your friend,
Leonard

June 18, 1897

As GARNET AIKMAN was finishing high school, her father's health concerned the family. Doctors recommended his moving from the city, to a farm where fresh air would hopefully contribute to an improved physical condition. So it was that WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN with-

drew from the Aikman Bros. Baking Company.[35] The family moved to Amador, in Worth Township of Sanilac County in 1898, some 18 miles north of Port Huron. GARNETT and her mother MINNIE dreaded the move to such an isolated place, but the decision was made.

FRANK O'DELL, however, made the trip often to see GARNETT. He first traveled to Amador on horseback, but later settled for his horse and wagon. His horse had learned the "way home" at night, and FRANK could sleep while his horse wended their 18 mile trip back to the O'Dell home at 1611 - 15th Street, Port Huron.

WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN RESIGNED from the Aikman Bros. Baking Company in 1898, at which time the family moved to Sanilac County, Mich. The name of the bakery was then changed to Port Huron Bread Co., and later to S. O. Aikman & Son.

[35]The bakery went through several name changes, such as S.O. Aikman and Son Bread Co., and ultimately Aikman Baking Company. It became the largest independent bakery in the area, and remained in the Aikman family until its demise in 1974. Two years earlier, in 1972, the bakery was sold to the Great American Heritage Corporation, Battle Creek, Michigan. Then, in 1974, the Battle Creek firm decided to put the equipment up for auction and nearly 100 years of Port Huron history ended. Earl A. Aikman, grandson of Samuel Oliver Aikman, was president of the company for 29 years prior to its closing.

5

From Chapter Four

(*ca.* 1665-1740) AUSTIN ODELL (XI 1024) = _____ (XI 1025)

(*ca.* 1690-1760) JOSEPH ODELL (X 512) = ELIZABETH _____(X 513)

(*ca.* 1711-1785) AUGUSTINE ODELL SR. (IX 256) = _____ (IX 257)

(1740-1808) AUGUSTINE ODELL JR. (VIII 128) = MOLLY ____ (VIII 129)

(1770-1843) SAMUEL ODELL (VII 64) = ELIZABETH WELLS (VII 65)

(1796-1861) BENJAMIN ODELL (VI 32) = EMMA _____ (VI 33)

(1816-1857) JEREMIAH O'DELL (V 16) = ELIZABETH LEONORA MICHELL (V 17)

To Chapter Six

CHAPTER FIVE — Odell/O'Dell

The William Odell family of Bedfordshire County, England, during the early 1600's was deeply religious. So impassioned were William Odell's feelings that on 17 April 1637, outside a church in nearby Newport of Buckinghamshire County, Edward Hartley quarrelled "by words with William Odell in the churchyard and (stabbed) the seyd William through the arme."[1]

Two years later, on 17 October 1639 when the case reached the court, these words appeared in the margin of the records: "Absunt in Nova Anglia." Beneath that were the words "William Odell ut supra."[2] The Latin verb was written in the plural, meaning that neither Odell nor Hartley was present. In fact, they were not in the country. William Odell at least had left England and was living in America.

The Odells of Bedfordshire were English Puritans. William's father, Richard Odell of Newport Pagnell in Bucks (Buckinghamshire) County was a miller and he had willed to William, his eldest son, "my freehold land in Cranfield, Bedfordshire County" on 21 November 1636.

As Puritans they thoroughly endorsed the Protestant cause in England which, during the past couple of centuries, gradually overthrew the role of the Pope of Rome as the dictator of religious behavior and worship in England. Henry VIII had abolished the authority of Roman papacy by 1534, declaring that he was now "the only supreme head (on) earth of the Church of England."

When Elizabeth I came into power in 1558 she declared that she would continue to maintain the Church of England as the only church, and that royal power would dictate to all English men and women that church and state were the royal prerogative.

The English Parliament under Elizabeth I passed the "Act of Uniformity" which required Englishmen to follow observances that many Protestants thought to be an extension of popish superstitions. These Protestants argued that the overthrow of the Pope's religious rule in England should mean that men and women could now worship as they pleased: that one obey God rather than men. These Protestants were known as Puritans.

---

[1] N. Y. Genealogical and Biographical Record, Vol. 44, p. 118, in the publication's "Clues from English Archives."

[2] Archdeacon's "Visitation Book" in church of Newport (Pagnell), Buckingham County, England: 1635-1638.

Puritan sentiment had been growing in England for many years prior to William Odell's scuffle with Edward Hartley. It fluctuated from one royal ruler to the next, but the Puritans' confidence continued to grow. Their goal was to "purify" the usage of the Church of England from any papal tarnish, thus permitting worship as men would see fit. Private prayers at rising and family devotions with all the family and servants dominated the Puritans' lives. Their preachings stressed the need for control of one's own religious life in terms of the Christian view he thought best expressed his feelings.

Initially, England's Protestantism, its "Reformation," was aimed solely at the roots of the authority of the Pope at Rome. But English rulers through time distorted this original character of the overthrow, and the royalty became more and more tyrannical in its religious dictation to Englishmen.

By 1609, less than 30 years before the altercation between William Odell and Edward Hartley, a small group of English "Separatists" fled to Holland. There they were free to worship as they wished with the friendly people of the Netherlands. But soon these Separatists realized that their children were growing up as Dutch, and this English group sought not to lose its English nationality altogether. They decided to try their fortunes in the New World.

They had heard of the Virginia settlement at Jamestown in America, and the news was that it was doing well; at least the word reaching them in Holland was favorable. The Dutch were well informed on activities in the New World. They already had their own traders on the Hudson River; Dutch settlements had been established on the Delaware River as well as the Hudson.

So the English Separatists in Holland learned of the progress of the Virginia Company. Financial backing for the voyage to Virginia was obtained by the Separatists from several London merchants, or "Adventurers." The group from Holland sailed first to England in their own ship *Speedwell*. There, additional Separatists boarded the *Mayflower* and both ships sailed from Southampton, England, on 15 August 1620, about 17 years prior to William Odell's and Edward Hartley's argument.

The *Speedwell*, however, encountered serious leakage problems, and both ships returned to England. All 102 passengers were crowded onto the *Mayflower* and it set sail again on 16 September for the Virginia coast. An agreement had already been worked out with the Virginia Company for their settlement in the Jamestown area. After 66 days at sea, land was sighted, but the captain's

reckonings had gone awry and the *Mayflower* arrived instead at (present-day Provincetown) Massachusetts, on Cape Cod, 21 November 1620.

The colonists moved on to Plymouth within a few weeks where they made their foothold secure. Ultimately they worked their way free from their agreement with the Adventurers.[3]

During these years they wrote letters to their friends and families back in England who were still under the yoke of harsher and harsher laws that prevented any Englishmen from organizing any worship of their own. Puritans, for many years seeking only simplified worship within the Church, had now become a political party. King Charles I had married a Roman Catholic and with this complication he dismissed Parliament in 1629 and he ruled the country by his own will and his alone.

It was in this almost hopeless climate that even stout-hearted Englishmen lost hope. Their leaders were in the King's prisons, and Charles dared anyone to oppose him. As a young man William Odell grew up recognizing the turmoil of not only religious differences but the political agitation as well. After his scuffle with Edward Hartley he decided that he and his family would leave for New England, where "Company of Massachusetts Bay" had entrenched itself. There, thought William Odell, the Church of England still exists and one could worship in his own way within the Church without the political consequences of English royalty stalking on every side.

In the parish of Odell in northeastern Bedfordshire was a church built originally in 1220. The rector, Peter Bulkeley, and William Odell were close friends. They agreed to organize a group and sail for Massachusetts in 1637. They were joined by many others. King Charles' persecution of numerous religious groups was driving thousands from England, many to America but even greater numbers to Barbados in the West Indies.[4] William Odell had married Agnes Franklyn of Bromham Parish on 4

---

[3]The Adventurers, a group of London merchants, had agreed with the Pilgrims that the former would provide the financial backing, plus the transportation and supplies. The Pilgrims, in turn, were to establish a colony, fish, and trade for profit with the Adventurers, until the obligations had been paid off. The partnership was dissolved in 1624, and some years later the colonists had paid off their debts completely.

[4]Some Odell genealogists feel that William Odell and the Rev. Peter Bulkeley were allied through marriage, as quoted by Minnie Pool in her *Odell Genealogy* (Monroe, Wisc., Emery Odell, 1935), p.16. Odell genealogists disagree on the precise date of William Odells arrival in Massachusetts. Some place the year as 1635; others in 1636 and 1637.

May 1629, and with their one son, William, made the voyage to the New World.[5]

The Rev. Peter Bulkeley found it necessary to conceal his religious role from authorities in England before embarking; otherwise he would have been refused permission to leave the country. William Odell, too, left no trace of his passage in order to avoid taxes. The *Abigail*, on which the Odells and Rev. Bulkeley sailed, arrived with "40 passengers more than there are here mentioned....some of whom thought best, no doubt, to be taken on after the clearance of the vessel" by the English port authorities.[6]

The Rev. Bulkeley and the Odell family moved west of the Cape Cod, to the Concord River where they participated in the development of the town of Concord. A second Odell son, James, was born on 2 December 1639. A daughter, Rebecca, was born on 12 July 1642.[7]

The Odells of Concord found the Massachusetts Bay colony to be well organized, with many of its population well educated and wealthy. There was strong clerical leadership, and the family had hoped to accomplish in Massachusetts what they, as dissidents within the English Church, could not achieve in England.

But the Massachusetts Bay Company, unlike the Virginia Company, had its headquarters in the colony, and was able to make various political and religious decisions without permission from the King. In England every subject was by law a member of the Church of England. In Massachusetts a man could become a member of the Church only after a searching examination of the individual's doctrine and worship. Those who did not qualify in terms of the criteria set forth by the clergy

---

[5]Rebecca Brown is given as William Odell's wife by Minnie Pool *(op cit)* -- see Footnote 4), but no source for marriage is given. John Nevill Esq. of New York as quoted in the *American Genealogist*, Vol. 26, pp. 8, 9 -- 1950, states that William's wife was Agnes Franklyn, of Bronham Parrish, Bedfordshire County, married on 4 May 1629. This family of William during that period in Bedfordshire often went by the name of Wodell, and one William Wodell is known to have arrived in Rhode Island about 1640. This William Wodell dropped the "W" but his children as listed in *Austin's Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island* (pp. 434-437) and *Savage's Genealogical Dictionary of New England* (Vol. IV, p. 377), are different from the children of the William Odell who arrived with Peter Bulkeley.

[6]Massachusetts Historical Collection, Series 3, Vol. 8.

[7]N. Y. Historical & Genealogical Register, Vol. IV, p. 272.

were not admitted, and, not being members of the Church, could not vote or participate in the government of their communities. Those not qualifying were often whipped, fined, sentenced to have their ears cut off, or banished from the Bay colony completely.

Roger Williams (who was to found Rhode Island) continually battled the Bay Colony. He was banished from Massachusetts about the time of the arrival of William Odell and Peter Bulkeley in 1637. Roger Williams had argued ever since his arrival from England in 1630 that the King's Patent, which gave land to the English by right of colonization, was illegal and that the Indians owned the land. Thus, contended Williams, the English should buy the land from the Indians. For this and other acts distasteful to the Massachusetts Colony, Williams was banished by the General Court. However, he slipped away and traveled to Providence, then nothing more than Indian country.

The William Odells, still seeking religious freedom, found life in Massachusetts unbearable. Shortly after the birth of Rebecca, they decided to move to the Territory of Connecticut where there was no religious test for citizenship. The family traveled south to Providence, and then to Uncoway (as Fairfield, Connecticut, was known during the early 1640's). Sixteen families made the trip from Concord.[8] Uncoway was laid out in four squares of 25 or 30 acres each. "There were five wide streets laid out well--two running northeast and southwest and three running northwest and southeast all the way to the sound....Large buttonball trees surrounded the Squares."[9]

By 1643 the third Odell son, John, was born.[10] This provided the Odells with one daughter and two sons, one of whom had been born in England.[11] Life in Fairfield was much more to the family's liking. Fairfield

---

[8]Savage, the eminent New England genealogist, states that William Odell's family, after leaving Concord, traveled first to Southampton in 1642 on the Atlantic side of Long Island settling on the Pequonneck (Peconic) River, before moving on to Fairfield.

[9]Elizabeth V. H. Banks, *This Is Fairfield -- 1639-1940* (New Haven, Conn.: Walker-Rackliff Co., 1960) p. 26. One Peter Bulkeley was living in Fairfield in 1786, possibly a descendant of the Rev. Bulkeley.

[10]*op cit*, Minnie Pool, p. 18.

[11]James Odell, the second son and first to be born in America, died in 1641, only 14 months after birth.

by 1661 had become the leading town in western Connecticut and it was the center of navigation as well as the seat of county courts. Grain and timber were exported and the Fairfield citizens were generally prosperous. By the early 1690's William's third son John, a grown man, was active in town circles and the Odells' lives were now rewarding them for the trials experienced by William and Agnes in England and Massachusetts.[12]

Both William and his son John began writing to their relatives in England shortly after their settling in Fairfield. They urged their English families to turn their backs on the tyranny and constant strife with which all were faced daily. In Connecticut, wrote the Odells, there was honest and just religious freedom. True, there were dangers. Indians faced them on all sides, and the French threatened from time to time from the north. But, all in all, life in the New World--in Connecticut--was to be vastly preferred to King Charles I and his royal rule.

Too, they urged their relatives to come to Connecticut rather than Massachusetts where religious persecution was still in full swing. For example, as they wrote to their English relatives, Massachusetts Bay Colony laws had been passed prohibiting worship by Baptists. Also, they told about one lady in Massachusetts who was threatened with arrest because she smiled in church.[13]

In 1656 and the several years following, Quakers had been whipped in Massachusetts, imprisoned and even branded. Several were put to death. But, wrote the Odells, in Fairfield and other Connecticut communities no such persecution existed.

The persuasion bore fruit, despite the risks of the voyages from England to America. The boats were clumsy, about 70 feet in length, high out of the water and even in moderate waters subject to considerable motion. The risk of fires starting on the wooden vessels was well known.

---

[12] *op cit, This Is Fairfield*, p. 35. By 1681 John Odell is recorded as a landholder, with 467 acres. On the same list is William Odell Sr. with 362 acres. This William Odell would be the English-born son of the immigrant William. The latter died about 1700 in Rye, N. Y. A direct descendant of this William Odell, eight generations later, is Benjamin Barker Odell, governor of New York State from 1901 to 1905. (This lineage is described fully in Reynold's *Genealogy and Family History of Southern New York*, published in 1914, pp. 586-589.)

[13] Bertram Lippincott, *Indians, Privateers, and High Society* (Philadelphia, J. B. Lippincott Co.: 1961, p. 51.

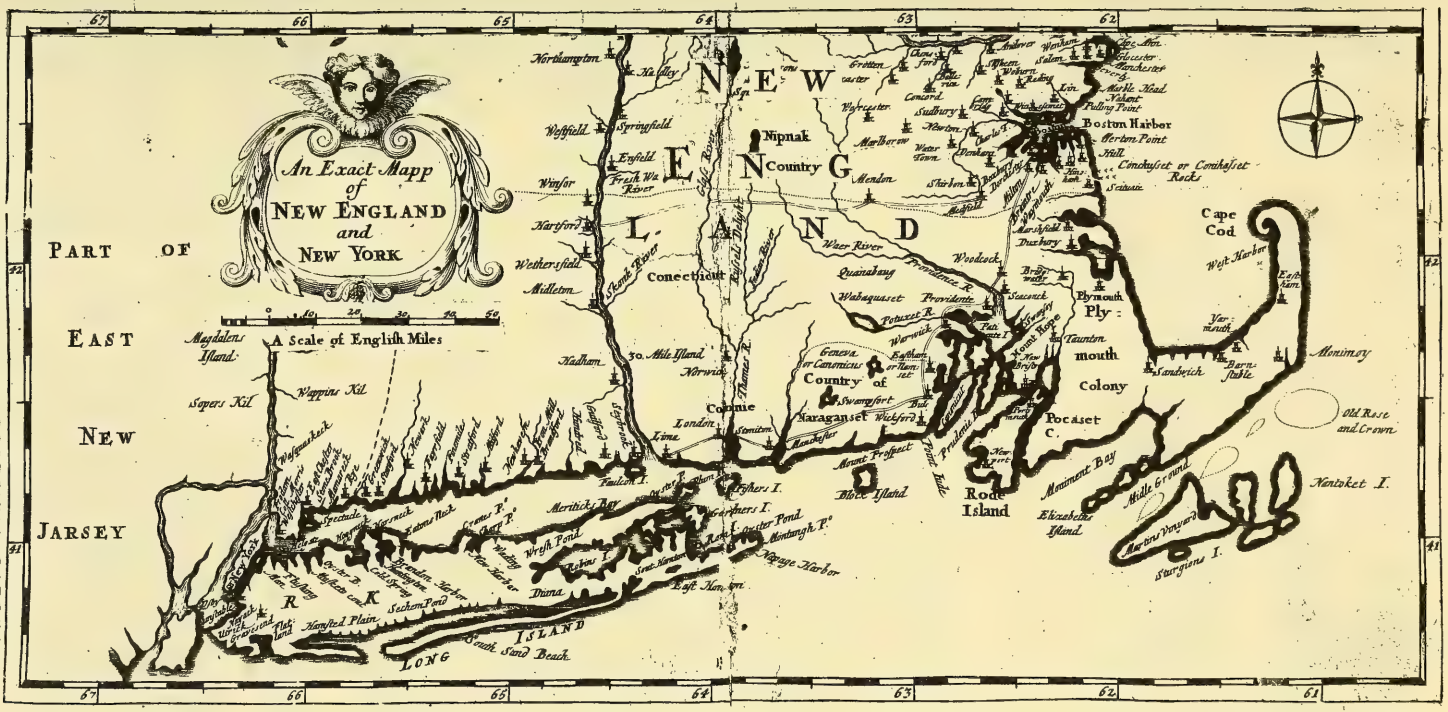
The voyage, at best, would consume 50 to 60 days. Piracy on the high seas was reaching its zenith, and ships from England to the New England coasts traveled in convoys of more than 100 vessels for protection. The convoys would usually sail annually, leaving England in October, often heading for Barbados and then up the American coast, stopping at the Chesapeake Bay, or the New York harbor, or Newport, Rhode Island. Others continued on to Boston. This circuitous route was chosen because of the less stormy waters. Moreover, the convoys could reassemble in Barbados for the final leg through the pirate-infested waters.

During the middle 1600's and well into the 1700's piracy was faced by virtually all merchant ships crossing the Atlantic. The Odells being urged to come to America were well aware of the experiences of others attacked by pirates roaming the seas. Newport, at the south end of Rhode Island, was a center of rum traffic, privateering, and slave trade, but still a haven for religious refugees of all types. Pirates plagued the waters around Block Island, some 20 miles south of Newport, a key area because it was at the eastern entrance to Long Island Sound on which were located Fairfield, New York Harbor and other cities of growing importance.

Piracy of the 1600's grew because, at the conclusion of the wars between European countries during the Renaissance, naval vessels were stripped of their crews and many of the latter joined pirate ships. Sailors would often sign up without any salary, but they would share in the profits of their pirating acts. When a merchant ship was captured, the crew was sometimes offered the opportunity of joining the pirate vessel. Some did so willingly, but others only under compulsion. When pirates were caught and brought to trial, their excuses often were that they were forced to join the pirate crews.

For arriving colonists there was a high risk entrance into Long Island Sound. Convoy vessels had dispersed at this stage of the voyage, and many merchant ships were often helpless at the hands of pirates. Thus, Newport, Rhode Island, was a stopping place for many New York and Connecticut bound families from England. Rhode Island also had the appeal of absolute and complete religious freedom, encouraging even Quakers to live among them.

During the latter part of the 1600's, AUSTIN ODELL (XI 1024) arrived in Rhode Island. Within a few years or so he bought 30 acres in Westerly, a tiny settlement some 25 miles west of Newport, on the Pawcatuck River



1702 MAP OF NEW ENGLAND showing America at the time of the arrival of the Odells in this country. AUSTIN ODELL presumably landed at Newport, "Rode Island" in about 1695.

(the present Connecticut boundary).[14] The town had been settled by whites only 30 or 40 years before AUSTIN ODELL'S arrival.[15]

During the earlier years, before Westerly was settled, the entire colonial area was called Providence Plantations. By 1644 it was officially designated as the Isle of Rhodes, or Rhode Island. Not until 1663 was the entire province chartered, to be known as "Rhode Island and Providence Plantations." By the end of the century commercial activities had gradually supplanted agriculture, and Newport became the center of piracy and smuggling, as well as legitimate commerce.

AUSTIN ODELL'S son, JOSEPH (X 512), was born in Westerly about 1690. JOSEPH'S wife's name was ELIZABETH and they had five children. One of the sons of JOSEPH and ELIZABETH ODELL was AUGUSTINE/AUSTIN ODELL SR. (IX 256) born in Westerly about 1711.[16]

During the late 1600's and throughout almost all of the 1700's there were constant disputes in these areas regarding ownership of land. In 1662 an English charter stated that the Territory of Connecticut extended westward to the "South Seas," meaning as far west as one wished to envision. The eastern boundary, by patent granted in 1664, was placed at the Connecticut River. This gave rise to many conflicting claims, from land owners on virtually all sides of the Territory, including those in Westerly.

---

[14]Westerly "Town Records and Land Evidence -- 1661-1707 and 1707-1717," Book 1, pp. 91 and 101. The English ancestral family of AUSTIN ODELL is not known. The names Austin, Augustine and Augustus are used interchangeably, and one Augustus Odell was located in the parish of St. Giles, Cripplegate, London, christened on 11 Sept. 1660, son of Richard and Elizabeth Odell. No Austin, Augustine or Augustus Odell could be located in the Bedfordshire area of England.

[15]*ibid.* He sold the property in 1720.

[16]This early line of the Odell family has not been fully documented although data on the families are available. Odell genealogists disagree, for example, on whether the Joseph Odell, born in Westerly in 1718, or AUGUSTINE/AUSTIN (IX 256), born about 1711, was the father of AUGUSTINE ODELL (VIII 152) of the subsequent generation. Haacker, in his Vol. 11, p. 2211 of the *Odell Bulletin*, states that Joseph is the father of AUGUSTINE (VIII 152) and that the former was born in Fairfield, Conn. However, there appears to be no evidence that Joseph ever lived in Fairfield. One Jacob Odell, born in Fairfield in 1744, moved to Vermont where he served as a private and captain in the Vermont Troops and Vermont Militia during the Revolutionary War. The parentage of this Jacob Odell has not been resolved, although some genealogists claim he was the son of Joseph Odell, born in 1718 in Westerly. Jacob Odell died in Albany County, N. Y. 10 Nov. 1814. (DAR Patriot Index #183259)

The family of JOSEPH and ELIZABETH ODELL (X 512 and 513) appears in Appendix A, p. 438.

A Commission was sent over from England to settle the controversies and it was agreed that "the line" should "run from a certain point on Long Island Sound, north-northwest to the Massachusetts line." This line, they thought, would be parallel to the Hudson River, and 20 miles east of it. At that time little was known of the country north of the Sound, and the line they had drawn actually struck the Hudson River below West Point, New York, some 90 miles below the Massachusetts line. This was a far cry from their intentions.

Families already in this area of the Connecticut Colony had settled on the lands defined by that boundary of the Sound, and they earnestly desired to retain their civil connection with Connecticut. When this gross survey error was discovered a second commission was sent over from England to resolve the issue.

Those families living in such towns as Greenwich, Stamford, New Canaan, Darien and the surrounding Connecticut countryside -- an area of eight by twelve miles, some 61,440 acres -- were adamant that they should be in Connecticut, so the commission agreed to cede to New York an equivalent number of acres. This agreement took place on 14 May 1731. This newly acquired area in New York was called The Oblong, extending along the east side of Dutchess and the northern portion of Westchester, both original counties in New York.

This strip was divided into two tiers of square 500 acre lots. A Patent was issued and the lots were sold to individuals who "received a guarantee of title from the Colonial Government."[17] This security of the title made the land in The Oblong highly sought after, and many families from Rhode Island and other disputed Territories eagerly bought lots in The Oblong.

AUGUSTINE ODELL SR. saw the advantages of this newly available land in The Oblong in Dutchess County, and he purchased land in Beekman Township. His brother Joseph Odell, who had moved to Fairfield, Connecticut, also bought land in Beekman. The township was named after Colonel Henry Beekman of Kingston, in Ulster County, just to the west of Dutchess County. Colonel Beekman had obtained a grant in 1697 that included most of the land in The Oblong. The Beekman Township was formed on 16 December 1737.[18] AUGUSTINE ODELL SR. had already moved into The Oblong, his first son having been born

---

[17]This discussion of The Oblong drawn from *General History of Dutchess County from 1609 to 1876*, by Philip H. Smith, 1877, pp. 45, 46.

[18]James H. Smith, *History of Dutchess County* (Syracuse, N. Y.: D. Mason & Co., 1882), p. 544.

there in about 1731. Seven more children followed, including AUGUSTINE ODELL JR. (VIII 128), who was born in Beekman Township about 1740.[19]

A cousin of the senior AUGUSTINE ODELL, Joseph Odell, also purchased land in The Oblong, in Beekman. This cousin was the son of Joseph Odell Sr., a brother of AUGUSTINE SR. AUGUSTINE SR. was paying taxes in Beekman Township by 1743 the year in which he was elected to the Dutchess County Board of Supervisors. His term lasted until 1746 when his cousin, Joseph Odell, was elected to the County Board. He remained on the Board until 1755. Then followed David Odell, the oldest son of AUGUSTINE SR., as a Board member for one year. Daniel Odell, a brother of David and second son of AUGUSTINE SR., served for many years, up to the beginning of the Revolutionary War when he became a British Empire Loyalist.

Beekman Township, in the southeast corner of Dutchess County, was a haven for Quakers who eagerly bought land in that area. Known as Quaker Hill, its population grew rapidly. By 1760 many residents of Beekman thought it too crowded, and they began casting about for new land opportunities.

It was during this year of 1760 that a group of Quakers from The Oblong and Fairfield, Connecticut, became interested in some available land on the Hudson River, about 80 miles to the north of Dutchess County. One of the Quakers of The Oblong, Abraham Wing, along with other "Proprietors," applied for a grant from King George III of England for a frontier area around Lake George and Fort Edward, the latter being built during the French and Indian War. The grant materialized on 20 May 1762, and became known as the "Queensbury Grant," named after the King's consort. The area contained 23,000 acres.

Abraham Wing and his family moved from Dutchess County the following year, to absolute wilderness. Others from The Oblong were soon attracted to Queensbury (then in Albany County and later to become Washington County) where the falls at the Hudson River resulted in the erection of many saw and grist mills. By 1770 settlers had built about two dozen log homes. The rest of the territory was largely swamp and forest, cut through by old military roads connecting Fort Edward and Lake George.[20]

---

[19]The children of AUGUSTINE/AUSTIN ODELL SR. (IX 256) -- not fully documented -- are listed in Appendix A, Page 438.

[20]Warren H. Brown, ed., *History of Warren County, N.Y.* (Glens Falls, N. Y.: Glens Falls Post Co., 1963), pp. 225, 227.

AUGUSTINE ODELL JR. was well aware of the departure of many Quakers and others from The Oblong to Queensbury, but the Revolutionary War intervened. Now in his late twenties, AUGUSTINE JR. joined the Vermont Foot Militia, along with Jacob Odell, his cousin, the son of Joseph Odell. Jacob had moved to Fairfield, Connecticut, from Westerly, Rhode Island, during the early 1740's.[21] Jacob Odell, along with others from Fairfield, had been attracted to the Queensbury tract during the 1760's.

The greatest fear of the people of the newly formed Washington County at the outbreak of the Revolutionary War was the likelihood of an invasion by the British from Canada. The startling news of Ethan Allen's capture of Ticonderoga in 1775, just a day's journey to the north, brought consternation to the Quaker-dominated countryside of Washington County, and Queensbury in particular. The Quakers opposed any form of warfare, and gradually a breach was created between the Patriots and non-Patriot Quakers and others such as British Empire Loyalists. Fearful, many of the Quaker families returned to The Oblong.

AUGUSTINE ODELL JR. and Jacob Odell became captains in the New York State Militia. They participated in several engagements in 1781 being called out in "Col. John Abbot's Regiment of Melitia out in a Larm...." Again in 1884 CAPTAIN AUGUSTINE ODLE served in Henry K. Van Rensselaer's Regiment of the New York Militia.[22]

CAPTAIN AUGUSTINE ODELL had married when he was in his early twenties and by the outbreak of the Revolutionary War he and his wife MOLLY had five children, ranging from Jacob Odell, born in 1764 to SAMUEL ODELL (VII 64), born 1770.[23] AUGUSTINE first bought property in Stephentown in Albany County (later Renssalaer County). He owned 100 acres on the east side of the Hudson River.[24] After the War he lived in Queensbury.[25] His son, Jacob

---

[21]The area in Washington County, N. Y. was claimed by Vermont for many years prior to the Revolutionary War and it was not until 1790 that New York State conceded the independence of Vermont.

[22]National Archives and Records, Washington, D.C.

[23]CAPTAIN AUGUSTINE and MOLLY ODELL (VIII 128 and 129) had eleven children. They are listed in Appendix A, Page 000.

[24]Albany Co., N. Y. Deeds, Vol. 8, p. 419.

[25]U. S. Census 1790, Washington Co., N. Y.

Q | Abbot's Regiment. | Vermont Militia.

Agustin Odel

Appears with the rank of Capt. on a

Pay Roll*

of Capt Augustin Odell's Company in Col. John Abbot's Reg't of Melitia out in a Larm from the 1st Day of August to the 4th, A. D. 1781,

(Revolutionary War.)

dated Little Hosick Sept 23, 1781.

the Number of Days out 3

Mildeg Due 10

Number of Rations Due 8

Sum Due for Rations 4

Wag[e] pr. Day 5s 4d

wages for three Days 16

Sum Due for officer & Soldier £1 10s

the Number of miles out 30

Remarks:

* From copy (made in the R. & P. Office, War Dept., in Nov., 1895,) of an original record borrowed from the State of Vermont.—R. & P. 431,636.

Feaster

(5451) Copyist

C | Abbot's Regiment. | Vermont Militia.

Augustin Odel

Appears with the rank of Capt. on a

Pay Roll*

of Capt Augustin Odell's Company in Col. John Abbot's Reg't of Militia which was Cal[d] out in a Larm the 19th of October, 1781, by the State of Vermont,

(Revolutionary War,)

dated Manchester Oct 19, 1781.

Days out 18

Milds out 60

Wages per day £0 5s 4d

Mildage £1 12s 0d

Rations £1 4s 0d

the sum Due £7 0s 0d

Remarks:

* From copy (made in the R. & P. Office, War Dept., in Nov., 1895,) of an original record borrowed from the State of Vermont.—R. & P. 431,636.

Feaster

(5451) Copyist

O | Henry K. Van Rensselaer's Reg't. (Albany County.) | N. Y. Militia.

Augustine Odell

Captain

Appears as shown below on an

Abstract*

of Pay and Rations due to Lieut. Col. Henry K. Van Rensalaer's Regiment of Albany County Militia in the Service of the United States on different Alarms & Excursions.

(Revolutionary War.)

Abstract audited, Oct 23, 1784.

Amo[t] of Capt Augustine Odell's Pay Roll

No 5 £32 - 14 - 4⅘

No 6 13 - 16 - 7

No 7 161 - 6 - 4

No 8 164 - 10 - 5

No 9 124 - 19 - 7

* From copy (made in the R. & P. Office, War Department, in October, 1895,) of an original record borrowed from the State of New York.—R. & P. 454,712.

Number of record: 3

Wilkins

(5472) Copyist.

CHAPTER 5

PAYROLL RECORDS FOR CAPTAIN AUGUSTINE ODELL for his service in the Vermont and New York State Militias. His serving in different state militias is explained by the fact that his home was in an area claimed by both Vermont and New York State. The issue was not resolved until 1790 when New York conceded the independence of Vermont.

Odell, married Margaret Butler on 27 March 1784. Another son, Nathaniel Odell, also married and by the latter part of the century he owned a log house assessed at $20, a barn assessed at $70, and 40 acres of "land on the ridge" valued at 43 pounds. Jacob Odell's log house and land was assessed at $420.[26]

SAMUEL ODELL was married in 1791, near Glens Falls, to ELIZABETH WELLS (VII 65).[27] Their first child, James B. Odell, was born on 1 November 1792. Eleven more children followed, including BENJAMIN ODELL (VI 32), born in 1796.[28]

By 1812 SAMUEL and ELIZABETH ODELL, still in Queensbury, had watched their two older sons, James B. and Morris, marry and set up their own families.[29] The War of 1812 was becoming a reality for the Odells and other families in Washington County, New York.

SAMUEL's son, BENJAMIN, now 16, was a likely candidate for the New York Militia. Two years later, 1814, the war situation as seen from Queensbury involved the British planning an attack from Canada. A division of the United States Army was bivouacked in the general area of Plattsburg, New York, less than 100 miles north of Queensbury. Sir George Provost, the Canadian governor-general, was continually receiving additional troops from England, and on the first of September, 1814, he moved south from Canada and occupied the village of Champlain, just below the Canadian border. There he urged the citizens to join the British cause, promising the protection of his majesty's government.

With superior forces, Sir Provost pushed on toward Plattsburg, 20 miles south. On the morning of 11 September he was poised to launch a general attack, waiting only for the arrival of a British squadron from nearby Lake Champlain. He foresaw an easy capture of both the American army and fleet. The New York communities all along Lake Champlain and Lake George, including Queensbury, were readying for the invasion. The New York militia, on 9 September 1814, at Queensbury, called its members into active service, including the now 18 year

---

[26]Queensbury Assessment Roll No. 17 (undated, but because a son SAMUEL ODELL was listed it can be assumed it appeared before SAMUEL'S marriage which took place about 1791).

[27]The identity of ELIZABETH WELLS parents has not been established, but several Wells names appeared on the Queensbury Assessment Roll No. 17.

[28]Twelve children were born to SAMUEL and ELIZABETH ODELL (VII 64 and 65). Their names appear in Appendix A, Page 441.

[29]U. S. Census of 1810.

old BENJAMIN ODELL.[30]

His regiment, comprised of about 100 men, left Glens Falls, heading for Burlington, Vermont, where arms and ammunition were waiting for them. Muskets were their only arms as they started their march to Burlington. It was on a Saturday morning. They marched to Fort Ann along the old stage coach road after crossing the Hudson River on the toll bridge a few rods below Solomon Parks' saw mill.[31]

"That night they quartered in a barn about a half mile south of Fort Ann. There was a tavern nearby where the men drank pretty freely and the tavern keeper was very clever and offered to let the boys stack their guns in a closet. In the morning he charged them 3¢ apiece for stacking and handling their guns...."[32]

They continued their march to Whitehall, about 12 miles up the stage coach road. Captain Amos Green, in a head count, realized that several of the men did not start the march that morning to Whitehall, and BENJAMIN ODELL was instructed by Captain Green to return to Fort Ann and bring the delinquents to the regiment now enroute to Whitehall.[33] The second night was spent at Whitehall in a barn in a heavy rain. Tents were pitched and rations drawn. The third night found the regiment at Shoreham, Vermont, a few miles northeast of Ticonderoga, New York.

During the march the British and American fleets were engaged in a battle on Lake Champlain, near the Saranac River, just below Plattsburg. The New York militia was in the battle as support on the banks of the Saranac, although BENJAMIN ODELL's regiment was still without arms, not having reached Burlington. Arriving at Burlington, given ammunition and arms, they began drilling in preparation for their entrance into the clash across Lake Champlain. They could hear the noise of the engagement, and all were filled with expectancy as they readied for the battle.

---

[30]BENJAMIN ODELL'S age is based on his application for Bounty Land, under "Act of March 3rd, 1855": National Archives and Records, Washington, D.C.

[31]Louis Fiske Hyde, *History of Glens Falls, N.Y. and Its Settlement* (Privately Printed, 1936), p. 185.

[32]*ibid*, pp. 211, 212.

[33]These specific activities of BENJAMIN ODELL during the war of 1812 were provided by him during a deposition in 1855 at which time he was seeking bounty land for his war effort. He was awarded Land Warrant #63.088 for 100 acres under the Act of 1855.

At one point the British succeeded in moving three companies across the Saranac, but the Americans, stationed in nearby woods, opened fire, destroying one complete company, killing its captain, three lieutenants, with 27 captured. The British were thrown back in confusion, retreating to the river. Dead and wounded were swept away by the strong current.

The nearby naval battle continued, with Commodore Thomas MacDonough's American squadron emerging with a convincing victory. The British loss was 84 men killed, 110 wounded, and 856 prisoners. Sir George Provost, upon being informed of the capture of his fleet, immediately withdrew his entire forces back to Canada. During the retreat he left behind all his sick and wounded, asking that the American General Macomb treat them generously.

Word of the victory reached BENJAMIN ODELL's regiment at Burlington, when a mail stage coach brought them the exciting news. The regiment continued drilling for about ten days, but was finally taken down to the lake, dismissed and "set free to march their way home again without pay, rations or provisions of any kind."

So, late in 1814 the War of 1812 closed its chapter on Queensbury, and its regiment that came so close to battle. Hardly had the menace of those days passed when the people of Warren County were subjected to an ordeal brought on by a freak of nature.[34] During the so-called "cold summer" of 1816, ice formed in many localities during each of the twelve months of the year. Snow fell even during June.

Only the most favored areas raised any crops at all, and isolated sections lacked the barest necessities of life. Of the few whose harvests were successful, some could not aid the unfortunate because they simply needed the food for their own use, while others declined to help "except at such exorbitant rates as to practically shut out the poor."

Prices of food skyrocketed. Rye brought $2.00 a bushel and pork $50 a barrel. Grist mills sought to avoid loss of precious food by abandoning the normal practice of separating the bran from the kernel in the grinding of grain. Bread was so scarce that many families went without it for a month; completely destitute, they haunted the mills, seeking an opportunity to sweep the beams for flour dust.

A Glens Falls newspaper in 1817 reported that

---

[34]Warren County was partitioned from Washington County in 1813.

"neighbors clubbed together, raised all the money they could get, and started Mr. Varney off for Greenwich, in Washington County (some 15 miles to the south) for a load of rye, for which he paid 20 shillings per bushel. Upon his return he was met at Sandy Hill (now Hudson Falls) by Charles Baker who claimed that the people were starving and that he must unload. This he did, and again started for Greenwich for another load. When he returned to Glens Falls he found the people well-nigh famished."[35]

It was during this period of hardship that BENJAMIN ODELL married, settling at Fort Ann in Washington County. Soon came the financial panic of 1819 and the depression that ensued. Commerce slowed, banks closed, and unemployment soared.

One of BENJAMIN's uncles, Benajah Odell, a brother of his father SAMUEL, decided to leave Queensbury, moving his family to the town of Junius in Seneca County, New York, near the site of the future Erie Canal. Construction on the canal had begun in 1816.

Seneca County was located about 150 miles west of Queensbury as the crow flies, but considerably longer via the Hudson River, south to the Mohawk River, and then west along the Mohawk Trail through central New York State. Benajah Odell, his wife Sarah (Wells), and their four daughters and five sons ranging from seven years old to twenty-four, arrived in Seneca County the following year.[36]

This section of New York suddenly experienced boom growth because of the beginning of construction of the Erie Canal. For years there had been agitation favoring the building of a canal from the Hudson River to the Great Lakes. The War of 1812 demonstrated the need for canals as an aid in the movement of men and material. The many hardships and costly delays, caused by the breaking down of wagons and the wearing out of horses, were potent arguments in favor of canals. The debts that the nation had incurred for the mere transportation of war materials would have gone far toward constructing the Erie Canal.[37]

---

[35]*Warren County -- A History and A Guide*, published by the Warren County Board of Supervisors, 1934, p. 104.

[36]The children of Benajah and Sarah Wells Odell are shown in Appendix A, p. 441.

[37]Whiteford's *History* (Albany, N. Y.: Brandow Printing Co., 1906), p. 72.

CANAL SYSTEM MAP showing the original Erie Canal and the Champlain Canal. Fort Ann, Whitehall, Lake Champlain, and Ticonderoga, all important locations in the life of BENJAMIN ODELL, are shown in upper right section of map. Lyons, in Wayne County, is to the left of center of the map. (Reproduced from Buffalo Historical Society Publications, XII - 1908)

The first spadeful of earth was turned at Rome, New York, about 100 miles west of the Hudson River. Workers from throughout New York State and New England, including many Irish, surged into the areas of construction. where picks and shovels and wheelbarrows were the order of the day. Sheer man power of a back breaking nature was the basic requirement. Workers dwelt in fever infested shacks, with disease and accident and drunken brawls commonplace.[38]

Benajah Odell became a foreman of a gang near Junius in (the then) Seneca County. Hearing of the employment possibilities, another uncle of BENJAMIN'S, Nathaniel, moved to the canal construction area, joining his brother at Junius. He arrived before 1820.[39]

The excitement of canal construction was sweeping New York State. In Warren and Washington counties, where SAMUEL ODELL and his son BENJAMIN and many other relatives were living, the building of the nearby Champlain Canal was already becoming a reality. In 1818 construction on this feeder branch of the Erie Canal took place, from Lake Champlain at Whitehall to the Hudson River at Fort Edward, a distance of 20 miles. Fort Ann, where BENJAMIN and his family were living, was directly on the route of the new feeder canal.[40]

But Benajah Odell, out in Seneca County, was writing about the opportunities on the main canal, The Erie, the "Grand Canal." Employment, which had fallen throughout the country during the financial panic of 1819, was returning to the growth areas of canal construction. The

---

[38]Arch Merrill, *The Towpath* (reprinted from the *Democrat and Chronicle*, Rochester, N. Y., 1945), p. 17.

[39]Nathaniel Odell was listed in the 1820 U. S. Census in Junius, Seneca County.

[40]The 1820 U.S. Census shows BENJAMIN ODELL and his wife living in Fort Ann with one male under ten and three females under ten. The exact date of BENJAMIN ODELL'S marriage is not known. His first child, JEREMIAH, was born in 1816, as shown in the 1850 U.S.Census. The name of BENJAMIN ODELL'S wife is assumed to be EMMA, and it is known that she died prior to 1850. Not all of their children in Fort Ann in 1820 reached adulthood. The probable children living in Fort Ann in 1820, based on U.S. Census data, are shown in Appendix A, p. 442.

The above BENJAMIN is not to be confused with another Benjamin Odell in Washington County, born 1803, son of Jacob and Margaret (Butler) Odell. This latter Benjamin remained in Washington (Warren) County until his death in 1876, buried in the Sunnyside Cemetery with many other Odells related to Jacob and Margaret Odell.

Champlain Canal was completed a couple of years before the Erie, and by 1825 a family in Fort Ann, or Queensbury, or Glens Falls, could travel by canal all the way to Wayne County, New York, or even Buffalo -- all on a "towpath," as canals were called.

And this is what SAMUEL ODELL and BENJAMIN decided to do. With two of his brothers already in adjoining Seneca and Wayne counties, SAMUEL opted for greater opportunities that were seemingly assured further west. Lyons, on the Erie Canal in Wayne County, near Benajah's Junius in Seneca County, was one of the important ports for the fast growing canal traffic. This was where SAMUEL and BENJAMIN and their families were headed. They located east of Lyons, in Galen, where the Canal passed through the town, just north of center.[41]

CANAL BOAT PILOT. From Harper's Monthly, December 1873 (Canal Society of New York State)

During the construction of the "Grand Canal" many residents of Wayne County and elsewhere along the route were derisive about the prospects of the Canal succeeding. They simply thought the Canal, even during its construction, was an impossibility. People said it might be possible to make water "run uphill," but canal boats "never." Some even said they would be willing to die, having lived long enough, when boats in a canal float their farms.[42]

But the construction continued and on 25 October 1825 the full 362 miles of the Erie Canal were placed in operation. It was 40 feet wide on the surface and 28 at the bottom. It had cost slightly more than $7 million. During its opening a flotilla of boats left Buffalo for the first eastward travel and was greeted by large and boisterous crowds. Celebrations took place in Lyons as

---

[41]Wayne County Gazaeteer, 1867-68. Wayne County was part of Seneca County until 1823. An Odell Road exists today in the extreme northeast corner of Junius Township, one mile south of the county line between Seneca and Wayne counties.

[42]From "Reminiscenses of George E. Mix": as quoted in *Landmarks of Wayne County, N. Y.*, by George W. Cowles, 1895; p. 69.

CANAL BOAT ACCOMMODATIONS, from a woodcut from Harper's Monthly, September 1857 (Canal Society New York State)

well as other port towns along the Canal. There were processions, congratulatory addresses, firing of cannon and other demonstrations of popular enthusiasm. Even those who earlier had ridiculed the Canal joined in the festivities. It was like an expanded Fourth of July celebration.

In the days that followed the "Grand Canal" was the scene of laden boats and the well-patronized packets, the passenger boats. Wayne County lands, all the way up to the shore of Lake Ontario to the north, quickly appreciated in value. Money in the area became more plentiful as the farmers raised more grain for canal shipping to the east and the cost of freighting was reduced considerably; freight costs from Lyons to Albany fell from $100 a ton to $10.[43] Tolls for each boat were 50¢ per mile; 2¢ per mile for each person over eight years old.[44]

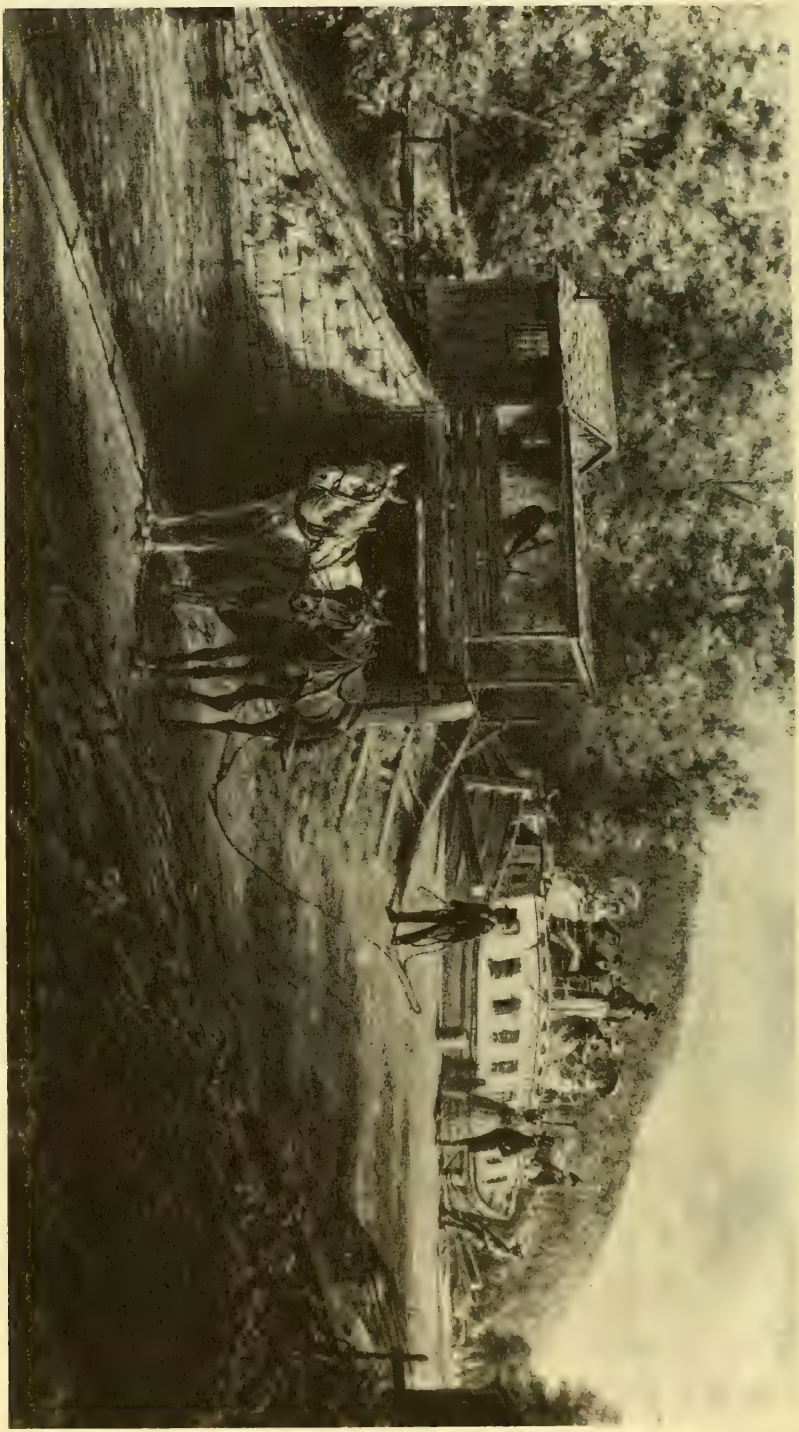
Lyons and nearby Galen took on new life. Warehouses and docks were built to accommodate the active traffic. Boatbuilders sprung into being. More than 10,000 barrels of wheat were shipped from Rochester eastward through Galen and Lyons during the first ten days after the opening of the "Grand Western Canal," as it was known during its early days.

"Canal fever" gripped the entire state of New York. New prosperity was dawning, and its impact was felt in such far away places as Ohio and Michigan. Within ten years the Erie Canal paid revenue into the New York State treasury exceeding the initial outlay for the building of the canal. Real estate in New York increased

---

[43] *ibid*, *Landmarks of Wayne County.*

[44] *Western Pocket Dictionary and Stranger's Guide*, 1834.



"ENTERING THE LOCK," watercolor by E. L. HENRY (1899).
(From the original in Albany Institute of History and Art)

in value by millions of dollars. The success of the Erie Canal exceeded the most enthusiastic expectations of its backers.

Although his father SAMUEL ODELL, had settled permanently in Galen, in Wayne County, BENJAMIN moved on to Buffalo, New York, some 90 miles west on the Erie Canal.[45]

His uncle Benajah Odell in Galen had been talking about pulling out of Wayne County and settling in Ohio where land was known to be cheap and plentiful. BENJAMIN, however, knew that Buffalo was prospering as the terminal point on the Erie Canal, and construction work was said to be paying handsomely. BENJAMIN had learned the masonry trade and he saw opportunities in Buffalo. Moreover, he could transport his entire family to Buffalo at low cost on the Erie Canal: about $6.50.

The trip to Buffalo on a packet boat would take about four days. The speed of the packet boats was restricted to four miles an hour by the Canal Commission. Time would also be consumed at Lockport where an ingenious set of locks enabled the boats to be raised or lowered to the different levels of water on the Canal.

The ODELLS found their packet boat to be more spacious than anticipated. It was nearly 70 feet long. There was a large cabin amidship, with curtained windows throughout. At night, with men being separated from women and children, mattresses were spread on the seats on each side of the cabin and another row above them on cots suspended from the roof. Their three nights on the packet were most uncomfortable, with the lack of ventilation creating a feeling of suffocation. Moreover, the cots or hammocks were narrow, and the snoring of many passengers kept them awake a good part of the night.

---

[45]The precise locations of BENJAMIN ODELL and his family after they left Fort Ann in Washington Co., N. Y., have not been definitely established. SAMUEL ODELL'S residence in Wayne Co., N. Y. is, however, documented by U. S. Census data. It is presumed that BENJAMIN did stop in Wayne Co. for a few years as evidenced by the thin piece of data showing that one Benjamin had an account at a general store in Galen. There is a Benjamin Odell listed in the U. S. Census of 1830 and 1840 of Rochester, Monroe County, N. Y., but the family composition of that Benjamin is totally different from the Fort Ann BENJAMIN ODELL. There is a Benjamin B. Odell in Seneca Falls, Seneca County, N. Y. He sells property in 1831, a likely year for the Fort Ann BENJAMIN to be selling, but the Seneca Falls Benjamin's family composition in the 1830 Federal Census does not coincide with the Fort Ann BENJAMIN. It is possible that the Fort Ann BENJAMIN ODELL traveled to Huron County with his uncle Banajah, but there is not one shred of evidence of his being in Ohio, even though two of his brothers, Hiram and Daniel, did move there.

During the day, though, travel was peaceful and enjoyable as the packet would glide and skim its way behind the tow line attached to the two mules on the towpath, providing the motive power to the packet.

The towpath drivers were given pitifully low wages, but in many instances the drivers were simply seeking a chance to get across the state, walking, and being paid.

The crew on the ODELL packet was tough indeed. While they were pleasant enough to the passengers, they were a rough lot. Upon arriving at Lockport, just a few miles from Buffalo, five locks would take them up to the level of the Niagara escarpment.

Canal boats were backing up, and jockeying for position to enter the locks. Suddenly, the captain in the ODELL boat pushed his packet well ahead of others waiting in line, and the crews of two of those being passed jumped aboard the ODELL boat. Fierce fighting ensued.

The ODELL crew was prepared for the fight, and finally the others were driven off, and the ODELL packet shoved in well ahead of other boats. The captain said later that he had a real "fighting crew," and he hired them with that in mind because it was possible to save a good bit of time by being able to crowd in ahead of other boats.

In Buffalo, the ODELLS rented a place on Main Street, just a short distance from the docks where lake steam boats were now traveling between Buffalo and Detroit. BENJAMIN got a job as a mason.[46] Any notion that he engage in farming as a way of life had at least tentatively been rejected.

That BENJAMIN ODELL was astute in deciding to live in prosperous Buffalo was evidenced by the sheer growth of the town. In 1825, Buffalo's population was 2412 inhabitants; by 1831 it had grown to 10,000. Building was booming, and as a mason BENJAMIN was in demand as were the other 18 masons in the city.

---

[46] The only record of BENJAMIN ODELL living in Buffalo is his being listed in *A Directory for the City of Buffalo -- 1832*, on p. 95. His occupation is given as a "mason and the family lived on "main st." It is unlikely that this Benjamin Odell is the Genessee County, N. Y., Benjamin enroute in 1833 to Cass Co., Mich. The latter was a farmer while in Genessee County, N.Y., and continued as a farmer in Cass County.

LOCKPORT, NEW YORK, ABOUT 1836, showing the famed combines, or double locks, through which BENJAMIN ODELL probably traveled enroute west from Wayne County, New York. The locks were a major engineering achievement of the early 1830's (Library of Congress)

In addition to the masons, crafts included four goldsmiths, three tin and coppersmiths, seven blacksmiths, two cabinet makers, three wheelwrights and carriage makers, two chair makers, a cooper, three manufacturing hatters, two tanners and curriers, five boot and shoe manufacturers, fifty-one carpenters, and two painters.

In the stores, one could find four tailors, a tobacco handler, three butchers, and a brush maker. There was an Episcopalian church, a Presbyterian meeting house, a Methodist chapel, and a Catholic school and church. There were three jewelry shops, three printing establishments, two book stores, and eleven "houses of public entertainment."

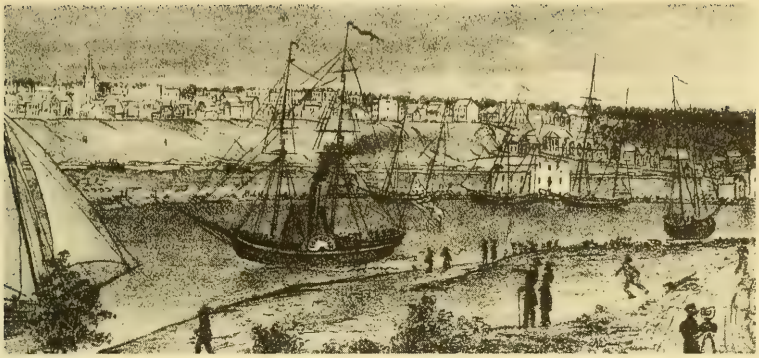
Contributing to Buffalo's growth was the continued success of the Erie Canal. Freight costs were now down to as low as $3 a ton -- from the $100 a ton when shipped over land. At these prices the farmers of western New York could afford to send their grain to the eastern markets of New York where wheat was bringing $1 a bushel instead of the 30¢ from neighboring market areas. Even postal rates dropped -- from 25¢ to 18 1/2¢ -- not to mention the saving in time.[47] Upwards of 10,000 canal boats a year visited the western terminus at Buffalo.

This surge of economic activity was enhanced also by the strength being shown by the steamship companies now plying the Great Lakes from Buffalo to Detroit and even beyond. The first steamship on the Great Lakes, the 145 foot *Walk-in-the-Water*, was launched on 28 May 1818. By the early 1830's the protective Erie Basin had been completed and steamships between Buffalo and Detroit were making regularly scheduled trips. By 1832 the Buffalo & Detroit Steam Boat Line was operating seven boats between the two cities.

The ODELLS, from their house on Main Street, looked out on an "unpaved road, but at night was made visible by a few oil lamps. All the people knew each other, even in the dark .... and congregated on pleasant days in Main street .... cracking jokes and discussing politics .... The daily street costumes of some of the leading citizens, in 1832, was a black or blue dress coat, with costly gilt buttons, a voluminous white cravat, a ruffled shirt accompanied by the 'nice conduct' of a gold-headed cane.

---

[47]Wilma Laux, *The Village of Buffalo 1800-1832* Vol. III (Buffalo: Buffalo and Erie County Historical Society, 1960) pp. 18, 19.



BUFFALO HARBOR IN 1825, just a few years before BENJAMIN ODELL probably arrived. He would have lived not too far from this scene. (Etching in possession of Buffalo and Erie County Historical Society)

"Main street presented a picturesque variety, including elegantly dressed gentlemen and ladies, blanketed and moccasined Indians, and emigrants in the strange costumes of foreign lands...."[48] Men wore high beaver hats. By 1832 ladies were enjoying a larger selection of goods in stores -- muslins, ginghams, silks, velvets, and even imported bonnets.

Families entertained themselves with gatherings that offered both enjoyment and utility. When JEREMIAH, the older son of BENJAMIN ODELL, was about sixteen in 1832 a popular party was the apple or pumpkin paring bee. The young men pared and sliced the fall pickings for the girls to thread on long strings for drying. These apple or pumpkin rings were then strung over the rafters of the house or barn to dry for winter use.

For a corn husking, families would arrive early in the evening, by ox-team or farm wagon, stopping by the house for a brief warming. Then all would adjourn to the barn where a pile of corn was ready for husking. The girls and boys sat in rows facing each other and soon, amid much hilarity, the corn was stripped of its husks. Lucky was the young man who found a red ear, because he could then kiss all the girls in the room.[49]

---

[48]From an address by E. C. Sprague, Esq., delivered at the semi-centennial of the incorporation of Buffalo, 3 July 1882, as quoted in *History of Buffalo*, Vol. 2, edited by H. Perry Smith, 1884; p. 106.

[49]Olga Lindberg, *Family Life in Early Buffalo*, (Buffalo: Buffalo and Erie County Historical Society, 1975), pp. 14, 15.

But all did not go well for the ODELLS. Fear of epidemic gripped all of Buffalo during the summer of 1832 when, unexpectedly, the Asiatic cholera struck the community with telling effectiveness. The dread disease had raged in Asia for several years, spreading over Europe, and then across the Atlantic. During May of 1832 some English emigrant ships brought the disease to Quebec and within a brief period of time it crept down the St. Lawrence River as far as Toronto, and then on to Buffalo by mid-summer.

Buffalo was severely afflicted by this visitation. "... A man might be in apparent good health in the morning and in his grave the same night. Often people were taken away for burial during the night of the day of their death... The death carts would patrol the streets, and when there would seem to be an indication of a death in a house the driver would shout 'Bring out your dead'." Bodies would not be permitted to remain unburied over an hour or two, if it were possible to obtain carriers...[50]

The nature of the disease was not understood, and most treatments were experimental. The public was asked to wear little bags of "gum camphor" hanging around their necks. Several hundred people in the small community of a few thousand had been stricken, and deaths were reported to be between 120 and 200. The scourge raged on until the cool autumn weather brought the reported cases to a near standstill.

But the respite was short lived. Two years later cholera again struck, with a fierceness that frightened all 10,000 inhabitants of Buffalo. The *Buffalo Whig* on Wednesday 20 August 1834 was read by Buffaloians with terror and dismay. In a story headed "The Health of Our City" it said:

> "On Friday last, the 15th inst., our Board of Health first officially recognized Cholera as among us. On that day they reported 37 deaths of this disease up to that time. On Saturday the 16th they reported 12 deaths by cholera, for the preceding 24 hours, on Sunday the 17th, seven deaths, Monday the 18th five deaths, and yesterday we believe no attempt was made to collect the number of cases.
>
> "The disease is marked by the same characteristics which distinguished it in 1832; and is now as it was then, equally destructive of all classes, and of every habit and tempera-

[50] *op cit, History of Buffalo*, p. 268.

ment, if timely relief does not stay its early progress.

"To the family of our late Mayor, the Hon. M. A. Andrews, it has proved a most deadly scourge. Himself, his wife, and one of their children have fallen victims to it, within the last few days... Indeed, the cholera visitations have been much more extensive and general throughout the county this season, than they were in 1832."

It was during this year that BENJAMIN ODELL's wife, EMMA, arose one morning, apparently healthy, and by nightfall she had succumbed to the devastation of the dread disease.[51] BENJAMIN had already lost two daughters while living in eastern and central New York State. He was now left with a motherless home. His remaining daughter, Araminta, was now 16 and she took over many of the family responsibilities. JEREMIAH was 17, and William, the younger son, was 13.

The cholera epidemic had such great impact on BENJAMIN ODELL that he began to give thought to moving away from Buffalo, probably to Michigan. Living so close to the Buffalo docks at the foot of Main Street, he could watch the many families from New England passing through, transferring from the Erie Canal packet boats to steamboats headed for Detroit and beyond. He was fascinated by the daily movements of the steamboats -- now coming into their own as a mode of transportation.

By the mid-1830's many stories about the opportunities waiting for those who would settle in Michigan were circulating in Buffalo. The Odell family, including 19-year-old JEREMIAH, were impressed by what they heard. Already two of BENJAMIN's cousins, Nathaniel and Isaac Odell, sons of Augustine Jr., a brother of SAMUEL, had left Seneca County, N. Y. for Michigan. By 1835 they were in Calhoun County, and in the following year moved to Kalamazoo County.[52] Still another cousin of BENJAMIN, Augustine M. Odell, son of Jacob Odell Sr., a brother of

---

[51]The circumstances and date of BENJAMIN ODELL'S wife's death are not known. It did occur before 1850, but nothing else has been established. Attributing her death to cholera is simply placing her demise in a circumstance that had some likelihood of happening, albeit remote.

[52]Augustine Odell Jr., son of Capt. Augustine Odell, moved to Sherbourne, Chenango Co., N. Y. before 1800 (U. S. Census 1800), returned to Queensbury, N. Y. by 1810 (U. S. Census 1810), and then to Seneca Co., N. Y. (U. S. Census 1820 and 1830).

SAMUEL, had left Queensbury for Livingston County, Michigan, with his wife Lydia, five sons and one daughter.[53]

BENJAMIN had heard of other Odells planning to move to Michigan, but his uncle Benajah, brother of his father SAMUEL, had already decided to pull out of Seneca County in New York State and settle in Huron County, Ohio. Like Michigan, the State of Ohio was being settled by pioneers seeking a new life, with opportunities for greater comfort and material gain. Ohio and Michigan offered this to those hardy people willing to start over again.

In 1834 Benajah Odell, now 69 years of age, gathered his family of four sons, Allen, Benajah Jr., Samuel, and Amasa, and his youngest daughter Caroline, placed his belongings on several wagons and with oxen traveled overland to Huron County, Ohio.[54] They settled in Hartland Township, near Olena. Benajah's oldest son, David, remained in Seneca County, N. Y. where he had married in 1816.

In addition to his immediate family, several of Benajah's nephews soon joined him in Ohio. Two of these were Hiram and Daniel Odell, sons of SAMUEL and brothers of BENJAMIN. Another brother of BENJAMIN, Samuel Jr., later settled in Wood County, Ohio.[55]

But JEREMIAH ODELL, the older son of BENJAMIN, was a restless young man. He was imbued with Michigan Fever more than was his father. Michigan, not yet admitted to

---

[53]Augustine M. Odell was born in Queensbury, N. Y. in 1799, son of Jacob Sr. and Margaret (Butler) Odell. They remained in Queensbury until their departure for Michigan, settling in Iosco Township, Livingston County. They had six children by the time they journeyed to Michigan. Three more children were born in Michigan. He died in 1880.

[54]It is presumed that Benajah's three oldest daughters did not make the trip to Huron Co., Ohio: Mary Odell Hopkins, Sarah Odell, and Olive Odell Dolbee. The U. S. Census of 1820 shows Mary and Olive no longer at home. Little is known about Sarah.

[55]Benajah Odell remained in Huron Co., Ohio, until his death in 1854. His wife, Sarah Wells Odell died in Huron Co. She is thought to be a sister of ELIZABETH WELLS ODELL, wife of SAMUEL ODELL.

Daniel Odell, b. 1818, and brother of BENJAMIN ODELL, died in Huron County on 16 March 1891. He is said to have gone to Eaton Rapids, Michigan, but if so he returned to Huron County where he is buried.

Two of Banajah Odell's sons, Allen and Benajah Wells, left Huron County in 1850, settling in Trowbridge Township, Allegan Co., Mich.; another son, Amasa, left Huron County in 1854, settling also in Allegan County. He died in VanBuren County in 1874.

the Union, lagged behind Ohio and Indiana in its development. Its geography was a handicap. Peninsulas surrounded by large bodies of water did not invite cross-country travel to the state's eastern borders. Lake Erie was a barrier to migration from the East. Moreover, Michigan lay too far north of the main westward artery, the Ohio River. The lack of roads in the early 1800's forced travelers to use waterways, and the Ohio River was the best mid-American route. Because Kentuckians and Virginians had ready access to that river -- more than did New Yorkers and New Englanders, more Southerners than Yankees were occupying the Midwest.[56]

But with the opening of the Erie Canal, and then the daily steamboats on Lake Erie between Buffalo and Detroit, New Yorkers had a form of transportation that led to Michigan -- and at low cost. By 1835 New Yorkers were virtually pouring into Michigan, and in that year some three-fourths of the Territory's population was from either New York State or New England. Michigan's population had grown from 8000 in 1820 to about 95,000 in 1835. The entry to Michigan was Detroit, an incorporated city since 1824 and the capital of the Michigan Territory.[57]

JEREMIAH ODELL found the fascination of Detroit too much to resist. The year was 1836 when he announced to his family that he was heading for Detroit. BENJAMIN, Araminta and William were not yet ready to make the drastic move, and they stayed behind. JEREMIAH talked to his friends at the Buffalo Harbor, and he learned that owners of steamers running between Buffalo and Detroit were eager to obtain passengers. Nearly 90 boats a month were stopping at Detroit wharves, from Buffalo and intermediate ports on Lake Erie. Boats were aggressively competing for business and often were carrying passengers for almost nothing, hoping to squeeze out competition.

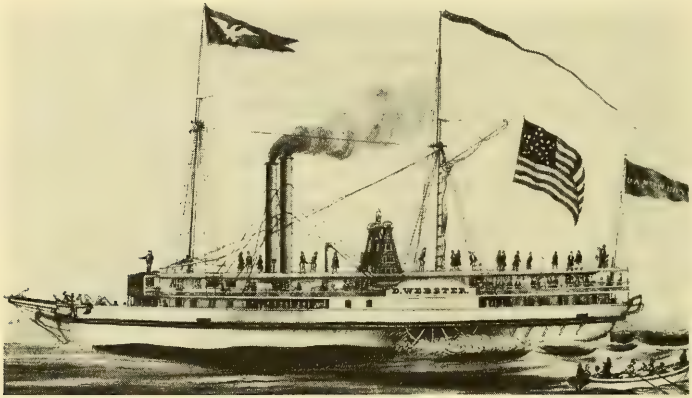
JEREMIAH ODELL arranged passage on the *Daniel Webster*, one of the newer steamboats on Lake Erie.[58] It had been christened only three years earlier in June of

---

[56]A. A. Hagman et al, ed., Oakland County (Mich.) Book of History, 1970, p. 24.

[57]Michigan was admitted to the Union in 1837, becoming the 26th state.

[58]"Museum Notes," The Buffalo Historical Society, Vol. 3, No. 3, April 1947, pp. 6, 7. The specific steamer taken by JEREMIAH ODELL, if in fact he did take a steamer to Detroit, is not known.



THE DANIEL WEBSTER steamboat, a type of boat JEREMIAH ODELL could have taken from Buffalo, N. Y. to Detroit in 1836. The vessel was built in 1833 and weighed 358 tons. (From "Museum Notes," The Buffalo Historical Society.)

1833 by the distinguished statesman after whom the steamer was named. It was a vessel of 358 tons. The fare for cabin passage between Buffalo and Detroit was $6, but JEREMIAH obtained a much better price, agreeing to travel in steerage where the fares were well under the cabin fares for "gentlemen and ladies." The *Daniel Webster* also provided space for horses and vehicles for those who were planning to press on beyond Detroit, either into Michigan's interior or to northern Illinois and Chicago, a town that had been incorporated three years earlier in 1833.

The surge of steamer traffic into Detroit during 1836 far exceeded any prior year. In earlier years, since the opening of the Erie Canal, many immigrants hurried across Michigan to settle in Indiana, northern Illinois and Wisconsin. Michigan was long considered to be an area having a pestilent climate in which a person from the settled districts of the East would soon die of fever caused by malarial type diseases.

Travelers were known to hold their noses during the earlier days when crossing Michigan, virtually "running" across the state to avoid the "fever." This unfavorable publicity about Michigan was propounded by the American Fur Company, in order to discourage settlement which in turn would cause the fur business to suffer as the state would be turned into farms.

Michigan's image among possible immigrants had been damaged even earlier when, after the close of the War of 1812, President James Madison in 1816 sent a message to

DETROIT HARBOR IN 1837, the year after JEREMIAH ODELL arrived in the bustling city. He was 20 years old, and alone, when he arrived. His father BENJAMIN and his brother and sister did not move to Detroit until the early 1840's. [From the Burton Historical Collection]

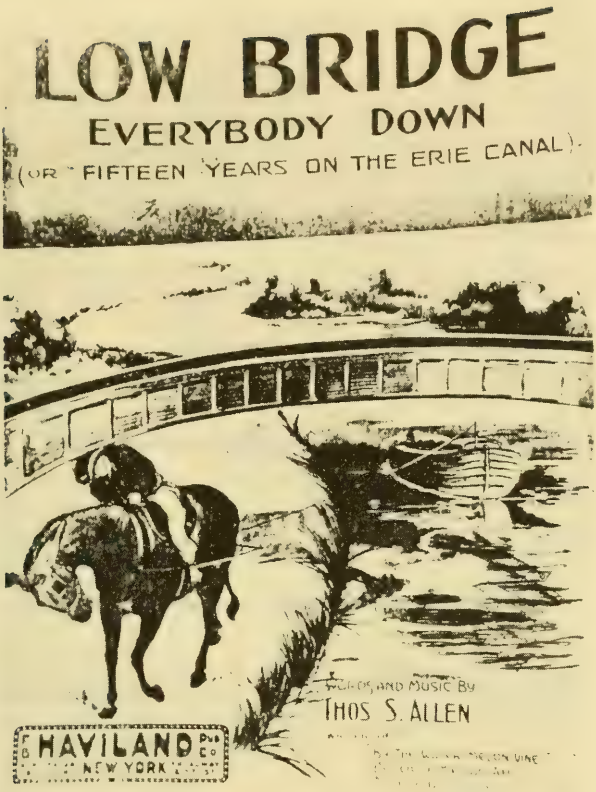
the U. S. Congress relating to Military Bounty Lands in the then Michigan Territory. The President stated that Michigan Territory was "so covered with swamps and lakes or otherwise unfit for cultivation, that a very inconsiderable proportion can be applied to the intended (bounty land) grants. I recommend, therefore, that other lands be designated by Congress for the purpose of supplying the (bounty land) deficiency."

But the immigrants were discovering that the stories about Michigan were untrue. There were swamps and lakes, and wild beasts and inpenetrable forests, but by 1836 frontier Detroit was a thriving town of some 4500 inhabitants, on five and a quarter square miles of land on the Detroit River just below Lake St. Clair.

When JEREMIAH ODELL walked down the gangplank onto the wharf he found himself in a town running wild with land speculation, booming construction and public facilities falling far short of being capable of handling the constant stream of settlers pouring into the town, some to stay, some to move on.

For the most part Detroit was comprised of young men, some single, many with their families. All had made the decision to face the hardships of an unknown life ahead. The immediate task was that of making a living, and JEREMIAH ODELL, barely 20 years old, with minimum education, had little to offer. He was alone, but he harbored the thought that his father BENJAMIN, and Araminta and William might someday follow him to Detroit.

Within a couple of months after his arrival in Detroit, young JEREMIAH met ELIZABETH LEONORA MICHELL (V 17) who was visiting Detroit from New York. Miss MICHELL, accompanied by her governess, was in Detroit to see her brother Lewis Michell. For some reason these two young people, from considerably different family backgrounds, found themselves attracted to each other.



"LOW BRIDGE - EVERYBODY DOWN" was a popular song during the early days of the Erie Canal.

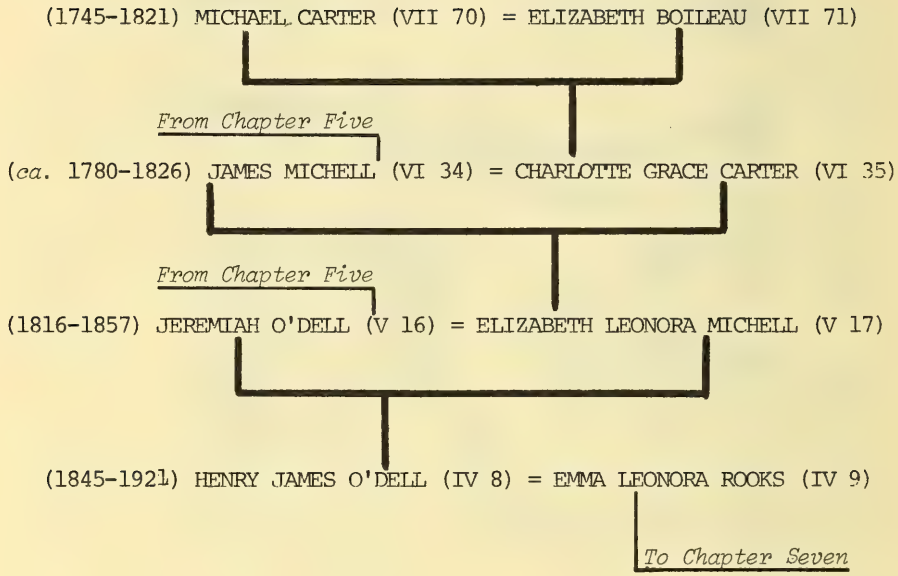
We got a mule; her name is Sal,
Fifteen years on the Erie Canal.
She's a good ole worker,
and a good ole pal.
Fifteen years on the Erie Canal.
We hauled some barges in our day
Filled with lumber, coal and hay.
And we know every inch of the way
From Albany to Buffalo.

We better get along on our way
ole gal,
Fifteen years on the Erie Canal.
'Cause ya bet your life I'd
never part with Sal,
Fifteen years on the Erie Canal.
Git up there Mule, here comes
a lock;
We'll make Rome 'bout six o'clock
Then one more trip and back
we'll go,
Right back home to Buffalo.

CHORUS:

Low bridge, everybody down!
Low bridge, for we're coming to a town!
And you'll always know yer neighbor,
You'll always know your pal,
if you've ever navigated on the Erie Canal.

6


(1745-1821) MICHAEL CARTER (VII 70) = ELIZABETH BOILEAU (VII 71)
From Chapter Five
(ca. 1780-1826) JAMES MICHELL (VI 34) = CHARLOTTE GRACE CARTER (VI 35)
From Chapter Five
(1816-1857) JEREMIAH O'DELL (V 16) = ELIZABETH LEONORA MICHELL (V 17)
(1845-1921) HENRY JAMES O'DELL (IV 8) = EMMA LEONORA ROOKS (IV 9)
To Chapter Seven

CHAPTER SIX — Carter, Michell, O'Dell

As a young lieutenant in Ireland's 85th Regiment of Light Infantry, JAMES MICHELL (VI 34) of Athy, Ireland, found life during the early 1800 's at Inch House in County Kildare most enjoyable indeed. Inch House, three miles northeast of Athy, in the area of Dublin, was owned by MICHAEL CARTER (VII 70), who had married ELIZABETH BOILEAU (VII 71) in 1775.[1]

JAMES MICHELL'S interest in Inch centered largely around one of the Carter daughters, CHARLOTTE GRACE CARTER (VI 35). The Carter family had considerable wealth. In addition to Inch House, their property contained the ruins of the famous Inch Castle, known to be several hundred years old. [2] During the 1500 's the lands and castle of Inch were owned by Sir Gerald FitzGerald, a son of the Earl of Kildare. But by 1535 the lands and castle were unoccupied and the building fell into complete disrepair. Legal encounters between the FitzGeralds and others as late as the 1600 's did not improve the properties and subsequent owners did not make any substantial effort to reconstruct the deteriorated ruins of the celebrated castle.[3]

---

[1]ELIZABETH BOILEAU was presented at Court when William IV, king of Great Britain and Ireland from 1830 to 1837 (third son of George III and Queen Charlotte), visited Ireland. ELIZABETH'S family is said to have come from France.

[2]The Irish word "Inch" means "a river meadow," and in this case most appropriate. The Inch River flows nearby, rises above Glassealy, and empties into the River Barrow at Athy.

[3]The castle was earlier called "Inch-Coventry ," after its former possessors. There is a manuscript volume at Carton entitled "Leinster Papers" (vol. ii, p.35a) a copy of a feoffment (the granting of land) made on 26 March 1505 which states:

> Be it known to all men by these presents that I, William Coventry, son of Robert Coventry, of Kilbeg, Gent., for a certain sum of money paid to me by Sir Gerald FitzGerald, Kt., son of Gerald (8th) Earl of Kildare, do give, grant, and by this my present deed have confirmed to John Eustace, son of Edward Eustace, of Castlemartin, Gent., my moyety of all the messuages, lands and tenements with their appurtances, which I have in Inchecoventry and Ballyquillan (now Ballycullane), with the whole Castle of Inchecoventry aforesaid in the County of Kildare; to have and to hold until the said John and his heirs and assigns forever, to the use of the said Gerald and his heirs forever.

Many were the stories handed down to the Carter children about Inch Castle, even though the structure was already in ruins during the early 1800's when CHARLOTTE GRACE CARTER and JAMES MICHELL became interested in each other.[4] Tradition had it that Oonah More, the daughter of an occupant of Inch Castle during its prime, fell in love with one Ulick. But Ulick's love was shared with others, but Oonah cared not. After a rather unsettling period, both died and hawthorne trees on the Inch estate emerged from their ashes. These hawthorne trees have lived over the several hundred years since Oonah and Ulick, but the area of death always had a haunted feeling, as reflected in:

OONAH MORE: A LEGEND OF INCH CASTLE[5]

Near storied Inch's Castle, where Ardscull's green Moat ascends,
And his brawny arm the giant oak with grace and grandeur bends,

---

3 cont'd.
After the Silken Thomas' Rebellion (1534-5) the lands and castle of Inch-coventry were unoccupied and the building fell into complete disrepair. They were forfeited to the Crown which, in 1554, restored Gerald, the 11th Earl, to all his father's lands and "honours." A series of legal encounters involving the Eustaces and FitzGeralds brought the property into the 1660's. During that century Inch was owned by the families of Sir William Talbot, Bart. of Carton, Sir Richard Graham (Graeme), Knt. of Rahinderry, and Sir William Barrowes, Bart. of Grangemellon and Gilltown. During the 1700's two tenants of Inch are listed:Benjamin Bennett family until 1736, and a family by the name of Whelan. The Deegans followed the Whelans.

Today, the Inch Castle remains are very shaky. Old openings were replaced by windows many years ago. Doorways have injudiciously been made in the walls. These "improvements" have now decayed, causing considerable weakening of the remaining structure. A large portion of the northeast wall fell during the winter of 1896,carrying with it the original entrance, the interior "murder hole," and part of the staircase. A stone-vaulted ceiling covered the first story. A "bawn" was attached to the building, and the jamb of its arched gateway projects a few inches from the northwest wall. In this angle the upper stories each had a small chamber built into the thickness of the wall. The castle ruins remain untouched, and nearby the present occupants of Inch live in Inch House, farming the surrounding acres. (From "Ballads and Poems of the County Kildare.)

[4]The children and other descendants of MICHAEL and ELIZABETH (BOILEAU) CARTER are listed in Appendix A, p. 444.

[5]The ballad was written by the Rev. Patrick Fitzsymons of nearby Carlow College, 1865, and appeared in "Ballads and Poems of the County Kildare," p. 102.

In the old home of her father, famed for glorious deeds
of yore,
Caressed by loving brothers twain, in peace dwelt Oonah
More.

Like music on the water was her soft and silvery voice,
And her soothing words,where sorrow preyed, made mourn-
ers' hearts rejoice.
The light of Oonah's beauty rivalled tinges which have
birth
In the blush of summer sunset, when the red sky kisses
earth.

O'Kelly 's son fair Ulick, the lord of Inch's hold,
Was a chief of noble stature, rich in serfs and lands
and gold.
He loved the gentle Oonah, vowed he'd love till life
was o'er;
He won her hand, he won her heart -- unhappy Oonah
More.

Full many a hopeful promise to be maiden fair he gave,
He swore to be her guardian from that moment to the
grave;
But his love though warm was fleeting as an echo from
the shore,
Not many a sun had risen ere he slighted Oonah More.

False Ulick sought another, and another heart was won,
Another heart was broken -- one more work of ruin done.
Oonah's brothers wroth with passion, by their sister's
honour swore,
Before high Heaven, they'd right the wrong he'd done
to Oonah More.

There's joy in Inch's Castle, and each window gleams
with light,
Notes of song and strains of music wake up echoes of
the night;
And the cup enwreathed with flowers passes swift from
hand to hand
Little reek those lordly rioters how dark plague walks
the land.

And the mazy dance is trodden by the ladies of Kildare,
Whose hearts may yet feel sorrow 's pangs, for Ulick
false is there.
His father 's son has now no thought for gentle Oonah
More;
Though her brothers' skeans may drink no blood, there's
vengeance still in store.

For Oonah life lost happiness and day by day she
strayed

To the holy walls of White Church, where the saintly maidens prayed.
In silent anguish pining, she asked that Heaven above,
Forgetting Ulick's baseness, might assoil his guilty love.

And still the plague raged fiercely, still it wrought the work of death,
It poisoned Heaven 's freshest breeze, like noisome leper's breath;
And homesteads were made desolate, and mothers childless then,
The stricken victims found no home save far from the haunts of men.

Careering still in banquet hall, the gayest mid the throng,
False Ulick 's life was gliding like a sunlit stream along
But whilst the harper poured his strains to knight and lady fair,
Whilst bard was singing sweetest, plague unseen was brooding there.

Beneath the phantom's noiseless power false Ulick sank that night,
So changed that those who shared his feast fled sickening at the sight.
They loathe his touch those courtly dames who trod the dance erstwhile;
They have gone the crouching sycophants who basked in Ulick's smile.

And sister fled from sister, and from children mothers fled;
The living feared with awful fear contagion from the dead.
But one heart still was loving, aye, more feeling than before,
For love and feeling shared the heart of gentle Oonah More.

His brain with fever burning, on a couch the victim lay,
'Neath a plague-shed on the lonely moor, from his loved home far away.
And his iron heart was softened, and he thought of the oath he swore,
Yet feared not death if she'd forgive him -- injured Oonah More.

Fair Oonah heard of Ulick's fate, how sweet repentance came;
They told her how with falling tears he murmered Oonah's name.

She sped across the dreary moor, while fervently she prayed,
And once more side by side they were--betrayer and betrayed.

Three nights she vigiled whilst the glow was fading from his cheek;
More soothing words than Oonah 's were scarce angel tongues might speak.
But all was vain, his hour was come, his eyes were closed in death;
And tended by that faithful one, he signed his parting breath.

That selfsame hour died Oonah by the plague - shed's cheerless door;
The scald-crow and the raven o 'er the lifeless bodies soar.
But yet they dare not enter, for , since Oonah passed away,
A snow-white bird is resting there, and guards the door alway.

Next morn they burned the plague - shed, where the two lay side by side,
False Ulick and fair Oonah, like a bridegroom and his bride;
And from the ashes of their bones, which mingled with the clay,
Sprung seven fair trees of hawthorn, which are living there to-day.

In summer - time when their blossoms bright refreshing fragrance shed,
In winter when their branches droop like plumes o' er the early dead,
A bird of snow-white plumage oft is seen on that white-horn knoll:
"'Tis Oonah More," the peasants say, "the Lord have mercy on her soul."

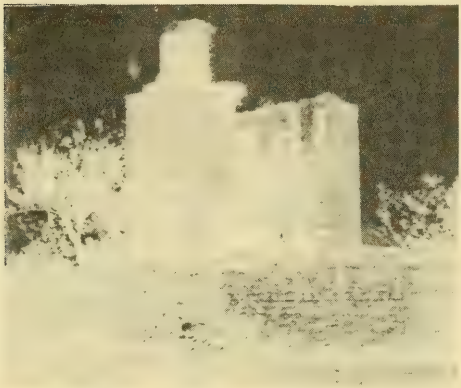
So real was Oonah More to the Carter family as well as their neighbors that at wakes of deceased persons friends and family would sing this ballad:

O hear me, soggarths of Kilbawn,
O listen to my sorrows;
The clouds hang heavy o'er the home
Of Oonah's honest brothers.
And heavier still the clouds now lower
On Ulick's father's land,
For there in sadness lies a flower
Plucked by Ulick's hand.

* * *

INCH HOUSE, ATHY, KILDARE COUNTY, IRELAND, home of the MICHAEL CARTER family during the latter part of the sixteenth and early seventeenth centuries. It was in this house that ELIZABETH MICHELL was born in 1816. The ruins of Inch Castle remain on the Inch House land, a few hundred feet from the farm structure.

On moonlight nights the shadow flits
  Across the furry moor,
And at the moat in silence sits
  Until the midnight hour.
The bittern's only moan is heard
  Along the boggy glade,
But the shadow still is feared,
  As Oonah's restless shade.[6]



RUINS OF INCH CASTLE, as they appeared in 1906 when this photograph was taken. Old records document the existence of the castle during the early 1500's.

The Carters could point to the existence of a small moat to the southeast of the castle ruins. The moat, they would tell their friends, was thrown over the spot where Oonah and Ulick were consumed in the plague-shed. It is here that the hawthornes grew.

JAMES MICHELL and CHARLOTTE CARTER were married on 3 October 1810 at Carter Hill, Inch, County Kildare, by the Rev. Arthur Weldon, the rector of Castledon. The young couple lived at Inch House, but soon JAMES acquired additional properties from his family of Abraham and Humphrey Michell. These included six acres of the Burrin Land near Carlow, houses on Aungier street and Bow-lane in Dublin, property on Charles Street in Dublin as well as houses and land of White Bog. [7] But the

---

[6]*Dublin Penny Journal*, vol. iii, p. 340, April 1835. Years later a reward of one pound was offered in a local paper having a wide circulation in the district, seeking the complete version of the ballad. The effort failed to produce either the balance of the ballad or the author.

[7]These properties were listed in the will of JAMES MICHELL dated 15 May 1822.

wealth could not overcome the couple's grief when their first child, Mansergh, born in 1811, died after living only two days. Their second son, born a year later, also died in infancy. Ten children followed. ELIZABETH LEONORA MICHELL (V 17) was born on 1 October 1816. Her older sister, Charlotte, born a year earlier, died at the age of 13.[8]

So it was ELIZABETH LEONORA who grew up with seven brothers. Her only sister, younger by ten years, to reach adulthood was Hannah, born in 1826. The brothers watched over ELIZABETH, and when a love affair of hers disappointed the family it was decided to take her to the United States, along with brothers Daniel, now 20, and Lewis, 14. A family governess accompanied ELIZABETH, and they arrived in New York in 1834 when she was 18. Lewis Michell went to Canada, and two years later moved to Detroit where he sailed on the Great Lakes.

Disappointed in love, ELIZABETH MICHELL vowed she would "marry the next man I meet."[9] The opportunity presented itself when she and her governess were visiting her brother Lewis in Detroit during the spring of 1836. The man was JEREMIAH ODELL.

* * * *

JEREMIAH ODELL and ELIZABETH MICHELL were married on the 11th day of July in 1836 by J.W.Strong, a Justice of the Peace in Wayne County.[10] JEREMIAH "produced a license from George Byrd, Esq., Clerk of the City of Detroit, agreeable to the statutes of the Territory of Michigan in such cases made and provided...."

The Michell family was taken by complete surprise. ELIZABETH had been repressed by her brothers, and the marriage to JEREMIAH ODELL was not according to their plan. However, the marriage had taken place, and ELIZABETH soon learned that the Odell family was not in any great financial position to send the newlyweds on their way.

However, Daniel Michell, now in Boston, suggested to his brother Lewis in Windsor and Detroit that JEREMIAH AND ELIZABETH work the farm that Daniel had pur-

---

[8]The children of JAMES and GRACE MICHELL are listed in Appendix A, pp. 444 and 445.

[9]Family legend, as reported by Emma O'Dell, ELIZABETH MICHELL 'S granddaughter.

[10]John W. Strong became a director of the Detroit Board of Trade in 1856.

Territory of Michigan } I hereby Certify that I this day Solomized
County of Wayne } the rites of Marriage between Jeremiah
Odell and Elizabeth Mitchell, he having
produced a license from George Byrd Esq Clerk of
the City of Detroit, agreeable to the Statutes of the
Territory of Michigan in such Case made and
provided, Given under my hand at the City of Detroit
the 11th day of July 1836

COPY OF ACTUAL RECORDING OF MARRIAGE OF JEREMIAH ODELL AND ELIZABETH MITCHELL *in Volume 6 of "Wayne County (Michigan) Marriages." The ceremony was performed by a justice of the peace. ELIZABETH'S maiden name is misspelled, the inclusion of a "t" making it "Mitchell."*

£ 16. 0. 0. Cy. Sandwich 16th August 1834

Two years after date —

I promise to pay the Canada Company, or order, at their Office, in York, the sum of Sixteen pounds —— Currency, with Interest, value received.

No. ——— Dan'l P. Michell

Lot No 12 .. 5 Con. for Maidstone

Received from Lewis Michell

Pound 17 shilling 5 7 pence.

in full for Taxes for 1843.

John Callaghan Collector for Maidstone

NOTE AND TAX RECEIPT BELONGING TO Daniel P. Michell and his brother Lewis Michell on their property near Maidstone, Essex County, Upper Canada (now Ontario). The land is located less than ten miles from Detroit where ELIZABETH MICHELL and JEREMIAH ODELL were married.

chased from the Canada Company only two years earlier, on 8 Oct. 1834, shortly after his arrival in North America.[11] Daniel had paid 16 pounds for 200 acres, "Lot 12 in the Fifth Concession, West side of Belle River" near Maidstone, Essex County, (Ontario) outside of Windsor.[12] The land was heavily timbered and manpower was needed. ELIZABETH, certainly, was entering into a new life-style with which she was none too familiar.

The U.S. Panic of 1837 had profound affect on the productivity of farm products in Essex County, Ontario, closely tied to the economy of the United States. Michigan had become a state in 1837,but the land speculators plus the Panic of 1837 caused financial and agricultural problems for the entire area, including nearby Essex County in Canada West -- later called Ontario.

The first child born to JEREMIAH AND ELIZABETH ODELL arrived in 1838, named Emma.[13] This only complicated their lives, and the farming operation seemed faced with insurmountable odds. Daniel Michell sent money to ELIZABETH, but such financial gestures were temporary and did not solve the basic problems of the farm's lack of productivity. After several years of effort, Lewis Michell told the Odells that he and Daniel were planning to abandon payments on the farmland.

Lewis urged them to move to Michigan where land was still cheap. Moreover, he thought the opportunities were greater in Michigan than in remote Canada West. JEREMIAH'S uncle, Hiram, brother of his father BENJAMIN, was now living in Oakland County, Michigan, having moved there from Huron County, Ohio, where Benajah, another uncle and brother of BENJAMIN, and many of his family were now well settled. Hiram was ten years older than JEREMIAH. He had engaged in land sales in Huron County and was continuing the same activities in Oakland County.

JEREMIAH, ELIZABETH and Emma left Canada West early in 1841.[14] They ferried across the Detroit River to De-

---

[11]Canada Company,Register of Lands:Bathurst Home Western Districts, Vol. 2.

[12]Abstracts (A) of Deeds: Maidstone, Essex County, Ont.

[13]The birth of Emma in Canada West in 1838 is documentedby the 1850 U.S. Census report on JEREMIAH ODELL, in Oakland County, Michigan. She was probably named after JEREMIAH'S mother.

[14]This is the probable date inasmuch as JEREMIAH ODELL is not listed in the U.S. Census of 1840 in Michigan. Moreover, the Census of 1850 shows JEREMIAH ODELL'S children, except for Emma, all being born in Michigan, beginning with Benjamin in 1841.

troit where the family decided to reside. JEREMIAH obtained laboring jobs on construction projects. A son Benjamin was born in 1841, named after JEREMIAH'S father. During July of that year JEREMIAH lost his watch while visiting the home of William B. Smith in nearby Hamtramck.[15] Two years later JEREMIAH 'S and ELIZABETH'S five year old Emma, on 23 April 1843, was "accepted by probation" into the First M.E. Church located at Woodward and Congress Street where James Harrison was the pastor.[16]

But the family made little economic progress. After several years in Detroit JEREMIAH could point only to minimum achievement when measured in terms of material gain. Hiram Odell, his cousin in Oakland County just to the north of Detroit, lived in Royal Oak, and he continued to urge JEREMIAH and his family to leave urban Detroit, now a metropolis of some 15,000 people.

Hiram was not alone in feeling that Michigan offered great opportunities. By the early 1840's a good number of Odells had purchased land in Michigan. In nearby Macomb County was living Jonas A. Odell, JEREMIAH'S second cousin and great grandson of the elder AUGUSTINE ODELL of Dutchess County, N.Y. Jonas' father had died in Genessee County, N.Y. in 1804, several months before Jonas A. was born. Jonas' family moved to Macomb County in 1839.[17]

---

[15] *Detroit Daily Advertiser*, 23 July 1841. JEREMIAH is presumed to be the J.G. Odell mentioned in the newspaper.

[16] From the original documents of the church, in the rare manuscripts section of the Burton Historical Collection of the Detroit Public Library.

[17] One school of thought suggests that BENJAMIN ODELL, father of JEREMIAH, was a brother of this Jonas A. Odell. A family Bible of this Jonas Odell branch lists a Benjamin Odell(Odle) born on 4 July 1796, the year BENJAMIN later states was his birth year when he was applying for Bounty Land for his services in the War of 1812. This school of thought argues that when BENJAMIN'S father, Jonas Odell (Odle) died in 1804, leaving a large number of small children, BENJAMIN was sent to the family of SAMUEL ODELL in Washington County, N.Y., when he was only eight years old. Thus, he was often listed as a son of SAMUEL. Refuting this argument is the written statement by EMMA ROOKS ODELL, wife of HENRY JAMES ODELL, stating that JEREMIAH'S father was BENJAMIN who had four brothers, including Hiram Odell, which coincides with U. S. Census data of 1820 for SAMUEL ODELL, BENJAMIN'S father.

Phoebe Odell, a sister of Jonas A. Odell of Macomb County, Michigan, married Samuel Merrill, and they became a part of the Mormon movement, living at one time in the famous Nauvoo, Illinois,

Hiram owned two lots in block 39 in the village of Royal Oak, 15 miles northwest of where JEREMIAH and ELIZABETH were living in Detroit. JEREMIAH was impressed by what Hiram was telling him. Oakland County could now be reached by railroad. The Detroit and Pontiac had opened its line between Detroit and Royal Oak in 1838, and had extended it to Birmingham by 1841, and to Pontiac in 1844.[18] During the first year of its operation the wooden cars were pulled by horses, but when the line was completed to Birmingham, steam engines replaced the horses. With the added weight of the steam engine, plus the wooden cars, the solid oak rails would often splinter. Iron straps were ultimately placed over the wooden rails, but these straps frequently loosened and, curling

AN 1843 MIXED TRAIN on the Detroit & Pontiac Railway. It was this line that ran through a corner of JEREMIAH ODELL'S property in Royal Oak Township.

up at the ends, would erupt through the car floorboards causing accidents to passengers. Conductors carried large hammers to nail down the "snakeheads," as the loosened metal strips were called.

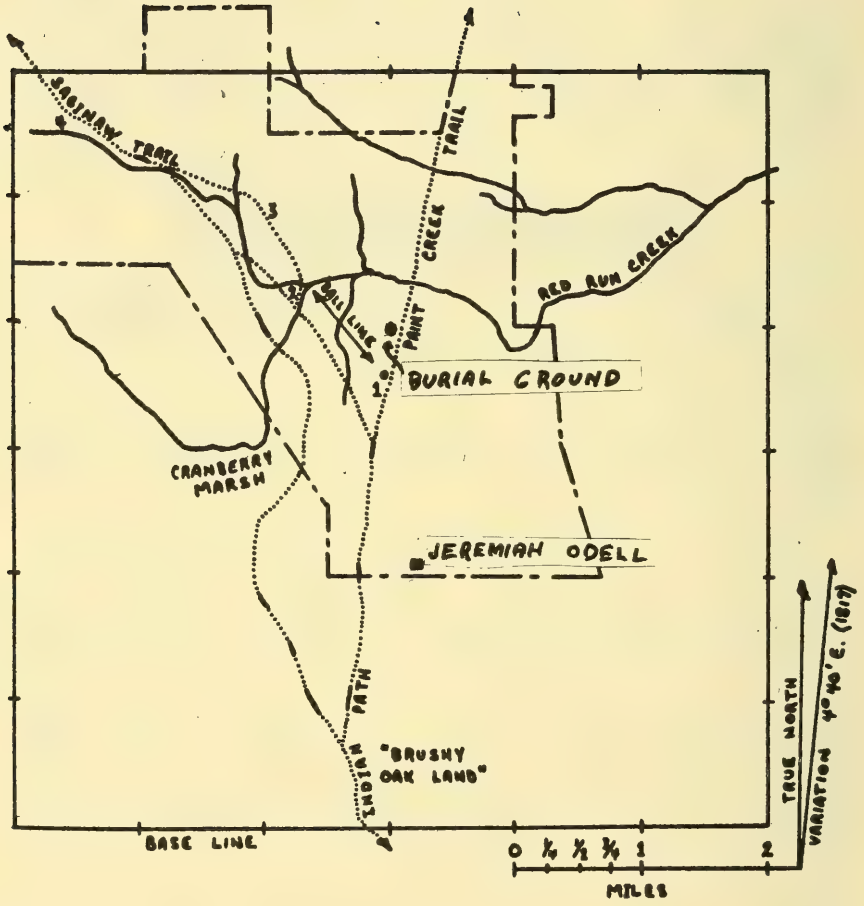
Hiram told JEREMIAH that Royal Oak was excited about growth possibilities. A Royal Oak railroad station had been built as well as two hotels. For many years the area covered by Oakland County was considered to be worthless. Government surveyors stated that the land was "....so bad that there would not be one acre out of a hundred, if there would be one out of one thousand, that would in any case admit cultivation." But later the word spread that Oakland County could be cultivated at a profit, and the advent of the Detroit and Pontiac railroad made the county attractive to pioneers willing to face the treacherous hardships.

JEREMIAH made several trips to Royal Oak to look at the two lots Hiram was suggesting he purchase. He

---

17 cont'd.
Mormon community in 1838. She and her husband were a part of the celebrated Nauvoo - Salt Lake City journey when the latter city was established as the focal point of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints. Phoebe Odell Merrill died in Salt Lake City in 1862 and was buried in the Salt Lake City Cemetery.

18This was to be the original line of the Grand Trunk Western Railroad.



ROYAL OAK TOWNSHIP IN MICHIGAN TERRITORY, *in map drawn about 1817, some 27 years prior to arrival of* JEREMIAH ODELL *and family.* #1: "Royal Oak" Tree; #2: Indian trailmarker tree; #3: Saginaw Indian trail remnant; #4: Campsite of the exploration party of 1818. The long-short dashed lines represent 1971 boundaries of Royal Oak. (From Royal Oak - The Early Years, Royal Oak Historical Society, 1971, p.5)

boarded the train at the Detroit depot located at Farmer and Gratiot Streets. Passengers sat facing out in the wooden cars, with running boards on both sides used by the conductor who collected the fares. This early Detroit and Pontiac line was powered by a steam locomotive, wood fired. JEREMIAH paid one dollar for the one way fare to Royal Oak, the trip taking some two hours. The train's top speed was 15 miles per hour. Hiram had told JEREMIAH to take his rifle along because it was common practice for passengers to shoot game along the way. If a shot proved lucky , the train would stop and the passenger would collect his kill. There were no stations along the way during these early days of the Detroit and Pontiac, and passengers were taken aboard as they appeared along the route. The real advantage in taking the railroad was not in the speed of travel, but in comfort. While the plank road to Pontiac via Royal Oak was an improved road, the stage coaches were grossly uncomfortable. Even so the stages would sometimes traverse the route to Royal Oak in less time than the Detroit and Pontiac.

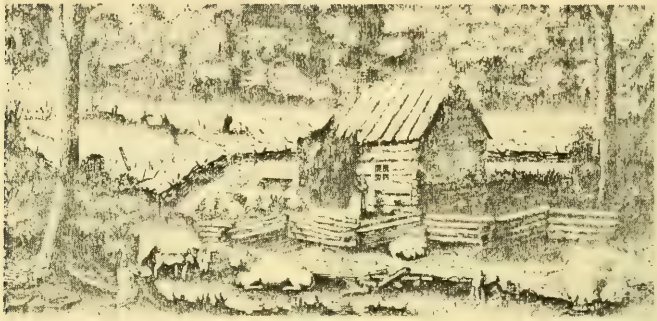
Hiram met JEREMIAH at the Royal Oak station. JEREMIAH was impressed by the magnitude of the station's woodshed -- some two blocks long. The Detroit and Pontiac had constructed the first saw mill in Royal Oak in 1837 and it was used in the beginning for the production of railroad ties. Upon completion of the railroad, however, the mill spewed wood for the locomotives. JEREMIAH was somewhat taken back when, upon arrival at Royal Oak, passengers and train crew got off and replenished the wood for the locomotive's boiler. The train then departed for Birmingham.[19]

JEREMIAH stayed at Royal Oak's Railway Exchange Hotel, built in 1839. It was a prospering establishment as the stage coaches for Rochester, Michigan, and points beyond made their connections at the hotel. Hiram had arrived in Royal Oak only a few years earlier, and his new young wife and daughters filled their small house. The lots JEREMIAH was considering buying were adjacent to Hiram's house. JEREMIAH decided to make the purchase. He would engage in trapping, and some farming. Lots 5 and 8 in Block 29 in the Village of Royal Oak cost him $45.

So JEREMIAH and ELIZABETH ODELL left Detroit and headed for a near wilderness country late in 1844. Their eight years of married life had not produced any accumulation of material things, and tragedy had already visited them, when their second daughter Maria died in

---

[19]Constance Kingan Crossmanm, *Royal Oak, Our Living Legend - 1787-1940* (Royal Oak, Mich., School District of Royal Oak, 1973).



THE LOG CABIN BUILT BY JEREMIAH ODELL could have appeared something like the above. The property owned by JEREMIAH and ELIZABETH ODELL today is a residential area close to downtown Royal Oak.

infancy.[20] But Emma, although not a strong child, was now nearly seven and Benjamin was four.

Lots 5 and 8 were heavily wooded. Several swamp oaks were 150 feet tall, and nine feet in diameter. There were also linden, ash and beech along with sugar maple. JEREMIAH faced the task of clearing the land, first for a log cabin, and later for some cultivation. Chimneys for cabins were becoming more and more common, the chief advantage being that the smoke could escape up a chimney rather than fill the cabin. JEREMIAH decided on the luxury of a chimney. The cabin had one window, with a muslin curtain.

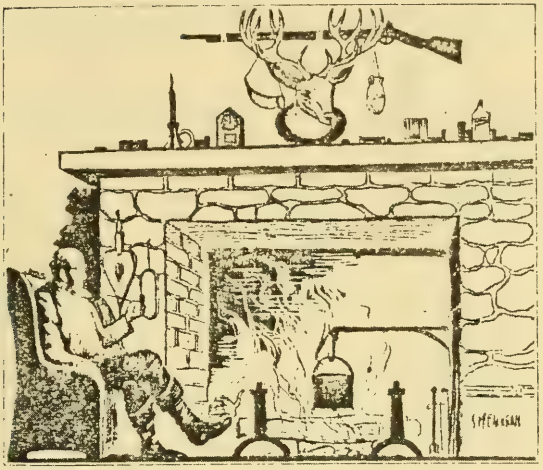
The open fireplace was the center of family life. JEREMIAH built it of stones and mortar, on a hearth of hardened earth. The opening was wide enough to permit the use of logs four feet long;the depth was three feet. JEREMIAH had ample firewood. The first step in building a fire was a heavy hardwood log a foot or more in diameter that was rolled to the rear wall of the fireplace. This was termed the "back-log."[21] Against this was laid an armful of kindling wood, lighted with flint, steel and shavings. When the kindling wood was well lighted additional logs were placed near the center and a roaring fire for heating and cooking was underway.

ELIZABETH, now 30 years old, found herself experiencing austere duties and unknown privations. It was a

---

[20]Named after Maria Wilkins,wife of Ross Wilkins, judge of the District Court in Detroit from 1836 to 1870. He was the first judge to be appointed District Judge of the U.S. at Detroit.

[21]This is the origin of the word"backlog" today meaning "reserve of unfilled orders."



THIS PIONEER FIREPLACE could have been similar to the one built by JEREMIAH ODELL. The opening was five or six feet wide, with the depth three feet or more.

life for which she was unprepared, but she was determined to raise her family to the best of her abilities. Often did she recall her youth in Ireland, where comfort and the charms of society prevailed. Her life in Royal Oak was one of solitude and hardship.

It was in this home that their second son, HENRY JAMES ODELL (IV 8), was born on 20 June 1845. The family of five found the cabin crowded, but it was all that JEREMIAH, as a trapper and trader, could provide. He had acquired a half dozen traps, each with chain, a gun and axe, a powderhorn and some tools for his gun. In addition he owned a spare axehead that weighed close to four pounds, plus his knife and bullet pouch. With this equipment he kept the family going , but progress was slow.

Within a couple of years another daughter, Charlotte, was born, named after ELIZABETH 'S mother and younger sister. But, even though there were now three doctors in the township, Charlotte died shortly after birth. Certainly medical facilities were limited.

JEREMIAH and ELIZABETH ODELL agreed that they needed more land so that some farming could be undertaken on a larger scale than was possible on their lots 5 and 8. Competition among trappers and traders was becoming fierce, and the availability of beaver pelts was declining. They had learned of a 30 acre plot of ground in the "S.E. Corner of the East ½ of the S.W. ¼ of Section

22," about one half mile south and slightly east of where they were now living.[22] The Detroit and Pontiac railroad ran through the southwest corner of the acreage. They felt that this land could be put to profitable farming use, and they were enthusiastic about the possibilities.

ELIZABETH wrote to her brother Daniel Michell, still in Boston, asking for help.[23] On 4 March 1847 Daniel responded, but to his brother Lewis, living in Canada, saying that he was enclosing "a certificate of Deposit for $93.92 being nineteen pounds fifteen shillings rec. by last steamer to be forwarded to ELIZABETH for the purpose of paying for the lot which she wrote about, and which I hope this amount will enable her and JERRY to purchase. You will see that the money is appropriated for no other purpose, as it was obtained with a great deal of difficulty and in consequence of your representation to me that this purchase of the land would prove the means of giving them an advantageous settlement for life...(We) all join in love to you all, and with the hope that the present enclosure will prove a lasting benefit to JERRY and ELIZABETH. Believe me dear Lewis, with love to JERRY and ELIZABETH, your afft. brother,

Daniel P. Michell"[24]

JEREMIAH and ELIZABETH ODELL were unable to make the purchase of the Section 22 land immediately, and their financial plight was well known to ELIZABETH'S family, several of whom were now in the United States and others still residing in Ireland. On 9 September 1848 Daniel Michell again wrote his brother Lewis, saying that "....I have a dress, an old one, sent to ELIZABETH from home which I shall send to ELIZABETH when opportunity offers, as it would not pay freight, being somebody's second hand muslin morning gown, and old at that...."[25]

On 9 April 1849 JEREMIAH sold the lots 5 and 8 for $113. With these funds, plus the money from his brother-

---

[22]All references to JEREMIAH' S land ownership are documented by deeds in the Oakland County,Michigan, county courthouse at Pontiac.

[23]Daniel Michell was employed by Harnden & Company,41 Broad Street, Boston.

[24]Original of this letter and others between Daniel and Lewis Michell are in the possession of the author.

[25]In this letter Daniel asked Lewis about the location of several books that he thought Lewis was sending: "....there is a copy of *Virgil* and *Homer* both missing....also a French Bible and some other works which I should be sorry to lose...."

in-law, he and ELIZABETH bought the Section 22 land for $210.

It was in this Section 22 location that Augustus May Odell, their third son, was born on 24 May 1852. A year later another son, Lewis Mansure Odell, was born, named after ELIZABETH'S brother Lewis who had been so helpful over the years. The living family members now numbered seven: JERRY and ELIZABETH, one daughter and four sons.

JEREMIAH'S father, BENJAMIN, had a few years earlier decided to leave Ohio and move to Detroit. With son William and daughter Araminta he moved into a house at Hastings and Atwater Streets. Araminta, now 24, ran their household on the Detroit River just a few blocks from downtown Detroit.[26] William was a shingle maker, while BENJAMIN engaged in farming.

In 1850 BENJAMIN ODELL, now 54, married Miss Mary Jenkins. She was 47. The Rev. S. D. Simonds of the First M.E. Church of Detroit performed the ceremony. Rev. Simonds had been a minister in Royal Oak before moving to Detroit. He knew both JEREMIAH and Hiram Odell, BENJAMIN'S brother.[27] The wedding ceremony of BENJAMIN and Mary Jenkins took place in the new church only days after its completion at Woodward at Congress Street. Lewis Michell was active in this church during 1849 and 1850.[28]

Araminta Odell, BENJAMIN'S daughter, had developed a following as a seamstress.[29] She bought a house at 243 Crogan Street, between Russell and Riopelle.[30] Her

---

[26]Detroit City Directory, 1847.

[27]Seely, *History of Royal Oak*, Michigan, Vol. I, p. 342.

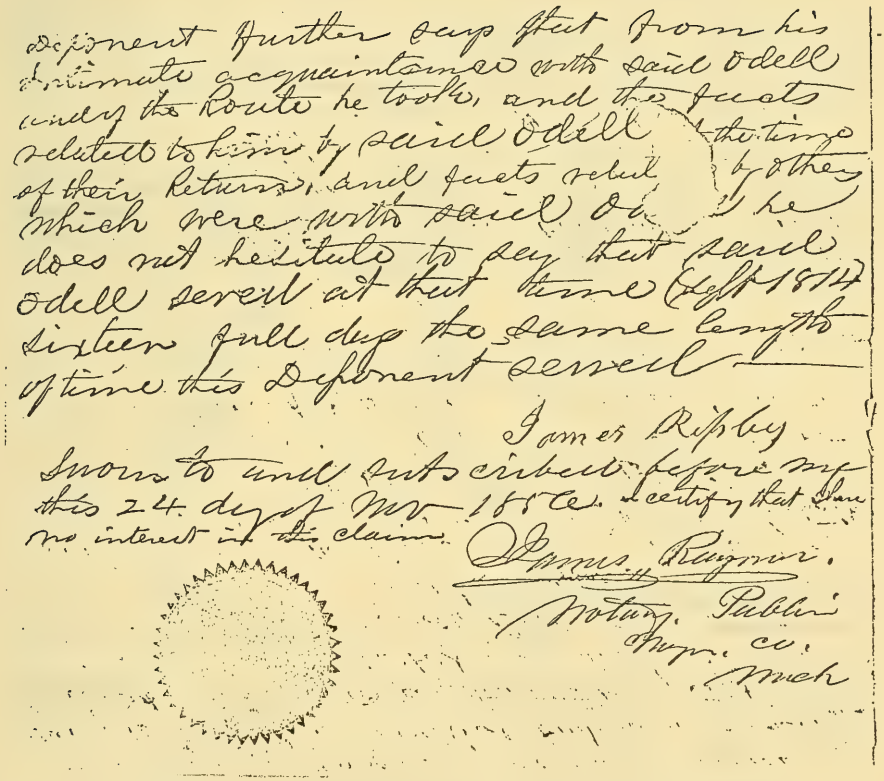
[28]Lewis Michell entered the service of the M.E.Church as a minister and member of the Detroit Conference. He moved to Lapeer County, Michigan, 70 miles northwest of Detroit,and by 1869 owned a farm in Arcadia Township. He married Miss Pamela Johnson, daughter of an early Oakland County settler. They had five children: Liney C., James S., Jennie (Jane) H., Fanny P., and Belle E. (from *History of Lapeer County*, 1884.) In 1884 Lewis wrote Jane a postcard saying "I saw Bro. Weir yesterday and he said you were well. Why don't you write oftener, and why don't you come home? Have you forgotten us alltogether, and if so why?...." Lewis Michell changed the spelling of Michell to Mitchell after moving to Lapeer and several members of his family followed in making the change.

[29]Her occupation is listed in the Detroit City Directory.

[30]Crogan Street no longer exists in Detroit. The area is now occupied by the Wayne University Medical School.

State of Michigan
County of Wayne

On this 24th day of Nov 1856 before me personally came James Ripley Aged 69 Years a Resident of Glens Falls N.Y. who being only sworn according to law says upon oath that he was a Fifer under capt. Dunham of the N.Y. Militia War of 1812 that he was called out from the Town of Queensbury Washington Co N.Y. on the 10th of Sept 1814 Rendevoused at Sandy Hill from thence to Fort Ann thence to White Hall thence to Burlington where they were disbanded for said term of service of sixteen days he has drawn 160 Acres under the act of 55 Deponent further says that Benjamin Odell of Detroit who is now present with this Deponent was a corporal or Sargent of said company that said Odell was called out at the same time (Sept 10/14) & Rendevoused at Sandy Hill from whence said Odell was ordered back to press a portion of the coy who did not turn out, Deponent says he recollects distinctly that Lieut Amos Green directs said Odell go back & bring up the delinquents — Deponent saw nothing more of said Odell till he (Deponent) was on his return home Odell & Deponent were Neighbors and in going home from said service Deponent passed the house of said Odell. & was informed by Odell that he had been at Home about 15 minutes then said Odell went on to relate the particulars of his pressing the delinquents, the route he took with them &c &c. Deponent further says as said coy went on from Sandy Hill Benjamin Odells name was [illegible] & the Sargent was told of the business on which said Odell was absent



deponent further says that from his intimate acquaintance with said Odell and the Route he took, and the facts related to him by said Odell at the time of their Returns, and facts related by others which were with said Odell he does not hesitate to say that said Odell served at that time (Sept 1814) sixteen full days the same length of time this Deponent served

James Risley

Sworn to and subscribed before me this 24 day of Nov 1855. I certify that I am no interest in the claim.

James Ringman
Notary Public
Wayne Co.
Mich

BENJAMIN ODELL'S DEPOSITION seeking bounty land based on Act of 1855 which enabled surviving and qualifying veterans of wars conducted since 1790 to acquire bounty land. BENJAMIN ODELL describes his activities in the War of 1812. He was awarded 160 acres, based on Warrant No. 252, 453.

brother William was active as a shingle maker and caulker and, until BENJAMIN married Mary Jenkins, he lived with his father at Atwater and Hastings Streets.

In 1855 the U.S. Congress passed a new bounty land law making land available to surviving soldiers of wars since 1790. This of course included the War of 1812, and BENJAMIN applied for bounty land. He deposed that he did in fact serve in the War of 1812, describing his activities during those days when he and others were being prepared for the Battle of Champlain (See page 126). He was awarded 160 acres on 25 March 1857. As was the practice among many recipients of bounty land, BENJAMIN sold the right to the land for cash.[31]

The winter of 1856-57 was calamitous for the JEREMIAH ODELL family up in Royal Oak. Two of their seven children had already died. Now Emma, their first child, who had never been strong, succumbed during the winter at the age of 19.[32] But, the climaxing tragedy struck when JEREMIAH died 25 January 1857 of a gun wound. He was only 41, and struggling to gain a foothold on some measure of economic security that had continued to elude him and his family up to his untimely death.[33]

He was buried in the Royal Oak Cemetery, about a mile and a half north of the Odell home (located in the triangle between Twelve Mile, Rochester Road and Main Street). The financial plight of the family was emphasized when the judge of the probate court listed his assets as....

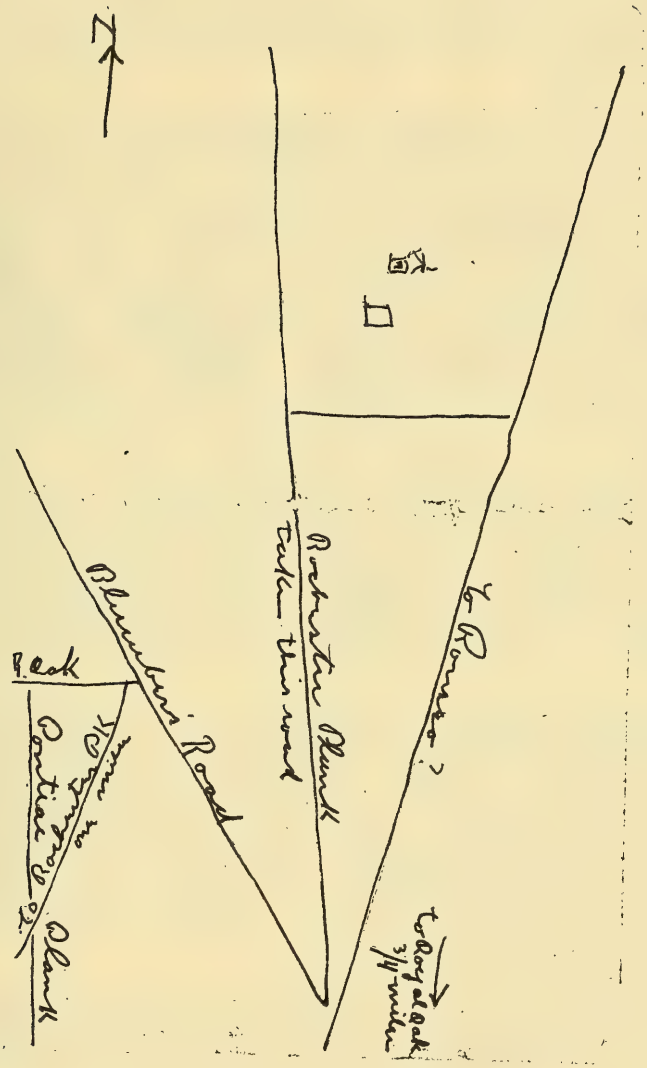
1 stand and razor	$1.75
1 clock	1.50
1 pr. of beetle rings and wedge	1.50
1 dog	1.00
the undivided half of 36 acres of land	

---

[31]It is assumed BENJAMIN sold his bounty land rights inasmuch as there appears to be no record of any land transaction in his name.

[32]The exact date of Emma's death is not known. However, JEREMIAH'S daughter-in-law,EMMA ROOKS O'DELL, states in writing that Emma died at the age of 19. JEREMIAH reports to the U.S. Census that she was born in 1838.

[33]The circumstances surrounding JEREMIAH'S death are not known, except to the extent that Emma O'Dell, one of his granddaughters, states that he died of a "wound received while cleaning one of his guns."



MAP DRAWN ABOUT 1910 designating burial ground of JEREMIAH ODELL, the Royal Oak Cemetery just north of downtown Royal Oak. The cemetery is the area in upper right of map, with two markers, one for William and the other presumably for JEREMIAH.

The value of his estate was listed as $700.[34] The oldest son, Benjamin, was 16, HENRY JAMES was 12, Augustus May, 5, and Lewis Mansureth, 4. Only Benjamin and HENRY JAMES were old enough to grasp the meaning of the turn of events. Both worked on the farm and later took odd jobs with the Detroit and Milwaukee, the new name of the expanded railway line that ran through one corner of the Odell property.

Sad news continued to dog ELIZABETH. As she was attempting to adjust to a life without JEREMIAH, word reached her that JEREMIAH'S uncle, Hiram, had died in Pontiac on 25 May 1859, at the age of 53. He was first married to Betsy to whom four daughters were born. Hiram, after moving from Ohio to Royal Oak and then to Pontiac, married Fanny Rogers in 1850. She was 22 at the time. Hiram and JEREMIAH also were close friends, as it was Hiram who induced JEREMIAH first to move to Royal Oak. ELIZABETH found it necessary to turn to her brother, Lewis Michell, now a Methodist minister in Lapeer County, a few miles to the northwest of Oakland County.

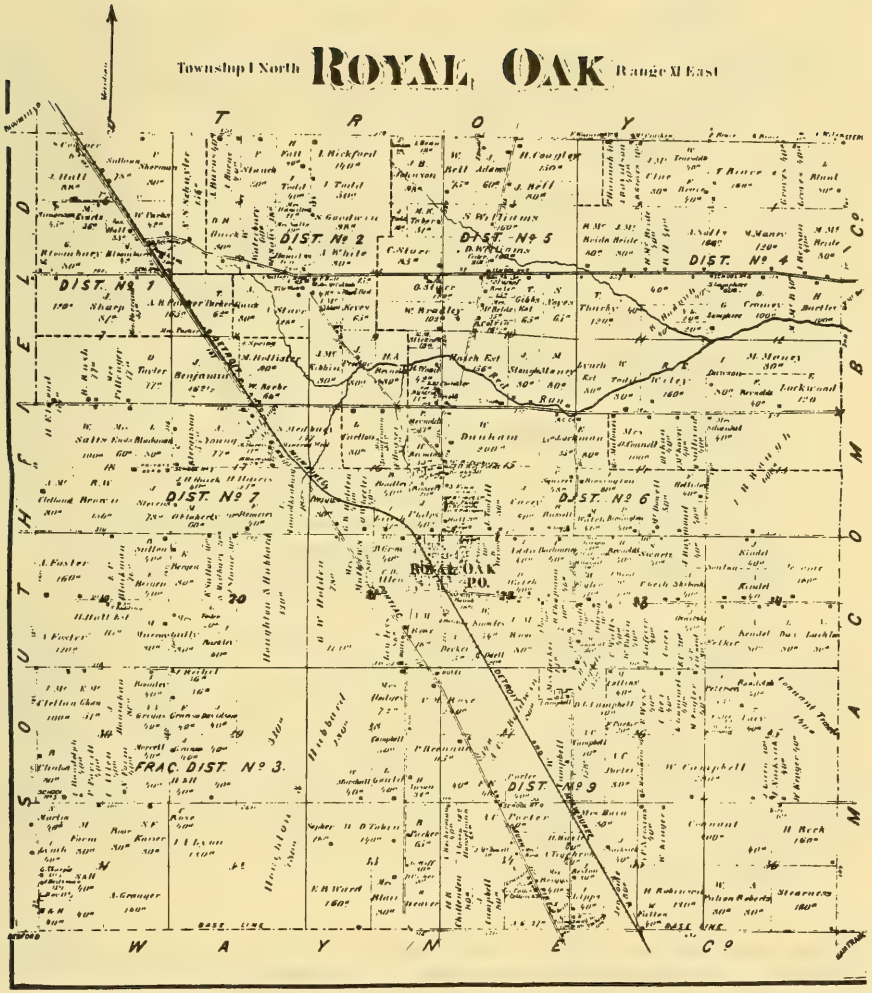
ELIZABETH ODELL and her four boys battled the adversities of farm life in Royal Oak for several years, with sons Benjamin and HENRY JAMES running the farm. The Civil War came and went, but only Benjamin was old enough to enter the military service. However, his need at home was considered essential inasmuch as ELIZABETH depended on his contribution to the farm for the family income.

But the boys were not fond of farm work. The closeness of the Detroit and Milwaukee line imbued all four with a desire to become railroaders. ELIZABETH opposed such ideas, but the boys' thinking prevailed. Benjamin, now 24 and strong-willed, broke with the family and in 1865 left for Detroit where he secured a job with the D & M as a railroad fireman. The burden of running the farm fell to HENRY JAMES, but his two younger brothers were now able to contribute. Augustus was 13 and Lewis was 12.

Within a few years, though, ELIZABETH capitulated completely to her sons' wishes, and it was agreed that they would all move to Detroit. In 1868 they moved into a house at 353 Clinton Street, but later to 345 East Fort Street. Son Benjamin soon rejoined the family. HENRY JAMES, now 25 and known as "Hank," was hired as a baggageman for the D & M, while Augustus, 19, and Lewis, 17, became railroad firemen, also with the D & M. So,

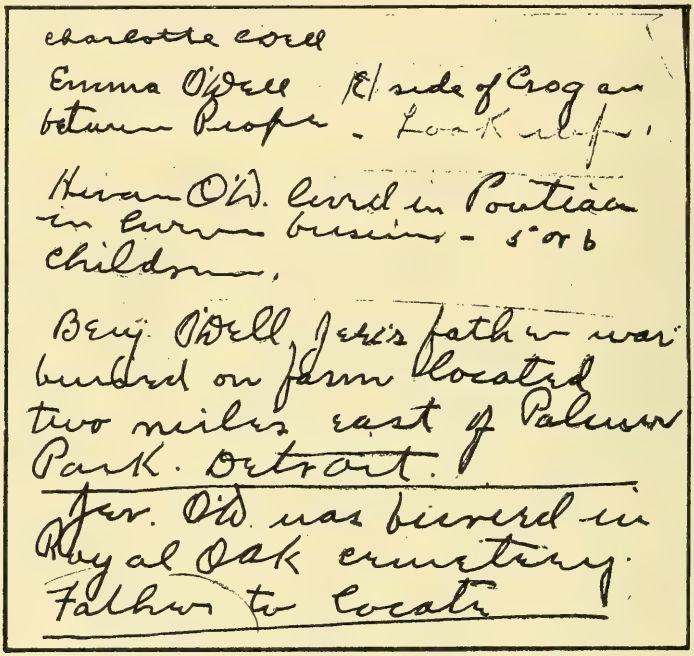
---

[34]Probate papers in courthouse of Oakland County, Michigan, at Pontiac.



PLAT OF ROYAL OAK TOWNSHIP, showing acreage owned by "E. O'Dell." Her property is in Section 22. The map was prepared after JEREMIAH'S death in 1857. The "Pontiac and Milwaukee R.R." runs through the southwestern corner of the O'Dell land. The Royal Oak Cemetery, where JEREMIAH was buried, is just north of "Royal Oak P.O." where "Main Street" divides into three roads forming a "V."

all four of ELIZABETH'S sons were in railroading, something they had dreamed about since their early days in Royal Oak.[35]


charlotte odell
Emma O'Dell E/ side of Crogan between Proper - Look up.
Hiram O'D. lived in Pontiac in Curven business - 5 or 6 children.
Benj. O'Dell, Jer's father was buried on farm located two miles east of Palmer Park. Detroit.
Jer. O'D. was buried in Royal Oak cemetery. Father to locate

ODELL FAMILY NOTES written by EMMA ROOKS O'Dell, wife of HENRY JAMES O'DELL, a son of JEREMIAH ODELL.

Their grandfather BENJAMIN, JEREMIAH'S father, died several years before their move back to Detroit. He was buried in Hamtramck, about two miles east of Woodward Avenue.[36] He was survived by his wife, Mary J., son JEREMIAH, daughter Araminta, and son William. William had married Miss Catharine Siebold back in 1855. He was then 34 and she was 20. BENJAMIN and Mary Odell were witnesses. Three years later William married Mary Jane Harrington.[37] She was 23. Araminta continued to live on Crogan Street.

---

[35]The precise date of the O'Dells move to Detroit is not known, but Detroit City Directories show 1868 as the year. The occupations of the four sons are also taken from the directories.

[36]EMMA ROOKS O'DELL wrote that BENJAMIN was "buried on a farm two miles east of Palmer Park,"the area later to become a manufacturing plant of Chrysler Corporation. The precise date of his death is not known, but it was 1860 or later.

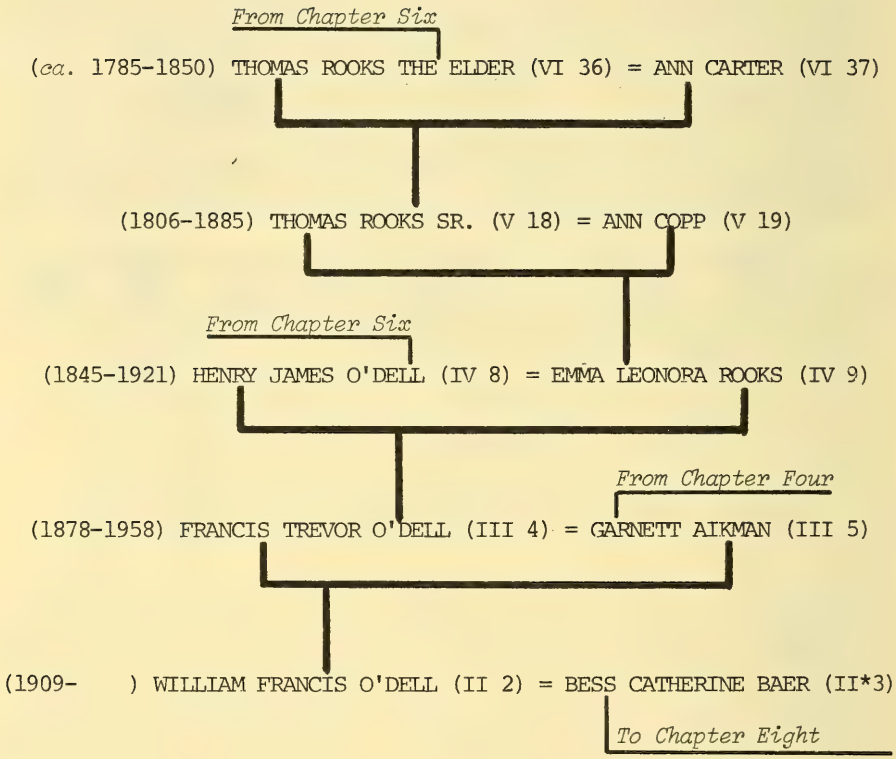
[37]Wayne County, Mich., Marriages, Vol. 6.

ELIZABETH'S and her sons' home on Fort Street was six blocks from the new Detroit and Milwaukee depot located just below Atwater at Brush Street. Many people living in the area worked for the D & M, including men in the family of Thomas Rooks Sr. (V 18), who had a daughter named EMMA ROOKS (IV 9). The Rooks lived at 422 Lafayette Street,a couple of blocks from the Odells.

EMMA ROOKS and HANK ODELL became acquainted through their activities at the nearby Protestant Episcopal Church at 960 E. Jefferson Avenue. The church was built in 1861 and the Detroit Free Press, describing the building during its construction, wrote that ".... the seats will be open with handsome bench ends, of butternut wood oiled or varnished as will be all interior woodwork. The church will seat 856....The church will be heated by furnaces in the basement at either end and provision will be made for efficient ventilation. "

Christ Church was one of the important centers for the social life of young people of Detroit. HANK ODELL and EMMA ROOKS found each other very much to their liking. They planned to marry in 1871.

7


From Chapter Six
(ca. 1785-1850) THOMAS ROOKS THE ELDER (VI 36) = ANN CARTER (VI 37)
(1806-1885) THOMAS ROOKS SR. (V 18) = ANN COPP (V 19)
From Chapter Six
(1845-1921) HENRY JAMES O'DELL (IV 8) = EMMA LEONORA ROOKS (IV 9)
From Chapter Four
(1878-1958) FRANCIS TREVOR O'DELL (III 4) = GARNETT AIKMAN (III 5)
(1909-) WILLIAM FRANCIS O'DELL (II 2) = BESS CATHERINE BAER (II*3)
To Chapter Eight

CHAPTER SEVEN — Rooks, O'Dell

When the War of 1812 between England and the United States ended in 1815, England was in a post-war depression, aggravated by one of the worst crop harvests ever experienced by the country. The demobilization of the British war industry caused social conflicts and wide-spread discontent among the working classes. Only seven years earlier John Heathcoat, then 34 years old, had started the manufacture of pillow lace with a lace making machine he had invented for making a net similar to hand-made lace. It revolutionized the British textile industry.

He set up a factory at Loughborough, in Leicestershire in central England. Soon the local independent lacemakers found that they were being replaced by unskilled factory workers, reducing the costs and prices of this type of textile.

JOHN HEATHCOAT

The traditional life in the textile communities was disrupted, and groups of workers organized to thwart the use of lace-making machinery. These groups were known as Luddites. Their objective was to "attack" the machines, hopefully reducing the operation of the factory to zero.

The Luddites aimed their efforts at John Heathcoat and his lace making equipment, now prospering in view of the low-cost product he was able to produce. First they sent him a letter warning him to "correct his ways or face the consequences." But Heathcoat ignored their threats. The Luddites then staged a machine breaking riot, moving upon the factory at night. Their effort was directed at the essential lace frames, and their destruction ruined the plant's productivity.

Undaunted, John Heathcoat bought an old woolen mill built during the 1700's at Tiverton in Devonshire, a quiet town in southwest England on the Exe River. Heathcoat predicted that labor trouble would not develop there because of the nature of the people in that quaint country community.

THOMAS ROOKS the Elder (VI 36) and his wife, the former ANN CARTER (VI 37), were living in Tiverton when John Heathcoat opened his lace making factory in that peaceful town on the Exe. THOMAS the Elder was about 25 years old at that time, and he had married ANN CARTER in Tiverton's St. Peters Parish Church on 8 April 1806.[1]

[1]Marriage Records, St. Peters Church parish register, Tiverton.

Their first child, son THOMAS ROOKS SR. (V 18), was born on 3 November 1807.[2]

The Heathcoat Company prospered in Tiverton and became the largest employer of labor in the town. When THOMAS SR. reached his early teens he was working for the lace company. He married ANN COPP (V 19), from a longtime Tiverton family, in 1830.[3] They raised their family at 12 John Street in Tiverton, in a flat which was one in a row of red brick buildings, with stone window sills and small door steps. By 1851 THOMAS SR. and ANN had eight children, four sons and four daughters.[4]

The Heathcoat Company continued to employ the local labor, and the Rooks contributed their share of lace making workers. It was not at all unusual to employ very young people in these English textile plants. By 1851 the Rooks' four oldest children were all employed in lace making: William Henry, 19, a lace maker; Thomas Jr., 17, a machine boy; Frederick, 15, another machine boy; and Ann Eliza, 11, their oldest daughter who worked as a wheel winder.[5] Three daughters, including EMMA LEONORA (IV 9) born in 1844, and a remaining son were nine years old or less and were all in school.

The family was active in the Church of England's Parish Church of St. Peter, dating back to the 1400's.[6] The large structure, having a striking Gothic architectural style, was situated on spacious grounds. All of the Rooks children were baptized at St. Peters.[7] Their

---

[2]The date of birth of THOMAS ROOKS SR. is recorded in the baptismal records of the St. Peters Church. He was baptized on 24 January 1808. The British Census for 1851 listed his age as 44 in 1851. Many years later the U.S. Census of 1880 listed his age as 73, suggesting his birthdate was in either 1806 or 1807, depending on the date of the Census.

[3]The precise date of the marriage of THOMAS SR. and ANN ROOKS is difficult to establish. It is assumed to be 1830, but no documentation of this date has been found.

[4]Information on the families of THOMAS THE ELDER and THOMAS SR. begins in Appendix A, p. 451.

[5]1851 British Census for Tiverton (HO 107.1889). In addition to listing THOMAS SR.'s occupation as a lacemaker, his wife ANN ROOKS is recorded as a laundress.

[6]An earlier stone church existed on the site of St. Peters Parish Church, built during Norman times -- about 1073. The present building, with several additions over the centuries, was constructed around the original Norman entrance door.

[7]On 19 Dec. 1931, two years before her death, EMMA ELEANORA ROOKS O'DELL wrote this letter to her niece, Etta Rooks, daughter of Thomas Rooks Jr.:

Miss Etta Rooks from
Aunt Emma 1932

GUIDE FOR TIVERTON.

"If hills and vales, if woodlands and if streams
Can please a poet, and inspire his dreams,
Then must thy beauties, *Tiverton*, demand
The highest honours from the poet's hand."

TIVERTON is an ancient Town in the Northern Division of the County of Devon, 161 miles S. W. of London, has a station on the Bristol and Exeter Railway, possesses nearly 11,000 inhabitants, and sends two members to Parliament. The markets are held on tuesdays and saturdays. There are also two large sheep and cattle fairs annually.

The Town is healthily situated on the rising banks of the river Exe which divide it in two parts, connected by a handsome bridge of five arches. The classical Lowman, bounds it to the east, and unites its waters with the Exe, near Collipriest Cottage. To the plentiful supply of good water, Tiverton is considered largely indebted for the longevity of many of the Inhabitants, and providential exemption from epidemical disease, so fatal and frequent in other parts of the country.

FIRST PAGE OF "STRANGER'S GUIDE FOR TIVERTON," published in 1855 when the Rooks were living in Tiverton. The "Guide" sold for one shilling. A copy was given to Etta Rooks by her aunt, EMMA LEONORA ROOKS O'DELL in 1932.

interest in St. Peters was heightened when, from 1853 to 1856, a major restoration program was effected. Tiver-

ST. PETERS PARISH CHURCH OF Tiverton, as it appeared in the "Stranger's Guide for Tiverton." EMMA ROOKS placed an "X" at the door where she stood during the baptismals of her brothers and sisters.

ton during the middle 1800's was a town of only a few thousand people,and St. Peters was the community's largest church.

During those years many Englishmen were becoming more and more interested in emigrating to America. Taxes were high, and in the minds of many St. Peters and other churches were making extreme demands in the form of tithes. High rents being charged by landlords worked hardships on many families. Emigration to the United States was reaching great proportions, with nearly half

---

7 cont'd.

"My dear Etta: I am sending you the last scrap of anything pertaining to Tiverton. St. Peters Church was where all of Mother's children were baptized. I marked the door where just inside I stood with Horace when they were all christened. A lady was there and got the names from the Verger. I know you will appreciate it so I am glad to send it to you. Best wishes, from Aunt Emma."

The "scrap" referred to was an 88 page "Stranger's Guide for Tiverton," published in 1855. Included in the "Guide" was a drawing of St. Peters, with the "X" showing where she stood.

a million having emigrated to America from England during the years from 1846 to 1855. There were virtually

THE RIVER EXE AS IT FLOWS THROUGH TIVERTON, with tower of St. Peters Church in background.

no immigration restrictions into the United States except for the prohibition of oriental slaves and others considered undesirable. Ocean fares were held low in order to encourage immigration into America.

To leave an established wage-earning job to face hardships in a new country, and to reduce one's standard of living for at least a time were serious barriers to families contemplating the journey to the New World. But to Thomas Rooks Jr., 21 years old in 1857, such limitations did not hold. He was young, newly married, and could adjust to new surroundings more than could the head of a family with six or seven dependents. He had heard his elders talk about the problems in England for several years and the young couple decided in 1858 they would embark for America, hoping to attract the whole Rooks family at a later date. In any event, they could view the situation in the United States first hand and write to the family in Tiverton.

Thomas Rooks Jr. and his wife Elizabeth arrived in Detroit, Michigan, and Thomas worked at odd jobs, living first at 128 West Larned. In 1858 he sailed for a time on the Great Lakes. The following year he was a laborer.[8] He then went to work for the fast-growing Detroit and Milwaukee Railway, and by 1863 was promoted to conductor. His letters to his father and mother in Tiverton contained messages of enthusiasm. He urged them to make the drastic decision of leaving their country, their homes, their jobs -- and come to America -- to Detroit in particular.

---

[8]Detroit city directories.

The THOMAS ROOKS SR. family in Tiverton was a strong one, and THOMAS had a keen desire to hold his family together. If they did emigrate to America he wanted his family to make the move as a unit. They were not unwilling to get away from the tax gatherers, the ever-present landlord, and the sometimes demanding clergymen. Religious as the family was, the Church of England was insistent and pressing for funds. To live in America would give them a freedom never before experienced. They could be independent -- economically independent. Their son's letters from Detroit gave them encouragement to break with the country that had given them their way of life for generation upon generation.

The family of THOMAS and ANN ROOKS SR. in 1868 in Tiverton was comprised of eight children, seven of whom were living at home. Louisa, born in 1842, had married James Tomlinson and was living at Newark on Trent, England. All children had been educated in Tiverton church schools. The youngest was Hannah, 20.

The children, with the exception of their oldest son, William Henry, all urged their parents to respond to the urgings of their brother, Thomas Jr. So, the decision was made to risk the voyage to the United States. Even Louisa and her husband James Tomlinson agreed to make the journey and settle in Detroit. There, in Detroit, thought the family, the shock of a new country would be lessened because of the proximity to Canada. Thomas Jr. wrote that Detroit was just like England: the city even celebrated the Queen's birthday by declaring a holiday. They would be "invisible immigrants": English-speaking persons arriving in America.[9]

One of the fearsome aspects of making the move to America was the voyage itself. The Rooks had heard many terrifying stories about the ships and the crews -- how passengers were treated like animals, that the food was atrocious, and fires and shipwrecks of some ships had resulted in many drownings. The steam boat had been in effective operation for about 15 years, but many of the immigrants still took sailing vessels. The voyage would take five weeks in contrast to two weeks for the steamers; but the fare was less on the sail ship.

The Rooks found their ship crowded. The fare for passage was about $12 a person -- about half the fare charged by the steamers. A new regulation required the ship company to provide cooked food. Only a few years earlier passengers did their own cooking,with the ship's master required to provide: 2 1/2 pounds of bread, 1 pound of wheaten flour, 5 pounds of oatmeal, 2 pounds of

---

[9]Charlotte Erickson, *Invisible Immigrants* (Coral Gables, Fl.: University of Miami Press, 1972) pp. 23-27.

rice, 1/2 pound sugar, 1/2 molasses and 2 ounces of tea -- per passenger for the entire voyage. With the poor food, plus the crowding, disorder and foul atmosphere, the trip was such that on occasions the Rooks wondered whether they should not turn around and return to Tiverton...had it been possible.

About four out of five passengers were men, mostly single. At night all single men were separated from other passengers, a vast improvement over earlier regulations. On the Rooks' ship, all berths were on deck, with single men forward, single women aft, and married couples in the middle. But the partitions were not stable, and separation was often a problem.[10] THOMAS and ANN had a problem keeping the young men away from their three attractive single daughters.

The Rooks family arrived at New York after weeks at sea, and were processed by immigration authorities at Castle Garden, near the Battery at the tip of Manhattan Island.[11] It was the official Emigrant Landing Depot -- the first one anywhere in the world. Here it was easier for the officials to check on the condition of immigrants, screen the crippled, lunatics, paupers and others deemed to become public charges of the City of New York. The huge rotunda, an area of some 50,000 square feet, was capable of containing up to 4000 arriving persons.

Fortunately for the Rooks, they arrived at Castle Garden in good condition, but others were not so well off. Many had to seek jobs through Castle Garden facilities. Some immigrants sought immediate welfare aid. Others were sent directly to hospitals.

All in all, the Castle Garden experience was not completely unpleasant for the Rooks, a far cry from earlier years when immigrants were pounced upon by rogues who took advantage of a frightened people, suddenly confronted with a strange land. Castle Garden gave the Rooks a favorable first impression of their newly adopted country. After being subjected to medical examinations, they were able to collect a letter from Thomas Rooks Jr. and then bought some rail tickets to Detroit with money he had sent to them. Arrangements were made for the handling of the baggage.

When the Michigan Central train pulled into its Detroit station at Third and Front streets, Thomas Rooks Jr., his wife Elizabeth, and their two young sons, Henry

---

[10]Maldwin A. Jones, *Destination America* (N.Y.: Holt, Rinehart & Winston, 1976) pp. 26-31.

[11]Castle Garden was replaced by Ellis Island in 1892 as New York City's immigration center.

THOMAS ROOKS SR. AND ANN COPP ROOKS, *after their arrival in Michigan. ANN lived about eleven years after leaving Tiverton; THOMAS SR. lived another six years.*

A., age 8, and Thomas W., 4, were waiting eagerly for the Tiverton Rooks to emerge from the train. The greeting was emotional, ten years having passed since Thomas Jr. and his young wife Elizabeth left Tiverton for America.

Thomas Rooks Jr. had arranged for a hack to transport the entire family to their new home at 181 East Lafayette Street, a mile from the train station. The Senior Rooks lost no time in getting a job, starting first as a laborer.[12] He was 62.

Within a couple of years the family moved into their home at 422 East Lafayette Street. Son Thomas Jr. lived across the street at 419. This was about three blocks away from where ELIZABETH MICHELL O'DELL and her four sons were living at 234 East Fort Street.[13]

The Protestant Episcopal Christ Church on Jefferson Avenue was nearby and the Rooks family soon became imbued with its activities. EMMA LEONORA ROOKS met HENRY JAMES O'DELL through the church. Both the Rooks and O'Dell families had arrived in Detroit during the same year -- 1868.

EMMA LEONORA ROOKS, shortly after her arrival in Detroit.

* * * *

[12]Detroit city directories.

[13]The historic spelling of "Odell" in the U.S. has been either "Odell" or "Odle." The latter spelling was adopted by several Odell family members during the Revolutionary War in order to differentiate their families from Jonathan Odell, a well-known United Empire Loyalist, a "Tory." Most Odell families, however, continued with the traditional spelling of "Odell." JEREMIAH'S wife, ELIZABETH, however, apparently changed the spelling to "O'Dell," as evidenced by her letters to her brother, Lewis Mi(t)chell. All four of JEREMIAH'S sons continued to use the "O'Dell" spelling. ELIZABETH may have obtained the idea for the current spelling from the Hon. James O'Dell, a Cass County, Mich., state legislator during the 1830's when ELIZABETH arrived in Detroit and married JEREMIAH in 1836. James O'Dell was a Virginian by birth and no relation to JEREMIAH or his father, BENJAMIN ODELL. One legend has it that James O'Dell changed from "Odell" to "O'Dell" in order to attract the Catholic vote.

EMMA ROOKS and HENRY O'DELL were married in Christ's Church in Detroit on 21 April 1871 by the Rev. John M. Brown, with HANK'S older brother, Ben, and Sarah Landon as witnesses. Families of both EMMA and HENRY were present as were their neighbors from the pleasant residential section of Detroit around East Lafayette and East Fort streets near Brush and St. Antoine streets. EMMA'S sister, Eliza Rooks, gave the newly wedded couple a beautiful copy of *The Holy Bible*, with the comment "Presented to EMMA and HENRY, By their sister Eliza -- April 20th, 1871." It was one of Potter's Standard Editions, leather bound with hard cover and locking latch.

ELIZA ROOKS

EMMA and HENRY O'DELL moved in with the Rooks family on Lafayette Street. Their first child, Ellen Louise, was born 2 February 1872, but lived only six months. HANK, as he was known, continued his work as a baggageman for the D & M and was soon promoted to locomotive engineer. Their first son, Henry Augustus O'Dell, was born on 17 April 1875.

The following year, on 27 September, HANK received a postcard from Thos. Fiedler of the Chicago and Lake Huron Railroad of Port Huron, Michigan, stating that "I want you to come to work as soon as possible."[14] That was the extent of the message.

The C & L.H. Railroad was an outgrowth of the Port Huron and Lake Michigan RR Co. which began laying track between Port Huron and Flint in 1865, some 66 miles in total. By 1873 it was operating as the Chicago and Lake Huron RR, but like many roads it encountered financial problems. Violent rate wars and resultant profit losses forced many roads into receivership. Moreover, the famous Commodore Cornelius Vanderbilt and financier Jay Gould were engaged in fierce competition in their separate attempts to control the fast-growing railroading industry.[15]

When EMMA and HANK O'DELL moved to Port Huron early in 1877 the C. & L.H. RR had just opened service from Port Huron to Valparaiso, Indiana. The railroad had 10 locomotive engines, 9 passenger cars, 4 mail cars and 341 freight cars.[16] A 49 mile section between Flint and

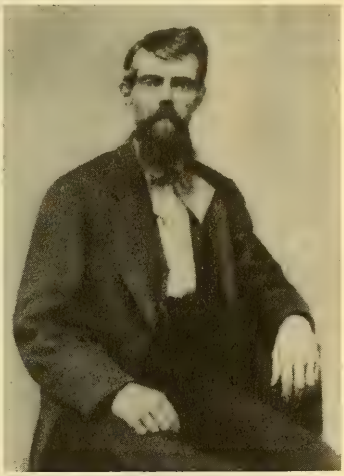
[14]From the original postcard, owned by the author.

[15]This discussion on the C. & L. H. RR is drawn from an undated monograph "How the Grand Trunk Got to Chicago," by Cleland B. Wyllie, a railroad historian.

[16]H.V. Poor, *Manual of Railroads of the U.S. (1877-78)*, p. 702.

Lansing was operated by the Chicago and North Eastern. HANK was first employed as a fireman on the run between Port Huron and Flint. He and EMMA, with three year old Gus, rented a couple of rooms at the Thompson house.[17]

HANK O'DELL had occasional misgivings about his decision to leave Detroit in view of the uncertainty of the future of the C. & L.H. But after a few months in Port Huron he was asked to move to Valparaiso where he would become a locomotive engineer on the run between that Indiana city and Lansing, Michigan. So the O'Dells -- a family of three -- moved to Valparaiso where,on 3 December 1878,a second son, FRANCIS TREVOR O'DELL (III 4) was born.



HENRY JAMES O'DELL

HANK O'DELL continued to make the Valparaiso-Lansing run until 1883 when he was requested to return to Port Huron and assume the Port Huron-Battle Creek run. By this time the road had become a part of the Chicago and Grand Trunk Railway.[18]

The long-time efforts of Commodore Vanderbilt to block the Grand Trunk from acquiring a direct run from Port Huron to Chicago had been averted, and the old Chicago and Lake Huron line was now a part of a firmly entrenched railroad company, the Grand Trunk Railway of Canada of which the Chicago and Grand Trunk was a part. The latter had 128 locomotives and 24 passenger cars. Freight was the chief revenue producer. The Grand Trunk now owned the old Detroit & Pontiac line that some 40 years earlier ran through HANK'S father's farm in Royal Oak. That original line from Detroit to Pontiac was the true beginning of the Grand Trunk.

The locomotive that HENRY O'DELL engineered in 1885 was a vastly different steam engine from the simple contraption used by the Detroit & Pontiac back in 1850 when it ran through JEREMIAH'S property in Royal Oak. That early engine had the drive wheels forward, with two

---

[17]Port Huron City Directory, 1877-78.

[18]Known 100 years later as The Grand Trunk Western Railroad, a Canadian National Railway with North American headquarters in Montreal, Quebec.

GRAND TRUNK EXPRESS PASSAGE ENGINE of the type on which HENRY JAMES O'DELL was a locomotive engineer. It was built in 1882, and weighed 97,000 pounds. It had four driving wheels. (Picture courtesy Canadian National Railway)

wheels in the rear to steady the locomotive.

By contrast the locomotive on which HANK was the engineer in the early 1880's weighed 97,000 pounds. It had four small wheels in front on a "pilot truck" which guided the locomotive as well as steadying it. There were four coupled driving wheels. This was referred to as a 4-4-0 wheel arrangement, meaning that there were four pilot wheels forward, four drive wheels, and no smaller wheels to the rear. (The latter wheels were developed later when additional support for the heavier weight of the firebox was found necessary.)

The first steam locomotives on which HANK worked were wood-fired, but by the time he had returned from Valparaiso to Port Huron they were coal-fired. As the train engineer he was in charge of the locomotive and responsible for its operation. He knew the mechanics of the locomotive well, and was well familiar with the operating rules. In a broad sense he was responsible for the safe operation of his train. The conductor was in charge of the train and made the major decisions.

For years HANK O'DELL was the engineer of the Grand Trunk's No. 10 and No. 11 running between Port Huron and Battle Creek. The No. 11 left Port Huron at 6:50 A.M. daily, except Sunday. A railroad "call boy" came around each morning to his home, knocked on the door, and made certain he was awake. It was up to "call boys", mostly in their teens, to contact each member of the train crew for each run. HANK always carried a Sharps four barrelled derringer with a rotating pin with him on his runs in order to discourage or prevent bandits from boarding the locomotive during the remote sections of his runs.

In 1883 when the HENRY O'DELLS returned to Port Huron with their two sons, Henry Augustus, now 7, and FRANCIS TREVOR, 4, they lived in Fort Gratiot, near the Grand Trunk station. The railroad advertised their "through line" from Chicago to New York City "without change" of cars enroute: "The Limited Express No. 3 with dining car attached leaves Chicago daily at 3:30 P.M. and has through palace Pullman sleeping coaches....arriving at New York daily at 10:00 P.M." (the following evening).

HANK O'DELL'S three brothers were still in Detroit as was his mother, ELIZABETH, the widow of JEREMIAH who had died some 25 years earlier. After her son HENRY and EMMA ROOKS were married in 1871, ELIZABETH continued to live with her three other sons at 345 East Fort Street. Augustus May O'Dell, her third oldest son, married Susan Dolan on 21 December 1875, the ceremony being performed

by the Rev. John M. Brown.[19] ELIZABETH moved in with Augustus and Susan at 698 Clinton Street.

There were strong differences of opinion among the four brothers as to how they should share the financial responsibility of their mother. ELIZABETH became somewhat bitter as she explained her plight to her brother Lewis Mi(t)chell in Lapeer County. On 25 January 1884, now 68, she wrote him saying....

> This is the third note I have commenced and thrown aside,not caring to trouble anyone with my suffering. I was put out of Gus' house by her on the 21st of August last and managed to rent a room at 4 dollars a month and HENRY wrote me he would pay the rent and (he) did pay it nearly four months and then his wife put a stop to it. I tried to get work but the city is over run with people looking for work so I failed to obtain any. So I have my bread when I got any... The boys think they have done enough for me and it is time for me to die off. HENRY lives at present at Ft. Gratiot and his wife writes to say that he is laid up with rheumatism.... I must not expect too much of one, if the rest would do as well as he has I would not want. Terrible cold and hard times here and worse expected as the shops and the R.R. are discharging their hands by the hundreds. I hope you are all well and love to all. I remain
>
> Your aff't sister
> Elizabeth O'Dell [20]

ELIZABETH MICHELL O'DELL

Late in July of the same year Elizabeth again wrote to Lewis Mi(t)chell about a legal suit brought by her brother Daniel Philip Michell, now in Ireland, on behalf of several members of the Michell family seeking a settlement on the affairs of their father JAMES MICHELL. ELIZABETH, one of the family members still living, had been asked to contribute 18 pounds to help cover Dan-

---

[19]The children and other descendants of Augustus and Susan Dolan O'Dell are listed in Appendix A, p. 447.

[20]Original correspondence owned by author.

iel's expenses incurred in initiating the suit. "I have to write to say I am willing and I hope it will hasten the conclusion. Matters have been a good deal better with me for the last 3 months. I hope it may last...."

But ELIZABETH'S plight continued. In another letter to Lewis she wrote:

> ....I have been laid up with sciattica and am yet so lame that I cannot walk.
>
> I cannot say that my circumstances are any better, only the weather is not so trying. One lady lent me a stove and another a pipe and I sent to Ben to see if he would send me some wood. He said Gus would send me a load. I never saw the wood, nor either of them since.
>
> Think of the snow storms since March and I in bed sick, but the neighbors (are) kind but are getting tired seeing the boys do so little. Ben gave me five dollars to pay my first months rent. Gus has done nothing.
>
> Henry has been sick all winter with rheumatism and is just able to be about. He came down last week and paid one month's rent for me and went and saw Ben but I did not hear what they made of it. He says it is a shame they will not do their share. He is willing to do his. If I was able to walk I would go up to Ben's and (see) him but I do not think it would do any good. With love to all,
>
> ELIZABETH O'DELL [21]

Still living in Detroit were Araminta and William O'Dell, JEREMIAH'S sister and brother. Araminta occupied the Crogan Street house she bought in 1852. Shortly after their father, BENJAMIN, died around 1860. His widow, Mary Jenkins O'Dell, moved in with Araminta for several years. Mary died on 9 January 1881.

Araminta continued to be the focal point of that branch of the O'Dell family, although ELIZABETH O'DELL, Araminta's sister-in-law, and her three sons still living in Detroit -- Ben, Gus, and Lewis -- did not mingle with Araminta and William to any great extent.

---

[21] The letter is undated, but ELIZABETH'S address places the date from 1885 to 1890.

Araminta O'Dell died on 5 November 1886, leaving an estate estimated to be $3000.[22] Her brother William was named administrator, and he lists himself as an heir, along with Benjamin, Augustus, HENRY and Lewis O'Dell, all "nephews of deceased whose place of residence your petitioner (William) is not informed, but your petitioner thinks they reside in the State of Michigan."[23] The four nephews thought it odd that their uncle William would be unaware of their location which was, for three of them, only a few blocks away. They suspected that William was striving to preclude the possibility of their sharing in the settlement.

Claims against Araminta's estate included....

Mary J. O'Dell (William's wife) for board and care of deceased, including clothing, medicine and medical attendance for 5 years at $200 a year	$1116.66
Mary J. O'Dell for city, county and water taxes paid from 1880 to date	231.30
Crabo Smith for building material	76.35
William J. O'Dell Jr. for carpentry work on building	39.75
Margaret A. Harrington for money advances	163.32

The total claims, including the mortgage, amounted to $2904.11, out of the estimated estate of $3000. Mary J. O'Dell was awarded $1698.92 in cash resulting from the sale of Araminta's home.[24]

William died three years later, on 21 November 1889, survived by his wife, Mary J. His occupation was listed as a farmer although he had spent much of his

---

[22]The death certificate of Araminta Odell lists her mother as "Emma," lending some credence to Emma being the name of BENJAMIN'S first wife. The burial place of Araminta in the Detroit area is not known.

[23]William O'Dell's death certificate lists his mother as "Mary" which appears to be in conflict with "Emma," listed as the mother of Araminta. Emma could be the correct name of BENJAMIN'S wife, and the "Mary" listed as William's mother is really Mary Jenkins Odell, BENJAMIN'S second wife. Possibly the informant providing the data on William's certificate simply did not know about BENJAMIN'S first wife and listed his second wife by mistake.

[24]Most of the information relating to the deaths of Araminta and William was provided by Dietrich and Mary Jean Richter after diligent and painstaking research of Detroit City Hall archives. Dietrich Richter is a great, great grandson of JEREMIAH ODELL.

life as a carpenter and cabinet maker. He had one daughter, Emma, and two sons, Benjamin and William J. Jr.[25] William was buried in the Royal Oak Cemetery.[26]

* * * *

Up in Port Huron exciting events were happening. The telephone by the middle 1880's was now an accepted device although for several years it was viewed by many with suspicion, even as an agent of the supernatural. Some residents thought of the telephone as a scientific toy, of no practical significance. Telephone subscribers were few in number, but a central switchboard was soon established.

Homes were lighted by gas, although in 1879 a former resident of Port Huron, Thomas Edison, had announced to the world his invention of the incandescent lamp. Edison, although he had moved to New Jersey, was remembered by some of HANK O'DELL'S oldtime railroad friends who recalled the days when Edison as a boy of 12 was a "candy butcher" on the Grand Trunk between Port Huron and Detroit.[27]

---

[25]The daughter Emma and son Benjamin are listed in writing by EMMA ROOKS O'DELL, wife of HENRY JAMES O'DELL. The name of William Odell Jr. as a son of William Odell Sr. stems from the latter listing a William J. Odell Jr. as one of the claimants of the estate of Araminta Odell.

[26]The tombstone in the Royal Oak Cemetery bearing William's name still stands, showing his birthdate as 1818. This is at variance with the 1821 date he gave for the marriage certificates when marrying Catherine Siebold and Mary Jane Harrington. It appears that 1821 would be the correct date in that the U.S. Census for 1820 for Washington County in New York State for BENJAMIN O'DELL'S family does not show a male in the "Under Five" category. If William were born in 1818 he should have appeared in the 1820 Federal Census for Fort Ann, N.Y. The William J. Odell tombstone in Royal Oak lists "Mary J., His wife Nov. 16, 1840." This was William's first wife, Mary J. Sly whom he married in 1838. It is presumed that JEREMIAH'S grave, known to be in the Royal Oak Cemetery, is in this Odell plot. In addition to William's stone, one small marker survives in the Odell plot, but no identification is visible. The cemetery records for those early years are non-existent.

[27]A dispenser of candy and food on passenger cars.

THE FAMILY OF HENRY JAMES AND EMMA LEONORA O'DELL, *taken about 1892 in Port Huron. The children, left to right:* H. Augustus, Emma, Edna Jessie, *and* FRANK TREVOR.

Ladies' fashions during the early 1880's stressed the "long, thin look." The entire dress design appeared to have the purpose of preventing freedom of movement. Sleeves were excessively tight, skirts were very narrow all around making walking a near impossibility. The tight sleeves prevented the wearer from raising her arm above her head or "even bending her elbow to blow her nose." But by 1886 the bustle returned to popularity, bigger than ever. It thrust the skirt out at right angles from the natural waistline. This resulted in a formal, stiff bearing, with a rigid, upright walk. Even small girls wore bustles to make them look fashionable?[28]

The wooden sidewalks made of boards running lengthwise were being supplanted by boards placed side-wise. This prevented sagging, so long a problem in maintenance. Horse cars were the main form of public transportation, with the cars on tracks while the horses drew the cars. But by 1884 electric street cars began to replace the horse cars, Port Huron being the third city in the U.S. to have such a modern transportation system.

Two daughters were born to HANK and EMMA O'DELL during the 1880's Edna Jessie O'Dell and Emma O'Dell.[29] Their older son, Gus, was 13 years old when Emma was born, while FRANK, as he was now called, was 10. Gus was a constant companion of his father during deer hunting expeditions into Saginaw and Bay counties to the north. HANK was an expert marksman with his Model 1886 Winchester Rifle. His wife EMMA became a member of the Ladies' Auxiliary of the St. Paul's Episcopal Church as well as the Ladies' Auxiliary to the Locomotive Engineers.[30] HANK joined the F. & A. Masons, Fort Gratiot Lodge No. 374 in 1891. The lodge had been chartered only six years before HANK received his apprentice degree on 18 February 1891. He was raised to Master Mason seven months later.

HENRY O'DELL with his 1886 Model Winchester.

HANK'S brother, Lewis, and his wife Nora, moved from Detroit to Port Huron in 1887 when

---

[28]Comments on ladies' fashions are drawn from *The Times Herald* Centennial Edition (Port Huron) of 10 October 1972.

[29]Information of the children of HENRY JAMES and EMMA ROOKS O'DELL appears in Appendix A, pp. 453 and 454.

[30]EMMA O'DELL was a member of the church Auxiliary for more than 50 years.

he became a brakeman on the Grand Trunk. Their mother, ELIZABETH, remained in Detroit and managed to survive on the funds resulting from the sale of her Royal Oak property on 17 April 1891 to Charles G. Merrill. The sale price was $500.

ELIZABETH was not physically capable of living alone and finally ELIZABETH moved to Port Huron where she spent the closing days of her life with her son Lewis and daughter-in-law Nora O'Dell. For several years she was in an advanced state of senility, and she passed away on 28 March 1899, 42 years after her husband, JEREMIAH, had died of gun wounds. She was 83 years old, most of them spent encountering tragedy and poor health. Her happiest days were those in Ireland when, in her youth, she enjoyed the niceties of life brought about by wealth and social grace.[31]

HANK O'DELL by 1899 was a member of the Brotherhood of Locomotive Engineers, and he continued on the passenger run between Port Huron and Battle Creek. On 11 July 1899 his No. 10 was in a head-on collision near Battle Creek. He was backing his train out of the way for the oncoming Train No. 3 when the latter crashed into HANK'S locomotive which was demolished. Neither of the engineers was seriously injured and "they stuck to their posts bravely."[32]

"HANK" O'DELL (center) with his conductor and fireman on the Grand Trunk.

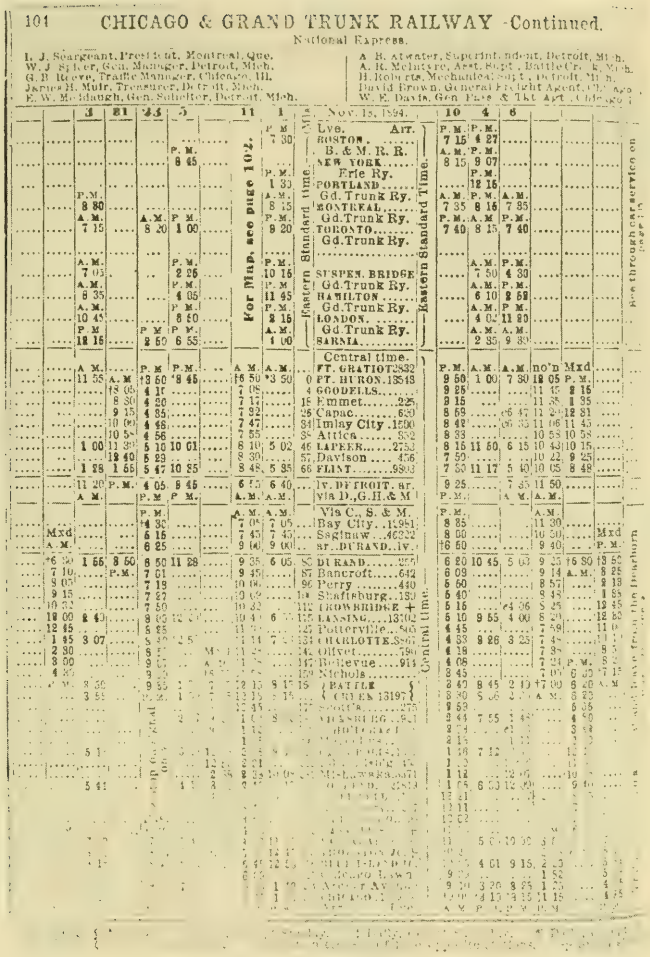
Two of HANK O'DELL's brothers remained in Detroit. However, Benjamin, the oldest of the four, disappeared from the city in about 1900 and was never heard from again. He had been married, and had at least one daughter who died at the age of five.[33]

---

[31]ELIZABETH O'DELL was buried in the Lakeside Cemetery, Port Huron. Her son Lewis O'Dell died the following year on 30 August 1900 at age 44. Nora, Lewis' wife, born in 1856, lived until 1929.

[32]Based on newspaper clipping, dated 1899 but otherwise undocumented.

[33]In a letter dated 10 December 1891 from Detroit to Lewis Michell's wife, in Lum, Lapeer Co., Mich., ELIZABETH writes that ".... Benjamin lost his 5 year old girl last week after 4 months (of) this sickness, spinal desease...."



101 CHICAGO & GRAND TRUNK RAILWAY -Continued.

National Express.

I. J. Seargeant, President, Montreal, Que. W. J. Spicer, Gen. Manager, Detroit, Mich. G. B. Reeve, Traffic Manager, Chicago, Ill. James H. Muir, Treasurer, Detroit, Mich. E. W. Medaugh, Gen. Solicitor, Detroit, Mich.

A. R. Atwater, Superintendent, Detroit, Mich. A. R. McIntyre, Asst. Supt., Battle Cr., Mich. H. Roberts, Mechanical Supt., Detroit, Mich. David Brown, General Freight Agent, Chicago. W. E. Davis, Gen. Pass. & Tkt. Agt., Chicago.

Nov. 15, 1894.

	3	21	25	5	11	1			10	4	8			
					P. M.		Lve.	Art.	P. M.	P. M.				
					7 30		BOSTON		7 15	4 27				
				P. M.			B. & M. R. R.		A. M.	P. M.				
				8 45			NEW YORK		8 15	9 07				
					P. M.		Erie Ry.			P. M.				
					1 30		PORTLAND			12 16				
	P. M.				A. M.		Gd. Trunk Ry.		A. M.	P. M.	A. M.			
	8 30				8 15		MONTREAL		7 35	8 16	7 35			
	A. M.		A. M.	P. M.	P. M.		Gd. Trunk Ry.		P. M.	A. M.	P. M.			
	7 15		8 20	1 00	9 20		TORONTO		7 40	8 15	7 40			
							Gd. Trunk Ry.							
	A. M.			P. M.	P. M.					A. M.	P. M.			
	7 05			2 26	10 16		SUSPEN. BRIDGE			7 50	4 30			
	A. M.			P. M.	P. M.		Gd. Trunk Ry.			A. M.	P. M.			
	8 35			6 05	11 45		HAMILTON			6 10	2 58			
	A. M.			P. M.	P. M.		Gd. Trunk Ry.			A. M.	P. M.			
	10 45			8 50	2 15		LONDON			4 05	11 20			
	P. M.		P. M.	P. M.	A. M.		Gd. Trunk Ry.			A. M.	A. M.			
	12 15		2 50	6 55	1 00		SARNIA			2 35	9 30			
							Central time.							
	A. M.		P. M.	P. M.	A. M.	A. M.	FT. GRATIOT	332	P. M.	A. M.	A. M.	no'n	Mxd	
	11 55	A. M.	3 50	8 45	5 50	3 50	0 FT. HURON	18543	9 50	1 00	7 30	12 05	P. M.	
		8 05	4 15		7 05		4 GOODELLS		9 25			11 35	2 15	
		8 30	4 30		7 15		18 Emmet	225	9 15			11 38	1 35	
		9 15	4 55		7 52		28 Capac	630	8 59		6 45	11 24	12 31	
	10 00	9 45	4 55		7 47		34 Imlay City	1550	8 47		6 35	11 06	11 43	
	10 55	10 55	5 56		7 55		38 Attica	1562	8 33		6 20	10 53	10 58	
	1 00	11 30	5 10	10 01	8 10	5 02	46 LAPEER	2753	8 15	11 50	6 15	10 43	10 15	
		12 40	5 29		8 30		57 Davison	456	7 59			10 22	9 25	
	1 28	1 55	5 47	10 25	8 48	5 35	66 FLINT	9800	7 50	11 17	5 40	10 05	8 48	
	11 20	P. M.	4 05	8 45	6 55	6 40	Lv. DETROIT	ar.	9 25		7 35	11 50		
	A. M.		P. M.	P. M.	A. M.	A. M.	via D., G. H. & M		P. M.		A. M.	A. M.		
			P. M.		A. M.	A. M.	Via C., S. & M.		P. M.			A. M.		
			4 30		7 05	7 05	Bay City	11961	8 35			11 30		
	Mxd		6 15		7 45	7 45	Saginaw	46232	8 00			10 50		Mxd
	A. M.		6 25		9 00	9 00	ar. DURAND	lv.	6 50			9 40		P. M.
	6 50	1 55	8 50	8 50	11 28	9 35	6 05	85 DURAND	257	6 20	10 45	5 03	9 25	6 50
	7 10		P. M.	7 01		9 45		87 Bancroft	642	6 09			9 14	A. M.
	8 05			7 19		10 00		96 Perry	440	5 60			8 57	
	9 15			7 27		10 05		10 Shaftesburg	180	5 40			8 45	
	10 51			7 50		10 23		112 BROWNRIDGE		5 15		4 26	8 25	
	12 00	3 43		9 05	12 00	10 41	6 05	125 LANSING	12102	5 10	9 55	4 00	8 20	
	12 45			8 55		11 30		127 Potterville	865	4 45			7 58	
	1 45	3 07		9 30	2 55	11 14	7 55	134 CHARLOTTE	896	4 33	8 26	3 25	7 45	
	2 30			9 55		11 55		14 Olivet	790	4 18			7 30	
	3 00			9 55		12 30		147 Bellevue	914	4 06			7 21	P. M.
	4 20			9 20		12 50		159 Nichols		3 45			7 00	6 05
	P. M.	3 55		9 55	1 20	2 10	9 15	BATTLE		3 40	8 45	2 10	7 00	6 00
		3 55			1 20	2 10	9 15	CREEK	13197	3 30	5 05		A. M.	5 25
						12 35		SCOTTS	275	2 53				5 05
						1 00		MENDON	951	2 44	7 55			4 52
						1 15		[illegible]		2 24				4 32
										2 15				3 22
		5 10				2 50				1 38	7 12			12
						2 51				1 32				12
					12 55	2 55				1 14		12 05		11
		5 41			1 20	3				1 05	6 00	12 00		9 10
										12 51				
										12 11				
										12 02				
										11				
										11	5 05	10 00		
										10 54				
										9 55	4 01	9 15		
										9 35				
										9 20	3 26	8 25		
										9 00	3 13	8 15		

TRAIN SCHEDULE for Grand Trunk, showing trains running between Chicago, Port Huron, and New York in about 1895. "HANK" O'DELL was the engineer of Nos. 11 and 10. On his running days, he would leave Port Huron at 6:50 A.M. and return at 9:50 P.M.

HANK'S other brother, Augustus, continued as a locomotive engineer and lived at 227 Macomb Street. He died suddenly from a heart attack on 18 June 1904. He was found slumped on the floor of the boiler room where he was working. He was 52.[34]

The two sons of HENRY and EMMA O'DELL were growing up in Port Huron. Gus and FRANK both played the cornet and performed in bands for local events. Gus, the older, was a distinguished looking young man and was a draftsman for George Harvey, a Port Huron architect.[35] Never finishing high school, Gus in 1893 took off on his bicycle for Detroit, some 50 miles south over dirt roads, seeking employment in an architectural firm in a city he surmised offered greater opportunity. He obtained a list of the 18 architectural firms in Detroit, called on each one, and was refused by the first 17 he contacted. The eighteenth, Malcolmson-Higgbottom, gave him a job as a draftsman and that began his career as a Detroit architect. He married Agnes Cleveland in 1903.

H. AUGUSTUS O'DELL was a major in the Signal Corps during World War I serving in France for 14 months.

FRANK O'DELL was 20 years old when WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN resigned from the Aikman Bros. Baking Company and moved to a farm near Amador, in Worth Township, Sanilac County, Michigan, some 18 miles to the north. His interest in GARNETT AIKMAN was not dimmed by distance and his visits to Amador were frequent. FRANK completed only two years of high school, becoming a steam fitter apprentice.

When FRANK and GARNETT announced their plans to get married, a problem arose over where the wedding should be held. Amador was not only a country town, but its population consisted of only a few people, plus a post office. GARNETT'S mother, MARY CATHERINE GHENT AIKMAN, posed the problem to her sister, Emily Ghent Smith, now of London, Ontario, and it was decided to hold the marriage ceremony in that Canadian city, about 50 miles east and readily accessible by train.

---

[34]Augustus May O'Dell, brother of Ben, HENRY and Lewis, was buried in the Mt. Olivet Cemetery, Detroit.

[35]A brother-in-law of EMMA ROOKS O'DELL.

DURAND (MICH.) DEPOT IN 1904, when railroading was at a near peak. During those years this division point, which was on HENRY JAMES O'DELL'S run, had 42 passenger trains daily, along with 22 mail trains and 78 freight trains each day. After 1912 decline set in and dwindled to zero by 1971.

So it was that the "quiet but pretty wedding took place on 27 December 1900 at the home of Mr. and Mrs. Wallace Smith, South London, when their niece, Miss GARNETT E. AIKMAN,was united in marriage to Frank T. O'Dell of Port Huron. The ceremony was performed by Rev. S.P. Irwin of Dutton, Ont. After a daintily served luncheon the happy couple left on the 4:30 train for an extended trip east...."[36]

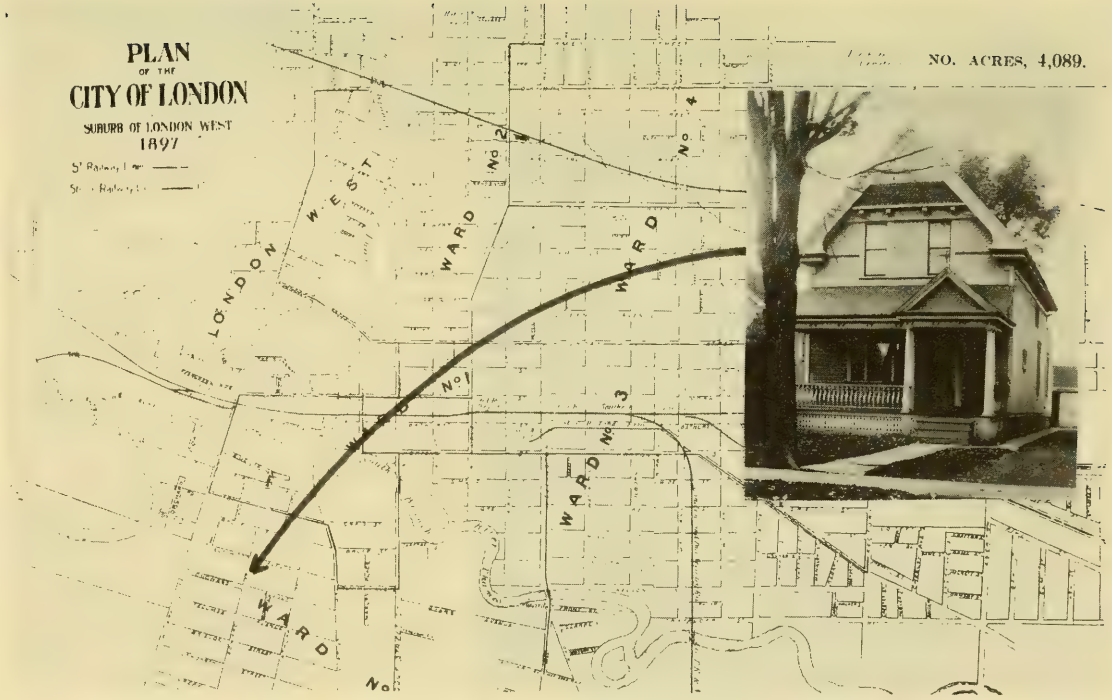
FRANK and GARNETT O'DELL moved to Amador after their marriage where they lived with GARNETT'S parents. It was in Amador that their first child was born, Emilie Ghent O'Dell, on 31 July 1902.[37] WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN farmed during his years in Worth Township, but in 1903 moved to Croswell in Lexington Township just a few miles to the north of Amador. Here he purchased a harness shop located in nearby Carsonville. FRANK and GARNETT moved to Croswell, living on Mills Street with their one year old daughter. FRANK was part owner of the harness shop.

CARSONVILLE (MICH.) IN 1905 when FRANK O'DELL owned the Carsonville Harness Shop (in picture on left). FRANK disposed of the shop after a couple of years and moved to Detroit in 1907.

GARNETT'S father, WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN, traveled between Croswell and Carsonville daily, as did his son-in-law, FRANK O'DELL. Tragedy struck early one morning late in April 1904 when WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN was stricken at the Croswell railroad station while waiting for a train to Carsonville. He was taken to the

[36] *London Free Press*, 29 December 1900.

[37] Named after Emily Ghent Smith, sister of MARY CATHERINE GHENT AIKMAN.



HOME IN WHICH FRANK T. O'DELL AND GARNETT AIKMAN were married in London, Ontario, Canada, on 27 December 1900. The wedding took place in home of GARNETT'S aunt, Mrs. Emily Ghent Smith, located at 17 Edward St., London. (Map from The Pioneer Period and the London of To-Day, London, Ont. (1897), p. 13.

home of his daughter, GARNETT, on Mills Street, and an operation was performed on a strangulated hernia. The "patient stood the shock wonderfully well, and for a time things looked favorably for his recovery. Everything was done that could be done, but gangrene set in ...."[38] He died on 4 May 1904 at the age of 57, survived by his wife, his daughter GARNETT and sons Richard and Alexander.

FRANK and GARNETT decided to move to Carsonville where he could be closer to the harness shop. Here a

FRANK O'DELL WAS THE LEADER of the Carsonville Silver Cornet Band. FRANK is in second row, behind the drum.

second daughter, Agnes, was born on 8 May 1905.[39] FRANK'S interest in playing the cornet continued and he became the leader of the "Carsonville Silver Cornet Band." But the Carsonville Harness Shop was not prospering, and FRANK'S career interests centered about the steam fitting and plumbing field. So, in 1907, FRANK sold his interest in the harness shop to Joseph Law, and the family of four moved to Detroit where FRANK had obtained a job as a salesman for the U.S. Pipe and Foundry Co. They lived at 113 Englewood Avenue just off Woodward Avenue where, on 24 January 1909, their son WILLIAM FRANCIS (II 2) was born. U.S. Pipe decided to transfer FRANK and his family to Omaha, Nebraska, and in the spring of 1909 the family of five, accompanied by FRANK'S parents, took the train out of Detroit, stayed overnight at the Great

[38] Newspaper clipping, undated and name of paper unknown.

[39] Named after Agnes Cleveland O'Dell, wife of H. Augustus O'Dell.

Northern Hotel in Chicago, and then on to Nebraska. The next five years were spent in Omaha and Sioux City,

BIRTHPLACE OF WILLIAM F. O'DELL at 113 Englewood Avenue, Detroit. It was a "four family flat." Picture was taken about 1909.

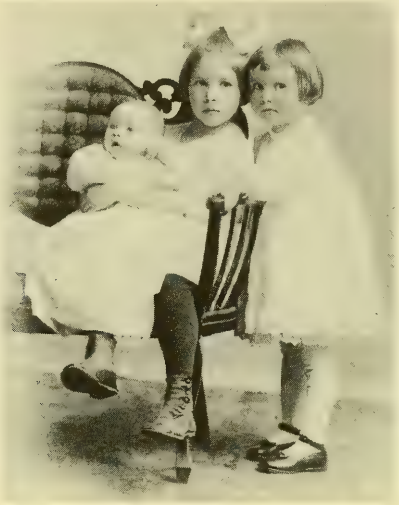
Iowa, where FRANK continued to work for the pipe and foundry company.

In 1914 he joined the H. Mueller Manufacturing Company of Decatur, Illinois, working out of Minneapolis, Minnesota, where his family lived at 3508 Eleventh Avenue South. Emilie was now 12, Agnes 9, and BILLIE, 5. The trip from Sioux City to Minneapolis was highlighted by our staying at the Andrews Hotel in Minneapolis where our breakfast cereal of Cream of Wheat was served with real cream, a taste experience completely new to me.

The H. Mueller Manufacturing Company, later known as Mueller Company, was founded in 1871 by Hieronymus Mueller, the inventor of a drilling machine used for tapping into water mains while under pressure. This tapping machine revolutionized the making of service connections from water mains to homes and industry without curtailing the water pressure during the tapping process. Hieronymus Mueller had six sons, all of whom became active in the company. One of the sons, Oscar, later became head of the Mueller Brass Co., of Port Huron, Mich. Adolph Mueller was president of the firm when FRANK O'DELL was hired.[40]

[40]In addition to tapping machines, The Mueller Company had been engaged in the manufacture of automobiles some 20 years before FRANK O'DELL joined the firm. The make was known as the Mueller-Benz Carriage, and it participated in the first automobile race ever held -- on Thanksgiving Day, 1895 in Chicago. The driver of the Mueller car was Oscar Mueller, one of the six sons of Hierony-

FRANK'S success as a salesman for the Minnesota territory was measured in terms of how well he did in



EMILIE, AGNES AND BILLIE O'DELL early in 1909 before the family left for Omaha.

contrast to his predecessor. In three years he had outsold the former sales representative's best single year's volume by six to one. The only problem relating to FRANK'S position with Mueller was his being "on the road" five days and nights a week. However, on weekends my father and I would spend hour after hour "playing catch" in our back yard. FRANK smoked a pipe in those days and he made me a firm offer that if I could ever

~~40 cont'd.~~

mus Mueller. The race took place in Chicago, in the wake of a heavy snow. Snow plows drawn by horses cleared a starting position for the Mueller-Benz, but for some unknown reason all other cars had a one hour head start. Six "motocycles" started the race; three finished. The course took the motocycles from Jackson Park on the south side of Chicago to Waukegan and back again, a distance of 54 miles. It was a ten hour struggle for the Mueller vehicle. At one point the Mueller "wagon" was in the lead, but finally finished second to the Duryea Motor Wagon that had an eight hour running time. The Mueller-Benz wagon was awarded $1500 "for performance in the road race and economy of operation." The Duryea remained on the market until 1917. During the Golden Anniversary of the running of the race in 1945 FRANK T. O'DELL represented the Mueller Company and with others re-traced the route of the original race.

knock the pipe out of his mouth with the hard ball he would give me a nickel. The incentive was ever present, but never achieved.

Music was always an important part in our family. GARNETT, my mother, still played the piano and FRANK, an ardent admirer of Herbert Clark,[41] continued proficient on his silver cornet. After dinner FRANK with his cornet, my sisters, Emilie and Agnes, and myself would gather around GARNETT at the piano and sing "Beautiful Ohio," "Over There,"and "K'k'k Katy," the latter two songs emerging from the patriotism sweeping the country then fully engaged in World War I with Germany. FRANK, with four dependents and approaching 40, was exempt from military service.

In 1917, when eight years old, I began selling newspapers at the corner of Chicago Avenue with its street cars and 35th Street, about four blocks from home. My mother would awaken me at five every morning except Sunday, prepare my breakfast, and send me and my dog Flip on my way to the corner where I would unpack my supply of *The Minneapolis Tribune* with its selling price of one penny a copy.

GARNETT AND FRANK O'DELL in their early thirties.

During the cold Minneapolis winters, for sporadic warmth, I would rush across Chicago Avenue to the northwest corner to the firehouse, with its beautiful white fire horses. Watching the fireman slide down those shiny poles from the second floor while dressing for a fire, harness the excited horses, and charge out the Chicago Avenue doors with the steam fire engine drawn by the galloping white horses three abreast was a sight not easily forgotten.

My sales of *The Tribune* were largely to business men enroute to work in downtown Minneapolis. Most of my sales were made to those who sauntered to the corner each morning. But my additional sales were to those men

[41]Recognized as the country's most talented cornetist during the early 1900's.

who had already boarded the street cars at earlier stops and for some reason had not yet purchased their papers. My goal, after the street car had stopped for its passengers and then started, was to run alongside the car selling copies of *The Tribune* to those who had their arms sticking out the windows with pennies in hand. The number of additional sales, quite obviously, was related to the number of outstretched arms and the number I could reach before the speed of the street car exceeded my own running capability.

THE ONLY KNOWN PORTRAIT OF THE FRANK O'DELL family. Agnes, at right, apparently needed water wings even though she could stand up in the water. However, in later years she became an Olympic swimmer.

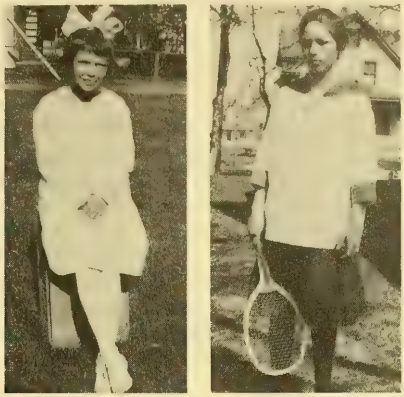
My corner developed into a semi-bonanza when the city government decreed that streetcars would stop at every other corner throughout the city in order to conserve on fuel for war purposes. The odd numbered streets, including my 35th Street, were selected for stops which had the effect of virtually doubling my sales volume. My greatest sales day ever was 11 November 1918 when the Armistice Agreement was signed by the Germans and the Allied powers. The newspaper was the chief source of news and it was *The Minneapolis Tribune* that carried the news into most homes.

BILLIE O'DELL in Minneapolis at 3508 Eleventh Ave., South.

Emilie, now 16 and in Minneapolis Central High School, brought great excitement into our home one day when she and her mother arranged a party for several of her friends -- boys and girls. I don't recall any details of the party, but I do know that Emilie had invited Martin Norton, Central High's outstanding basketball player. At nine years old I never conjured up sufficient nerve to talk with him, but at one point I did go over and stand next to him -- ample reward to say the least.

Agnes, 14, was taking "domestic science" in school, and she had learned to prepare buttered carrots, an innovative form of cooking the vegetable. The family exclaimed to the utmost, and this may have been the cat-

ylyst that caused Agnes to continue on with her excellent cooking ways. Her strawberry shortcake was con-



AGNES (left) AND EMILIE O'DELL as teenagers in Minneapolis.

sidered by the family to be superb, but she always reserved the final and largest serving for herself -- a situation that always bothered me but over which I realized I had no control. Her diary of 1919 consisted almost entirely of the menus for the family's evening meals.

Ice skating at nearby Powderhorn Park was the principal activity during the winter months, from November through March. My sister Emilie, the first one in the family to own "shoe skates" possessed great skill with her "tin horns," skates that had long blades forward. She and others used them for figure skating at which she was quite adept. Powderhorn Lake was "dragged" regularly during the skating season by a team of horses pulling a heavy blade that removed a layer of ice about one half inch thick resulting in a smoother skating surface.

It was during World War I that FRANK O'DELL conceived a procedure whereby his company could sell more of their water regulating valves through a device to be known later as the Mueller Hot Water Heat Control System. Basically, its use was for homes using hot water heating systems, prevalent in the northern parts of the United States where temperatures remained consistently cold during the winters. Each of these homes had an "expansion tank," a rather large container in the bathroom, attic, or top portion of the house. As the water was heated for the radiators in the house this of course increased the "volume" of water in the total system in that air present in all water expands as it becomes hotter. The expansion tank was the container that held this "expanded water." The water level would rise or drop, depending on the water temperature.

Expansion tanks were not satisfactory. They often froze. They leaked. They consumed space. In general they were a nuisance. FRANK'S system would eliminate the expansion tank by substituting a series of reducing and relief valves which he worked into an automatic system of supply and relief.

My own contribution to FRANK'S invention was once standing near a radiator in our one bathroom in Minneapolis, with a large pair of plyers in one hand and an eye on the changing level of water in the glass tube of the existing expansion tank. My assignment was to whang the radiator with the plyers when the water reached a designated level. This I did with great gusto so that my father in the basement could not in any way mistake the communication. The radiator survived the attack, but the plyers broke.

The System was ultimately patented and manufactured by the Mueller Company. Copies of the sales and royalty slips for all Systems sold were mailed weekly to FRANK, and the royalties for the week could be quickly "measured" by the thickness of the heavy red envelope. The sales for the System were so great that Mueller Company constructed a building solely for the manufacture of the product.

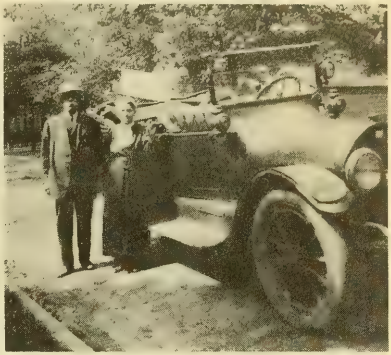
FRANK O'DELL became somewhat of a national figure in hot water heating circles. Because of the Hot Water Heating System the Mueller Company altered its distribution policy from selling direct to plumbing contractors to the employment of jobbers. Much of this change in marketing strategy was propounded by FRANK O'DELL who convinced the Mueller management of the merit of using a middleman.

One of the persons who became well acquainted with FRANK O'DELL was William Hoopes who owned a wholesale plumbing business, The Sanitary Plumbing Company, in Duluth, Minnesota. He offered FRANK a job as the number three man in the organization. Louis Junker, a Hoopes employee, considered FRANK a threat to his future and made life so miserable for FRANK that the O'Dell's remained in Duluth only three years.

Those were three great years for a boy who was eleven when they arrived at 5518 London Road, with Lake Superior as the family's back yard. True, the winter temperatures were cold, and once reached 52° below zero. But skiing and ice skating and hockey were the order of the day. Skiing equipment consisted solely of skis and straps over the insteps of the feet.

One evening in Duluth word reached us that my grandfather, HENRY JAMES O'DELL, had passed away in Port

Huron on New Year's Day, 1920. EMMA, his wife, recorded in her diary for that day that "Henry is not so well -- getting worse. Called Mr. and Mrs. Congo, and the nurse Miss McKenzie.[42] Dr. Smith called for a few minutes. Dad still worse, and passed away at 3 P.M. New Year's Day..." All of his children assembled in Port Huron for the funeral: Gus, enroute to Arizona; FRANK from Duluth, Edna from Garden City, Long Island, N.Y., and Emma, unmarried and living at home at 733 Court Street.



HANK AND EMMA O'DELL with their "Touring Car" about 1918 in front of their Court Street home in Port Huron, Mich.

I remember HENRY JAMES O'DELL, my grandfather, even though I was barely 11 years old at the time of his death. He was a mild and kindly man. When he and his wife EMMA visited us in Minneapolis in 1917 when I was eight, I well recall his keen interest in my spinning tops, and he would spend considerable time with me and these tops, so popular in those days. I thought it wonderful, even unusual, that a man of this age would be so captivated with tops!

HANK O'DELL had retired from the Grand Trunk three years before his death. One obituary stated that he was "many years an engineer on the Grand Trunk; industrious, sober and honest; wouldn't know what it was to do anything mean; one of the high class ones in his profession; master of one of the big engines, careful and conscientious in his duties; (doesn't) make any unnecessary noise; a very fine gentleman; has a grand home and a lovely family." When HANK retired he was engineer on steam locomotives vastly heavier and more powerful than those early models of 1880. The wheel arrangement on the last locomotives he had was 2-6-0 - six driving wheels.[43]

---

[42] The Congos were close friends of the O'Dell family in Port Huron.

[43] The steam locomotive era ended on 27 March 1960 when the Grand Trunk's Number 6322 pulled into the station at Durand, Michigan, one of the "division points" on HENRY O'DELL'S Port Huron-Battle Creek Run. When, some 43 years after HENRY O'DELL retired, Engineer Harry Wix Jr. climbed down from his steam locomotive's cab at Durand, he remarked that "I really thought of them as beautiful -- not monsters, just beautiful."

WHEN HENRY JAMES O'DELL RETIRED FROM THE GRAND TRUNK, he was an engineer on the steam locomotive similar to the one in this picture. During the World's Columbian Exposition in Chicago in 1893, "HANK" set a speed record for steam locomotives running between Port Huron and Chicago.

He was buried in the Lakeside Cemetery of Port Huron, in the O'Dell plot.[44] Burial services were conducted by the Fort Gratiot Lodge F. & A. Masons. His wife EMMA and his daughter Emma continued to live at the Court Street address.

At our Lester Park School in Duluth where I was in the seventh and eighth grades, the playground was "watered" for ice skating only once each fall, during late October or early November, and the rink would remain frozen all winter. Some of the boys and girls in my class would skate as couples, with their hands joined in a crossed position in front of their bodies. But the more daring, and those I admired most, were those fellows who would place their right arms around the girl's waists, with the girls' right hand joining the boys' right hand.

These couples would circle the rink for hours, it seemed. It was a constant disappointment to me that I could never summon sufficient courage to ask a girl to skate with me -- not even with arms crossed in front!

It was in Duluth that I became a Boy Scout, the minimum age requirement being 12 years. My claims to fame were knot tieing and being a part of an eight man drill team. Our scoutmaster had returned from World War I and he was an enthusiast of close order formation drilling. He had us so well trained that with nothing but whistles emanating from him we would perform our numerous and complicated maneuvers, much to the delight of the many audiences.

The highlights of my summers were the two week stints at the Boy Scouts' Camp Magney. A letter to my mother written on 23 June 1922 described the lofty level of activities at the camp:

> Dear Mother:
>
> Slim the cook gave me some of this paper so I could write you a letter. I would write to you more, only that the mail only goes out three times a day (Hardly an excuse; surely I meant "three times a week").
>
> Tell Em I got her letter and that she sent it to the wrong address. I hope Agnes has a nice time swimming in the lake.
>
> I am a second class scout now and this afternoon I am going to take my 50 yard

[44] The tombstone lists HENRY O'DELL'S birth date as 1848. This is inconsistent with official records.

EMMA ROOKS O'DELL AT AGE 76, with her grandson, BILLIE O'DELL, in Duluth, Minn., in 1921 shortly after he became a Boy Scout.

swim for first class. Mr. Kelsy wants you to send me a statement that I have earned $2 and banked (it). You can send me my bank book, too.

Bill Tenbrook, captain-elect for the Central high school football team, is out here and is giving the boys their athletic tests.

Tell Ag I can jump 4 ft. 1 in. high. That is up to my chin. We had stunt night Friday night and Ralph Gemmell and I went through a slow motion boxing match.

I don't think there is anything else I want except that note about my banking so I can make my first class test.

Bill

P.S. It is awful windy out here but I am warm enough at night.

FRANK rejoined the Mueller Company in 1923, and we moved that summer to LaGrange, Illinois, a Chicago suburb. Emilie and Agnes took a lake cruise on the S.S. Noronic to Chicago, while my mother and I traveled by train. We slept on a Pullman car, the first such experience I could remember.

I had the pleasure of an upper berth which was entered via a small ladder from the center aisle of the car. You undressed inside the berth, squirming in a lying down position, with the aisle curtains drawn, placing your clothes in a small hammock provided for that purpose. Each Pullman car had its own washrooms, one for men and another for ladies.

My father, already in Chicago, met our train and the three of us stayed at the Brevort Hotel, on Monroe between LaSalle and Clark streets. We remained there for a couple of nights while the finishing touches were being placed on the upstairs of the duplex into which we were to move -- at 10 South Catherine Avenue, LaGrange. Agnes entered the Lyons Township High School as a senior, and I as a sophomore.

Those early days at the LaGrange school were laden with uncomfortable feelings -- no friends, strange building. We would walk to school together, and agree to meet at a certain hour during the day to offer each other assurance that life would continue. Agnes was at

an extreme disadvantage in that she entered the high school as a senior, encountering boys and girls who had for the most part known each other for years. At least I had three forthcoming years in high school during which to make friends.

* * * *

There was considerable family conversation during the middle 1920's regarding the possibility of a "Springer Estate" in Delaware being worth some $500,000,000 to descendants of CHARLES CHRISTOPHER SPRINGER who had died in Wilmington, Delaware, in 1738. My Mother's mother, MINNIE GHENT, was a grand daughter of MARY MARGARET SPRINGER who married RICHARD S. AIKMAN back in 1842.

GARNETT AIKMAN O'DELL AND FRANK T. O'DELL during the middle 1920's in LaGrange, Illinois.

All of the Springers and Ghents of Canada were excited about this possible windfall. Several attorneys in the East had learned that the City of Wilmington, or at least a large part of it, belonged to CHARLES SPRINGER descendants. These attorneys ran advertisements in newspapers outside Delaware offering information on the rights of Springer heirs to this property. Hundreds of heirs responded.

In 1924, MINNIE GHENT wrote to my Mother, GARNETT, stating that she should immediately write to the secretary of the "Springer Heirs," an organization being formed by the lawyers who would represent the heirs in the legal claims to the "millions" to be distributed. Our family would qualify because my Mother was a great grand daughter of MARY MARGARET SPRINGER. My Father

tended to make light of the whole affair, but deep down there was a pleasant family expectation that even a small fraction of the "millions" would be a delightful turn of events.

MARY CATHERINE (MINNIE) GHENT AIKMAN

My grandmother MINNIE wrote also to her cousin Blake Springer in Freeman P.O., Ontario on 17 June 1924, seeking more information. Blake responded by saying that....

> Now as to the Springer Estate -- there has been an association formed in Hamilton (Ont.) and district with my brother Charles B. Springer as secretary.
>
> He has the old family Bible from home and if you would write him he could give you all or more information about it than I can....There will be a meeting held in Hamilton shortly I think, and then will be the time to file the claim....
>
> Blake Springer

MINNIE, now nearing 70, had great hopes for acquiring this financial bonanza for her family. Three days after her letter to Blake Springer she wrote to *The Evening Journal* of Wilmington, Delaware, regarding "an announcement calling for the names of the heirs of a late Mr. Springer."

Her letter was referred to Wilmington's Chamber of Commerce, and on 23 June 1924 this letter was written to MINNIE:

> ....There never has appeared in any of our newspapers nor has there been issued from our courts any such an announcement, for the reason that there is no such estate in existence in Delaware as this much-discussed Springer estate. It is an absolute fake from beginning to end....
>
> Our settled conviction is that somebody is busily engaged in keeping this ancient hoax alive for the purpose of exploiting for money descendants of the original Springer family, and we would urge

> that you follow the same advice we have given to everybody making similar inquiries, and that is to spend no money on it, as it would simply have the effect of enriching certain individuals without any possible chance of return to yourself.
>
> We are frank to say that in every case this advice has been ignored and unfortunate people continue to send their hard earned cash on a wild goose chase..... Some time ago western papers particularly carried a story to the effect that the 'City of Wilmington had offered to settle this claim out of court for $500,000,000,' and that this statement was made by a man at a meeting of the Springer Heirs, Inc. in Chicago on May 20 of last year.
>
> We immediately wrote to this gentleman, asking where he got his information, and like all the rest of them he made no reply whatever....

The gradual emergence of the truth regarding the Springer Estate was slow in being accepted by the Springer descendants. But it was learned that this hoax had been promulgated since the 1850's or even earlier. It is true that lawyers, back in the middle 1800's, did discover that church property was deeded to CHARLES CHRISTOPHER SPRINGER during his lifetime "as trustee" for the Old Swedes Church (see pages 88 - 90), but the property was never actually owned by him. Lawyers seized upon this technicality and had been bilking hundreds of "Springer heirs" for dozens and dozens of years.[45]

* * * *

[45]The myth of the Springer estate continued for another dozen years. Springer Heirs, Inc., an Illinois corporation, was the parent organization of subsidiary groups located in other states. Descendants "living in Delaware were apparently a threat to the success of the agents, for these descendants knew the truth of such claims. Consequently, they were never invited to the meetings of Springer Heirs, Inc. which were held behind locked doors, admission being only by pass." The corporation was finally dissolved in 7 June 1937 by order of the Illinois Attorney General.

FRANK'S royalty checks were still coming in, and these funds, coupled with a Mueller salary plus fast appreciating securities during the growing prosperity of the 1920's enabled our family to own a Jewett automobile, unique because instead of it being an open touring car it had sliding glass windows that could be closed during inclement weather. From the Jewett we graduated to Packards, even owning two of them during the frenzied prosperity days of the late Twenties. Mother owned a three-quarter length mink coat. Agnes entered Rockford College at Rockford, Ill. in 1924. I enrolled at the University of Illinois in the fall of 1926. My Father had his heart set on my going to Dartmouth. One of his stock broker friends was a "Dartmouth man" and FRANK must have visualized me in that category. However, Red Grange, football's famous "Galloping Ghost" of the University of Illinois, apparently had more influence on me at that point of time, and off I went to Illinois at Urbana.

My sister Emilie was a personal secretary to a vice president of the Commonwealth Edison Company, the area's electric power company. In 1929 she married Claude Whitson "Jack" Oakes who was working for the Western Electric Company, manufacturer of telephones for the Bell system.

In many conversations with my father, he encouraged me to enter the business field, and to obtain a law degree as the entré into business after graduation. This sounded feasible enough to me, and I arrived at the University with every intention of initiating a pre-law education. However, during the fraternity rushing days preceding matriculation, a sophomore at one of the fraternities I was visiting suggested that if I really wanted to enter the business field upon graduation with some legal background, I should enroll in the College of Commerce and take a course in business law. This advice was convincing, and a couple of years went by before my Father became aware of my deviation from his plan.

Even in the University's College of Commerce a certain number of "science" courses were required for graduation. It was during my junior year in a chemistry laboratory that I happened to be standing next to a pretty, brown-eyed girl named ELIZABETH (BESS) CATHERINE BAER (II*3). We were attempting to locate a particular chemical on the massive shelves containing an unlimited supply of chemicals. I became aware of her when she exclaimed "I can't find this damn chemical."

Some two years later I was graduated from the University of Illinois, with a strong desire to marry this BESS BAER. She had a teaching job already lined up in Streator, Illinois, her home, but with the Great Depression now moving to the forefront with intense fury the best I could do was to obtain a job selling direct mail to ice dealers. My assignment was to convince the ice dealers that they should purchase the mail campaigns, aimed at promoting the advantages of using ice as a refrigeration -- in contrast to the newly invented "electric ice box."

Success in this venture did not come easily. The electric refrigerator industry was growing rapidly, and the use of ice in the home declining markedly. Obviously the direct mail advertising campaign was having near zero effect, and my own sales were not much greater than that.

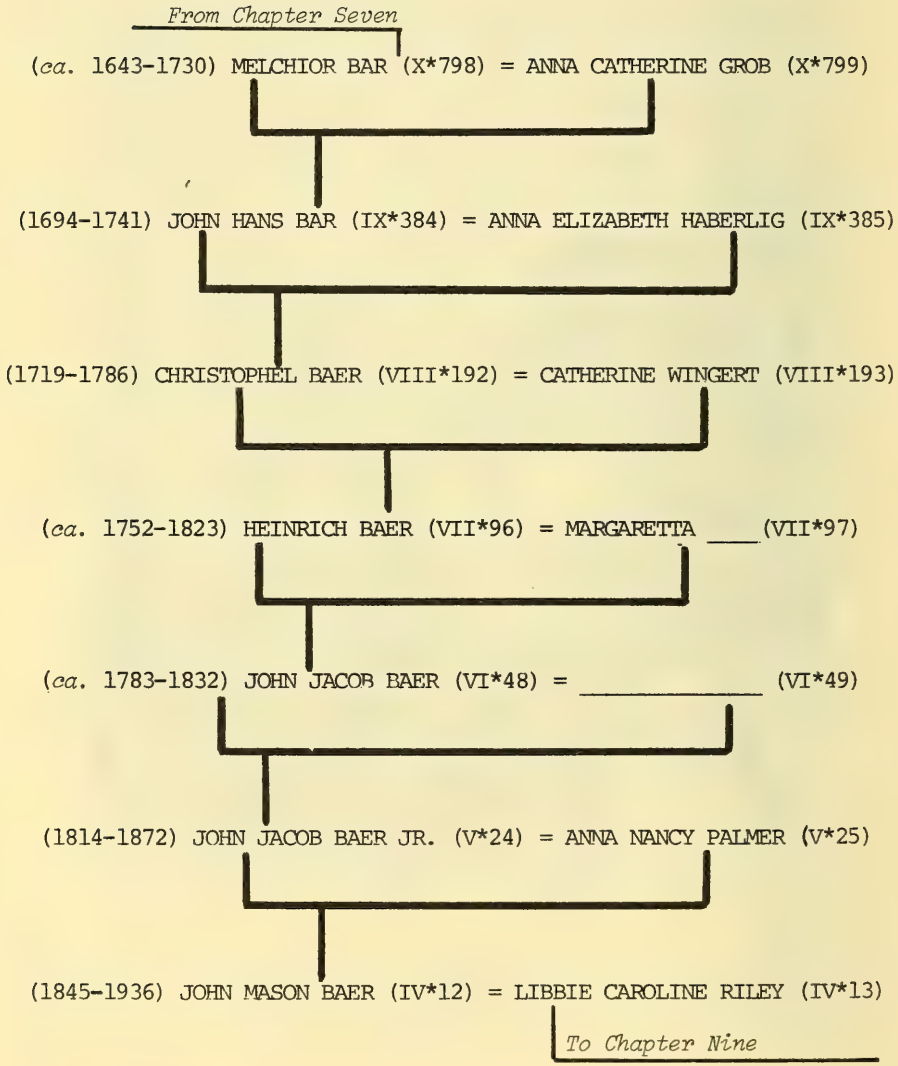
The next job was with Remington Rand's punched card Powers Division in Chicago. That lasted all of one year. My boss and the seven men he had hired over the years were fired outright, including me. The early 1930's were difficult times, not so much for me as for established families that found their incomes suddenly vanishing. More than one employee was called into the boss's office and asked: "What is the smallest possible amount of money you and your family can live on? Give me the absolute bottom figure you need for bare existence, and that we will pay you." The alternative was no job at all.

My father, FRANK, managed to keep his job with The Mueller Company, and during the Depression he always had a steady income, albeit not great. Our family never faced the economic hardship that afflicted most families during the thirties.

By 1932, in the depths of the Depression, I had lined up a job handling fraternity alumni relations at Purdue University in Lafayette, Indiana. This had met with some success, at least when measured in terms of one's ability to pay minimum rent and buy food. However, more important, BESS BAER was teaching and receiving a steady income, a rarity for those days. Moreover, she was being paid on a twelve month basis. So it was that with her three months' summer income pending BESS BAER and I decided to get married in June of 1933.

HENRY JAMES O'DELL *in his Masonic garb during his membership in the F. and A. Masons in Port Huron, Michigan, during the 1890's and early 1900's.*

8


From Chapter Seven
(ca. 1643-1730) MELCHIOR BAR (X*798) = ANNA CATHERINE GROB (X*799)
(1694-1741) JOHN HANS BAR (IX*384) = ANNA ELIZABETH HABERLIG (IX*385)
(1719-1786) CHRISTOPHEL BAER (VIII*192) = CATHERINE WINGERT (VIII*193)
(ca. 1752-1823) HEINRICH BAER (VII*96) = MARGARETTA ____ (VII*97)
(ca. 1783-1832) JOHN JACOB BAER (VI*48) = _____ (VI*49)
(1814-1872) JOHN JACOB BAER JR. (V*24) = ANNA NANCY PALMER (V*25)
(1845-1936) JOHN MASON BAER (IV*12) = LIBBIE CAROLINE RILEY (IV*13)
To Chapter Nine

CHAPTER EIGHT — Bar/Baer

MELCHIOR BÄR (X*798) was a Swiss. As a boy, he grew up in Ottenbach in the territory of Knonau of Canton (state) of Zurich. In school he had learned of the serious problems facing Switzerland, many of these growing out of the numerous wars, skirmishes and dynastic struggles that had engulfed central Europe during the 1600's.[1]

MELCHIOR was born on 23 May 1643. As he approached manhood, he saw Switzerland growing in its prosperity that was being created by constant warring in Europe. But a depression soon emerged, and Switzerland found itself depending on home industries, especially Canton Zurich where the winter weather forced most workers into such indoor activities as wood carving, spinning, framework knitting and embroidery. The ready availability of water power resulted in successful textile manufacturing.

MELCHIOR BÄR was a farmer, and farming was not faring as well as the manufacturing industries. The soil of Switzerland, even though every possible square inch was carefully cultivated, could not support the country's

---

[1] The genealogical data on the Bär family in Switzerland are based largely on research conducted by and for John E. Fetzger, as published in his book *The Men from Wenger and America's Agony -- The Wenger-Winger-Wanger History* (1971), pp. 183, 184; also from Prof. Hermann F. Macco, *Swiss Emigrants to the Palatinate in Germany and America 1650-1800* (LDS microfilms 823, 861 and 862).

With further regard to the early Bär families in Switzerland an article appeared in the 29 August 1911 issue of *The Allentown Morning Call* (Allentown, Pennsylvania), p. 12, describing a paper presented by the Rev. John Baer Staudt to a Baer reunion. Rev. Staudt, in an extremely lengthy dissertation, tells of Zachariah Ursinus (Latin for Baer) born in 1534 who drew up the "Heidelberg Catechism" in about 1564 that was "the fruit and flower of the entire German and French Reformation." The Catechism was repressed by the rulers of the day, but Ursinus received acclaim among his compatriots for his contribution. The Rev. Staudt claims that the early Bärs of Switzerland were related to this Ursinus, but he quotes no sources.

One reason for doubting the relationship of Ursinus with the Swiss Bärs is that the Latin name Ursinus was given only to highly respected persons, such as a government official, pastor, or professor. Descendants of Ursinus would be very unlikely to drop the prestigious use of the Latin name. It would appear that the MELCHOIR BÄR family and his descendants were people of the soil.

While it is true that MELCHOIR was a school teacher, this was rather late in life and not his primary occupation. It would seem, though, that the Bärs of Ottenbach were one of the old, established families in the community inasmuch as they had a coat of arms (the bear carrying three sheaves). Only the better established families had coats of arms.

growing population. Moreover, many difficulties were burdening the Swiss farmer because of the levies being made upon them by the city dwellers. MELCHIOR, when bringing his produce to market, was finding more and more bridge tolls being imposed on his travel. This, coupled with his inability to obtain a fair price for his farm goods, made farming less and less attractive. A peasant revolt emerged in 1653. By the time MELCHIOR was in his early thirties, he thought of leaving Switzerland and emigrating to Germany to the north.

The Thirty Years War, concluded in 1648, had affected Germany more than any other European country. Moreover, in Germany the Reformation had resulted in a permanent split among the three religious factions: Catholic, Lutheran, and Calvinist. These doctrinal divisions were aggravated by dynastic rivalries, such as the Catholics of Bavaria and the Calvinists of Heidelberg (the Palatinate).

These Catholic and Protestant struggles brought destruction and ruin to Germany's countryside -- not so much by death on the battlefields, but more by epidemics, especially typhoid and venereal disease spread by soldiers and refugees. A lack of any realistic attempt to encourage hygiene, plus incompetence of doctors, increased the deaths.

All of this resulted in a great decline in the number of German farmers. Most farms in that southwestern section of Germany near Switzerland lay unpopulated, overrun by armies, and unworked. One community of 250 persons was reduced to three. German princes urged Swiss to come to Germany and rebuild their farms and towns.[2]

MELCHIOR BÄR decided to move to the Palatinate of Germany where he and his family could work one of the devastated farms. Other Bärs in his home area of Ottenbach in the territory of Knonau of Canton Zurich also made plans to emigrate. So, near the end of the 1600's, MELCHIOR BÄR and his family turned away from years and even centuries of past Bär generations of Swiss and set out for the Palatinate of Germany, some 200 miles north along the Rhine River.

MELCHIOR'S ancestors, all German-speaking Swiss, were, as far back as he could remember, a part of the Reformed Church of Switzerland that grew out of the Reformation of the early 1500's. It was at that time that virtually all families in the Zurich area became a part

---

[2]From *The Palatine Immigrant*, Quarterly Journal of Palatines to America, Vol. V, No. 1, p. 74.

of the Zurich Reformation. As Protestants they joined others in Switzerland and southern Germany in attempting to end the abuses of the papacy and the Roman Church.

THE SWISS BÄRS lived in Canton Zurich during the 1600's, and then traveled up the Rhine to Zweibrüchen in the Palatinate of Germany in 1695.

Zurich was the center of a movement to return the church to the people. Leading reformists of the day sought practical changes that could be translated into the everyday life of church members, be they city dwellers or farmers. Support for the Reformation grew stronger and finally, in Canton Zurich, the population was virtually all protestant.

When MELCHIOR BÄR and his family arrived in Reischweiler, only a few miles from Zweibrücken near the Rhine, they found a German Reformed Church that was highly similar to their former church in their Swiss canton. They became "Church Germans," part of an established church. They worshipped in church buildings, in contrast to "house Germans" such as the Amish and some of the Mennonites. The latter two, also of Swiss origin, sought secrecy in their worship for their own safety from the rulers of the day. The Bärs had their own Heidelberg Catechism and a hymnal that allowed them to follow an accepted order of worship during their sabbath services.

MELCHIOR BÄR farmed in the area of Reischweiler. He also taught school from 1721 to 1731. His first wife, ANNA CATHERINA GROB (X*799), died in 1725 at the age of 60. MELCHIOR remarried in 1726 to Elizabeth Abeckley of Oberhaslt, Canton Zurich.

One of MELCHIOR'S sons was JOHANNES (JOHN HANS) BÄR (IX*384), born on 2 September 1694. JOHANNES was only one year old when his father's family made the journey from Canton, Zurich, to Reischweiler in the Palatinate.

After growing into manhood JOHANNES farmed the "Barenhutte" near Nünschweiler, only a mile and a half south of Reischweiler.[3] He married ANNA ELIZABETH HABERLIG (IX*385) on 20 January 1719 at Huberhof, Zweibrucken. Their sons included CHRISTOPHEL (VIII*192), born 27 October 1719, and Melchior, born 13 May 1723. A middle son, Heinrich, was born in 1722, but died on 10 November 1724.

Both JOHANNES BÄR and his father, MELCHIOR, were tenant farmers. Their lives were never secure, living under cruel feudal conditions. Wars in which Germany was an active participant led to daily worry on the part of every peasant and farmer. There was the War of Spanish Succession, from 1700 to 1714, with some of the warfare taking place along the Rhine. Then there were other Wars of Succession -- Polish, from 1733 to 1735, and Austrian, from 1740 to 1748. The latter war in particular wrought havoc on German farmers in the Palatinate.

Frederick II of Prussia sought to influence the future of Maria Theresa, a daughter of Charles VI when he died in 1740. When she refused to cede him part of Silesia, a Prussian province, he decided to take it by force. The French and British, also involved, fought near the Rhine, and Austrians were planning in 1742 to move from southern Germany across the Rhine. All of this was severely affecting German farmers and their ability to carry on a normal farming and marketing operation.

---

[3]The relationship between these generations of Bärs has been difficult to document. The MELCHOIR BÄR who was born in Switzerland in 1643 is thought by some genealogists to be the father of the JOHANNES BAR, born 1694. Other contend that this MELCHOIR, who remarried in 1726, had three children by his second wife. This seems unlikely in that MELCHOIR would have been 83 at the time of the second marriage. It is probable that the data uncovered to date have skipped a generation.

Having their own "Barenhutte" suggests that they were "free" citizens, obligated only to pay taxes and serve in the military, but free to move and sell the land.

With this constant feeling of economic and religious insecurity, the Bärs and others found their only hope lay in hard work and prayer. But great pressure from the rulers to force the Protestant Germans into Catholicism continued. Louis XIV brought new fear into their lives when he revoked the Edict of Nantes which, many years earlier, had resulted in a measure of religious freedom.

JOHANNES BÄR, now in his forties, urged his sons CHRISTOPHEL, Johannes and Melchior to leave the Palatinate -- if they were to hold to their faith. The alternative was to succumb, and be converted to Catholicism. But more than that, there was continual fighting, even among their German neighbors. With numerous religious organizations abounding, German was fighting German. There were hundreds of sects, and each competed with the others.

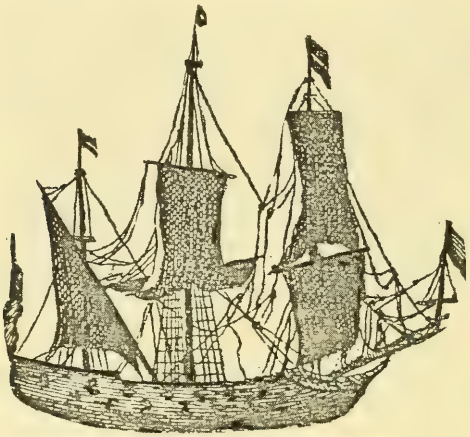
Word was reaching the Bärs and others about the "Pennsylvania Island," in the New World. William Penn was urging Palatines from the area of the Rhine to go to America. The praise being heaped upon Pennsylvania in letters from neighbors who had already fled to the New World was almost unbelievable. JOHANNES' three sons, CHRISTOPHEL, Johannes and Melchior, made the decision to leave their parents and depart for Pennsylvania.[4] CHRISTOPHEL was married to CATHERINE WINGERT (VIII*193) of Böckweiler. With other migrants, they gathered at Rotterdam in The Netherlands after coming down the Rhine from their farms. The Bärs found Rotterdam to be a startling place. They had never seen as large a city before: the impressive docking facilities, the large markets, the bustling and crowded streets.

The Bärs were among thousands of Germans enroute to America. The first move was to book passage. They worked out an arrangement with the captain of the *Phoenix* whereby each would pay ten pounds for passage upon the completion of the voyage. In addition, the captain

---

[4]These three Bärs are listed in Vol. 2 of *Pennsylvania German Pioneers* by Ralph Beaver Strassburger and edited by William John Hinke, published by the Pennsylvania German Society in 1934. Baer genealogists disagree as to the relationship of the three immigrants. It seems clear that CHRISTOFEL and Melchoir were brothers. But Johannes Bär's relationship remains a mystery. He could be their father, but some records show the father as dying in 1741 in Germany. Johannes could be the brother, born in 1722. However, some records show him as dying less than two years after his birth. The Johannes Bär is known to have raised a large family in Pennsylvania, suggesting that it is more likely that he would be a brother rather than the father.

charged another three pounds for the food he was to supply, payable in cash. Most of the passengers could not pay cash, and these would end up as indentured servants upon their arrival in Philadelphia.



PASSENGER SHIP used by Palatines during their voyages across the Atlantic Ocean between Rotterdam and Philadelphia in the middle 1700's.

The Bärs embarked during the summer of 1743. They stopped in Cowes on England's Isle of Wight, where the captain replenished his supplies, and passengers registered for clearance to the Colonies. There were 268 passengers aboard as the ship headed out into the Atlantic for its six-to-eight week voyage.

The word that had reached the Bär family in Zweibrücken before the decision to emigrate came largely from Germans who had been living in Pennsylvania for some ten or 20 years. These earlier groups, mostly from the Palatinate, began their arrivals in 1717, some 25 years before the Bärs landed. The first three shiploads to disembark in Philadelphia contained 363 Palatines, very few of whom could speak English.[5] The English Governor was distressed by this number of non-Britons being

---

[5]Much of the discussion of the Bär trio in Philadelphia is drawn from *The Pennsylvania Dutch* by William T. Parsons (Twayne Publishers, 1976). That CHRISTOPHEL BAER is the progenitor of the line of Baers covered in this history is strengthened by a statement written in the 1920's by the wife of a great grandson of CHRISTOPHEL. She was LIBBIE RILEY BAER, wife of CAPTAIN JOHN MASON BAER. Her statement follows:

JOHN MASON BAER is the direct lineal descendant of CHRISTOPHEL BAER and his wife CATHERINE WINGERT who came to

landed, feeling that as the number grew it would post a serious threat to the existing province. "Enemys might throw themselves upon us."[6]

He suggested that all German immigrants be required to take an oath of allegiance to His Majesty, George I. The only exceptions were those from Braunscheig and Hanover, immigrants already subjects of King George. This was ultimately placed into operation, but only after a dozen years went by and more than 15,000 Germans had arrived at the Port of Philadelphia.

These earlier Germans were not well accepted by the English already in Pennsylvania. The Germans continued to use their own language, and this proved to be unpopular among the English. However, the Germans had equal access to land so cheap that it could be considered virtually free. These early Pennsylvania Germans chose their own occupations, a practice unheard of in their native country. That they could advance in economic status and social level was a condition that they found hard to believe. But it was to be, and these industrious and intelligent German people made it work.

It was September, 1743, when the *Phoenix* completed its voyage with the three Bärs aboard. Some 50,000 German immigrants had preceded them to Pennsylvania. As the ship glided along the smooth flowing Delaware River,

5 cont'd.

America in 1742 (sic) from Boilweiter, Zweibrücken, Germany. This fact is proven by interesting letters and legal documents in the possession of CAPTAIN BAER, and others in the archives of the Baer family association, incorporated at Emmaus, Pennsylvania. Three of the interesting documents bear the testimony of three of CAPTAIN BAER'S ancestors in the German language, sworn to before justices of the peace, bearing the justices' seals and the seal of the Prussian consul in Baltimore. And most important of all, the seal of the U. S. Secretary of State and the signature of John Quincy Adams, the fourth president of the U. S. who was Secretary of State when the documents were signed by him on 18 October 1821.

The Baer association records refer most likely to the Baer family reunions held annually for some 50 years at Kutztown, Pennsylvania. However, the gatherings were discontinued during World War II. The records of those meetings have not been located. The reference to the signing of papers by John Quincy Adams on 18 October 1821 probably pertains to the purchase of patented land by a Baer, perhaps in Ohio when the Baers left Pennsylvania for Ohio. The "interesting letters and legal documents in the possession of CAPTAIN BAER" have never been found.

[6] As stated by William Keith to the Provincial Councillors, February 1717, *Colonial Records, III* pp. 27-29.

the Bärs were reminded of their Rhine River. The sight of Philadelphia brought great excitement to the passengers, only to have it suppressed when the ship anchored in the Delaware for days with no one allowed ashore.

This restriction was due to the need for the captain to make certain that all passenger debts had been paid. Also, the purchase or assignment of indentures had to be completed, and a physician had to certify the absence of contagious disease. Finally, on 30 September 1743, CHRISTOPHEL, Melchior and Johannes took the Oath of Allegiance, after paying an additional duty of two pounds.[7] Three out of four of the German passengers were able to sign their own names, including the three Bärs.

At last they walked off the ship onto solid land. This was America. This was Pennsylvania. This was Philadelphia: a thriving city of some 16,000 bustling people, most of whom were German immigrants.

It was a strange country, and a strange city. They were sworn in as citizens at the Philadelphia courthouse. For a time the brothers were confused. None spoke English. The streets crawled with confidence men, offering the frightened and often hungry immigrants false opportunities to buy land. But the Bär trio found the city exciting. Its streets were wide, on high ground, with no fortifications or town wall or ruins to remind them of their hardships of the past.

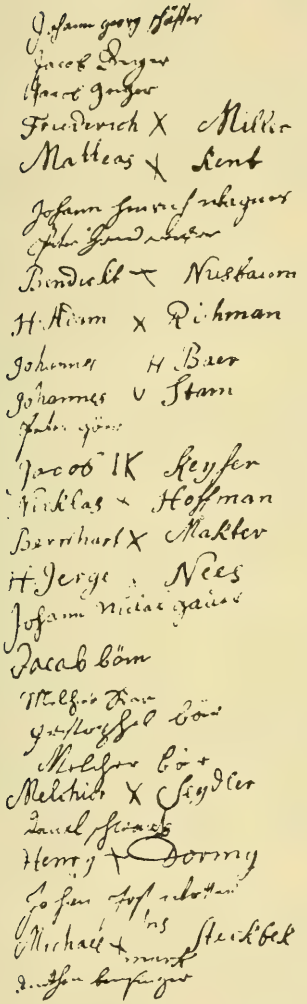
The first move of the Bär pioneers was to seek out the possibilities of land purchases. They discovered that earlier arrivals had already assumed ownership of land suitable for cultivation in the areas surrounding Philadelphia. The English, Welsh, and Quakers had absorbed the open meadow land nearby. This forced the German immigrants into the interior. CHRISTOPHEL was told of some land in Northampton County near Coplay Creek that flowed into the Lehigh River -- in Whitehall Township.[8]

It was a primeval forest, with hills and valleys that would remind him of the homeland. Too, he reasoned,

---

[7] One Baer historian states that the *Phoenix* arrived in Philadelphia on 1 August, suggesting that the ship was delayed for nearly two months before disembarkation. The date of the Bärs taking the Oath of Allegiance is known to be 30 September 1743, and it is unlikely that the ship arrived at the port on that date.

[8] Northampton County was not formed until 1852, it being a part of Bucks County in 1743 when CHRISTOPHEL and CATHERINE made their way to their acreage. This part of Northampton County became Lehigh County in 1812.



Johann Georg Schäffer
Jacob Geiger
Jacob Geiger
Friederich (X) Miller
Matteas ( ) Kent
Johann Henrich Wagner
Peter Handwercker
Bendickt ( ) Nusbaum
H. Adam (X) Richman

Johannes (H) Baer

Johannes (O) Stam
Peter Göer
Jacob (IK) Keyser
Nicklas ( ) Hoffman
Bernhart ( ) Makter
H. Jerge (H) Nees
Johann Nickal Gauer
Jacob Böm

Melchior Bär
Christophel Bär
Melcher Bär

Melchior ( ) Seydler
Danel Schwartz
Henry ( ) Dornig
Johan Jost Wetter
Michael ( ) Steckbek
Anthon Bensinger

BÄR SIGNATURES OF CHRISTOPHEL, JOHANNES AND MELCHIOR *in 1743 when immigrants from Germany signed the Oath of Allegiance to His Majesty, King George I of England (from Strassburger and Hinke, Pennsylvania German Pioneers, Vol. 2, 1934; published by the Pennsylvania German Society, pp. 346, 361.) The listing of "Melcher" Bär in the English translation appears to be in error.*

land that would support heavy timber must be rich soil. The area of Northampton County was virtually unknown territory to the white man. Only the Delaware Indians knew the countryside well. In 1737, just six years earlier, Pennsylvania had concluded a purchase agreement with the Delawares, clearing the way for settlements by the Germans and any others willing to face the hardships of the wilderness.

CHRISTOPHEL and his wife CATHERINE made their way through 50 miles of Indian trails to the tracts of land they found to their liking. They worked out a purchase plan with the government for the acquisition of 456 acres of patent land.[9] The price was 41¢ an acre.

He was told that it would be well for him to Anglicize his name; thus "CHRISTOPHEL" became "CHRISTOPHER." BÄR was changed to "BAER." Even so, his German nickname stayed with him: "STOFFEL."

The first obvious step facing STOFFEL was the building of a log cabin, a one-room structure with an earthen floor. As was the practice, neighbors helped erect the small home. Stoffel, in turn, aided his new neighbors with their buildings. The Baer cabin was nothing more than a hut, an interim home aimed at housing STOFFEL and CATHERINE during the several months required for the necessary clearing of the land for farming.

STOFFEL employed two methods of clearing his land of timber. One was the process of girdling, or belting, which consisted of chopping a ring out of the bark entirely around the tree, three or four inches wide. In this way the sap taken up through the roots was checked and the upper part of the tree gradually died. Pine died rather quickly, while oaks often lived for two or three years after being girdled. The obvious advantage of this method was the elimination of labor required for chopping down the trees.[10]

The second method was the straightforward chopping with axe. While considerably more labor was required for this latter approach to clearing the trees, it could be accomplished as fast as STOFFEL had the time and energy. But the motivation was great. He and his wife

---

[9]The deed for six tracts of land along Coplay Creek was issued 13 years later to CHRISTOPHER BAER on 9 October 1756. (From Alfred Mathews and Austin N. Hungerford *History of Lehigh and Carbon Counties, Pennsylvania*, Philadelphia, 1884; p. 518.)

[10]Some of the descriptions of early German settlers in Northampton County are drawn from *History of Lehigh County, Pennsylvania*, by Charles Rhoads Roberts, Allentown, Pennsylvania, 1914.

EARLY MAP OF NORTH WHITEHALL TOWNSHIP, LEHIGH COUNTY, PENNSYLVANIA, *showing locations of* CHRISTOPHEL BAER'S *land holdings in area of Coplay Creek (from map in Lehigh County Historical Society, Allentown, Pennsylvania).*

had their own land -- hundreds of acres -- and they felt that life was beginning anew. No longer existed the threats of successive religious wars or governmental persecution. Instead there was freedom of worship in this colony founded by William Penn, and for the deeply religious STOFFEL and CATHERINE this was a vital part of their zest for living in Pennsylvania and America.

Soon sufficient land was cleared for the planting of a garden near the Baer cabin. Vegetables and potatoes were grown here. As more land was cleared STOFFEL planted wheat and rye. Soon he was able to sell the wheat for a profit. He and CATHERINE usually ate Indian corn or rye, whichever was less valuable on the market. Their meals were comprised largely of vegetables, such as turnips, cabbage and onions. The cabbage would often be made into "sourcrout." Boiled animal food was consumed in small amounts.

The knowledge and skills of STOFFEL and his German farmer friends were admired by the English with whom they came in contact. The Germans had had considerable farming experience, and their knowledge of fertilizing with animal manure and crop rotation was vastly superior to the Englishmen who often failed to practice these advanced farming techniques. Moreover, the Germans were industrious, most willing to work hard to achieve their goals. Soon the Germans were recognized throughout eastern Pennsylvania as contributing greatly to the economy of the province.

STOFFEL and CATHERINE found their first winder one of extreme hardship. Their crude cabin offered insufficient protection from the cold eastern Pennsylvania weather. Their clothing was inadequate simply because there had not been sufficient time to prepare for the winter months that came upon them so soon.

While the land was being cleared, the cabin built and seed for vegetables sown, STOFFEL was able to kill sufficient deer and sheep for his breeches and a coat. CATHERINE, the next year, began her spinning of the tow and flax for their clothing. The growing and preparation of the flax was a time-consuming activity.

Only the best soil was used for the growing of flax. After harvest it was drawn into bunches, with 10 or 12 being tied together to form a shock. After standing until the tops became dry and brown, the seed ends were beaten on top of a barrel to remove the seed.

The flax was then taken to a clean area of a field where it was spread and left for several weeks until the sunshine and rain had made the inner part brittle and

the outer part tough. At this point the flax was rebound and stored until it was broken. Then followed the processes of "hackling" and "swingling." In all, preparation of flax for use by CATHERINE was essential to the pioneer family which had little access to the few existing market places of the county during the 1740's.

The spinning of the flax was equally demanding, and was done almost entirely by CATHERINE and other pioneer women. A spinning wheel was one of their first acquisitions. After spinning came the weaving, resulting in material usually one yard wide. The linen cloth was used for shirts, summer clothing, bedding, table cloths and towels.[11]

STOFFEL and CATHERINE were constantly on the alert for any problems with Indians who remained in the area. When the 1737 Purchase Agreement with the Delaware Indians was completed many German families moved onto the land that became available, often before the deeds had been recorded. In any event, Indians or not, they settled where dangers existed. Some Germans traveled out among the Indians. Others began trading with the Indians who would bring furs and pelts into the settlements.

However, as time passed the Indians in eastern Pennsylvania became more and more hostile. During the middle 1700's, the French were attempting to acquire the great middle section of the North American continent and were being resisted by the English who controlled the eastern section. The French were constantly encouraging the Indians to resist the English and within ten years after CHRISTOPHER landed in Pennsylvania a war with the French and Indians became imminent.

In 1755 young George Washington and other Virginians under General Edward Craddock had lost a skirmish with the French and Indian forces in southwestern Pennsylvania. Later the British army was virtually destroyed. This situation freed the Indians of western Pennsylvania and they began joining forces with others as they moved on to the more settled areas of Northampton and other counties to the east.

The Amish and Mennonite families were passive in their resistance due to their religious convictions that "no man should at any time take up arms in warfare." STOFFEL and other Church Germans, however, made a stand, often from their homes that had been made into fortified structures for protection against the Indians.

As the fighting gained momentum between the English

---

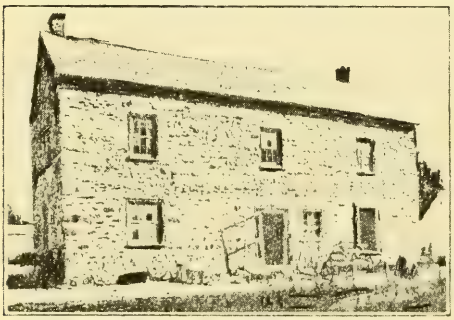
[11] *Op cit*, Parsons, *The Pennsylvania Dutch*, p. 65.

on the one side and the French and Indians on the other the "French and Indian War" became much more violent. Unfortunately, the English were suspicious of all Germans, not differentiating between Church Germans who were sympathetic to the British cause and the Amish, Mennonites, Moravians and others who insisted on remaining neutral. Anyone who spoke a foreign language was cast in a suspect role. Germans were sometimes accused of disloyalty.

The Church Germans of Northampton County, however, volunteered for regular units as well as the militia. They were expert with their long Pennsylvania rifles, and experienced in frontier survival. However, being thrown into units commanded by officers who spoke only English worked hardships on the Germans who knew only German. Thus, they were only mildly effective as soldiers in the war.

Indian attacks continued to take place near the home of STOFFEL BAER. On 8 October 1763, just two miles east of STOFFEL'S home, a group of disgruntled Indians killed a number of soldiers at John Stenton's Tavern and then turned on settlers in the area, scalping them and burning their homes.

The Baers were horrified to learn the next morning that the Indians had extended their massacre. The Indians had come within a few hundred yards of the Baers as the Red Men traveled east to the Lehigh River where they encountered three children of John Jacob Mickley, friends of STOFFEL and CATHERINE. Two of the three children were massacred. The Indians crossed the river at Indian Fall where the killings and scalpings continued.



CHRISTOPHER BAER HOMESTEAD in North Whitehall Township, Lehigh County, Pa. It was used as an "Indian Fort" during uprisings. The structure was standing as late as 1914.

CHRISTOPHER BAER urged his neighbors to take refuge in his stone house, and soon his place was called the "Indian Fort." However, as the situation became more grim, it was decided to move everyone to nearby Fort Deshler where soldiers were stationed. The military men pursued the Indians but none was caught. CHRISTOPHER, along with his neighbors, found it difficult to understand why the Indians insisted on harming them, for no German had ever as much as molested an Indian unless attacked.

The British finally prevailed over the Indians and peace treaty terms were agreed upon in 1763 -- some 20 years after the Baers arrived in America. Included in the Proclamation of 1763 was the establishment of a western frontier along the ridge of the Appalachian Mountains some 45 miles west of the Baer farm. The Indians were to retreat to that line, and the Pennsylvania settlers were to remain on the eastern side of the frontier.

By 1764, except for a few raids by the Ottawa Chief Pontiac, the threat of Indians to the Baers and their neighbors declined considerably. A more normal life began to emerge for STOFFEL and CATHERINE.

STOFFEL'S zeal for religious life was not the least dimmed by the heavy time consuming demands of survival in the wilderness. While many German sects developed during the 1700's in eastern Pennsylvania, STOFFEL and CATHERINE held to the beliefs of the German Reformed Church. As Northampton County became more and more populated small communities grew, all with their churches competing with each other.

The Church Germans of the German Reformed believed in a trained, educated, consecrated ministry which led their worships. The members elected church councils that assisted the pastors in practical, mundane matters of the churches. Services were conducted in German, the language of their Bible, along with their hymn books and prayer books.[12]

STOFFEL valued his Bible. Like other German Reformed Church members, he believed that the Holy Scriptures of the Old and New Testaments were the Word of God and the rules to guide himself and all who were of the Christian faith and practice.

In 1755 the Reformed congregation of North Whitehall built its first church, a log structure some 50 feet in length. Neighbors of the Baers, the Schlosser family, donated the land at Unionville, and most people called it Schlosser's Church. STOFFEL, CATHERINE and their children were strong and dynamic members. Their church was one of some 40 German Reformed churches in that area of Pennsylvania between Philadelphia and the Blue Mountains to the northwest of the Baer farms.

These early churches faced problems. First, the scattered locations of the Reformed Church members made

---

[12] William T. Parsons, *German Reformed Experience in Colonial America*, (Philadelphia: United Church Press, 1976), pp. 4-7. Also, Gladys M. Lutz, *The Early History of North Whitehall Township*, published by the township's Bicentennial Historical Committee.

the continued success of their organizations precarious. This was solved, at least in part, by forming union churches with the German Lutherans. The latter were numerous in Northhampton County, and while the two German-speaking groups had a few theological differences they agreed on major issues. Certainly the Reformed Germans and the Lutherans found it advantageous to share single buildings and the accompanying expenditures. Each, however, held its own separate service.

THE UNION CHURCH, a stone structure, replaced the old log church in 1797. It was located near the Old Union Graveyard where many Baers are buried.

The second problem of the German Reformed Churches, and one that faced Schlosser's Church in Whitehall Township was the obtaining of competent clergymen. Most of the churches were poor, and they received no financial aid from the government, as in Europe. This resulted in a paucity of pastors willing to leave the homeland and serve in the New World, knowing that they would receive little remuneration.

To fill the void school teachers and other lay persons were drawn into religious service. This led to active debate within the churches themselves, many members complaining that ordination was crucial, but as more and more Germans arrived in America, many moving into Northampton County, this problem was often ignored by the congregations. Instead, lay members like CHRISTOPHER BAER entered into the church organization and carried on until in later years ministers would ride the circuit and serve several churches. By 1764 Schlosser's Church had its own minister, John Daniel Gross.

During these years CHRISTOPHER continued his farming. He built the Stoffel Baer Mill on Hokendauqua Creek. He owned "2 draught Horses."[13] By the early

[13] The mill apparently survived for 150 years or more, not being demolished until 1920. (William J. Heller, "Northampton County, Pennsylvania" in *American Historical Society*, 1920, pp. 502, 503.) Also, *History of Lehigh County, Pennsylvania, Vol. I*, (Lehigh Valley Publishing Co., Allentown, Pennsylvania, 1914), p. 96. CHRISTOPHER BÄR was named in connection with the following for Whitehall Township: "A list of wagons, Draught and Pack Horses .... returned to me by the constables for his Honour, the Governor. (s) John Renker, Sheriff."

1760's CHRISTOPHER and CATHERINE had produced six children, including HEINRICH BAER (VII*96).[14] He was the oldest, having three brothers and two sisters.[15]

During the middle 1770's young HEINRICH BAER was an avid listener to the discussions among the Reformed Germans in Northampton County regarding the tension building between the Colonies and England. Word had reached southeast Pennsylvania about the unsettling events in Boston where many residents of that New England city were urging an open war with the British over several acts by the British Parliament that placed taxes and other levies on Massachusetts. Most Bostonians, and others throughout the several colonies, were willing to face their homeland in war unless they were treated more fairly.

Many of the Colonists, however, opposed such a break with England. But they were outnumbered in Massachusetts. In Northampton County of Pennsylvania, most Reformed Germans took the side of the American Colonies which, in 1776, decided to go to war against their home country.

The Church Germans of Northampton County demonstrated their zeal for the Patriot cause by joining Washington's forces in Massachusetts during the early days of the War. But the pacifist Germans, the Mennonites, the Amish and Brethren, adopted a pietistic attitude whereby they would not take up arms, preferring to remain neutral.

The Church Germans argued that Pennsylvania was their homeland. CHRISTOPHER reminded his family and his friends that he risked the Atlantic voyage and the early hardships so that he and his family would worship in a free country. He was not about to sit idly by while the British forced their will on him and other neighbors.

Pennsylvania was now their only home. William Penn had invited landless, penniless German workers and farmers to come share in a new experiment. Pennsylvania had sheltered them while allowing them to retain their customs and values characteristic of their own life style. These Germans, like the Patriots of Massachusetts, well realized what the Colonies were attempting to achieve:

---

[14] More information on the family of CHRISTOPHER and CATHERINE BAER appears in Appendix A, p. 456.

[15] The birth date of HEINRICH BAER is not known, but is assumed he was the oldest of CHRISTOPHER'S children, almost always being listed first among the children by Baer genealogists. It is assumed that he was born about 1752. Their sixth and youngest child, John Jacob Baer, was born in 1761.

freedom for themselves, and set an example for the entire world by being the first country in centuries to rid itself of the repressive shackles of arbitrary European rulers.

CHRISTOPHER was in his early sixties when word reached Northampton County that the Siege of Yorktown and the subsequent infantry assaults on Lt. Gen. Cornwallis in October of 1781 resulted in a major and final victory for the Continental forces. With Cornwallis' surrender the long war was over.

CHRISTOPHER began a systematic dispersal of his farm lands to his children after the close of the War. HEINRICH, Melchior, Jr., John, Salome, Apollonia, and Jacob all lived in the county.

On 15 August 1786 STOFFEL signed his last will and testament which read in part "....First it is my will that all my just debts and funeral expenses be duly paid. And I give and bequeath to each of my children one new German large folio Bible Nuerenberg of Basil Print to be purchased out of my effects within three years after my decease ....

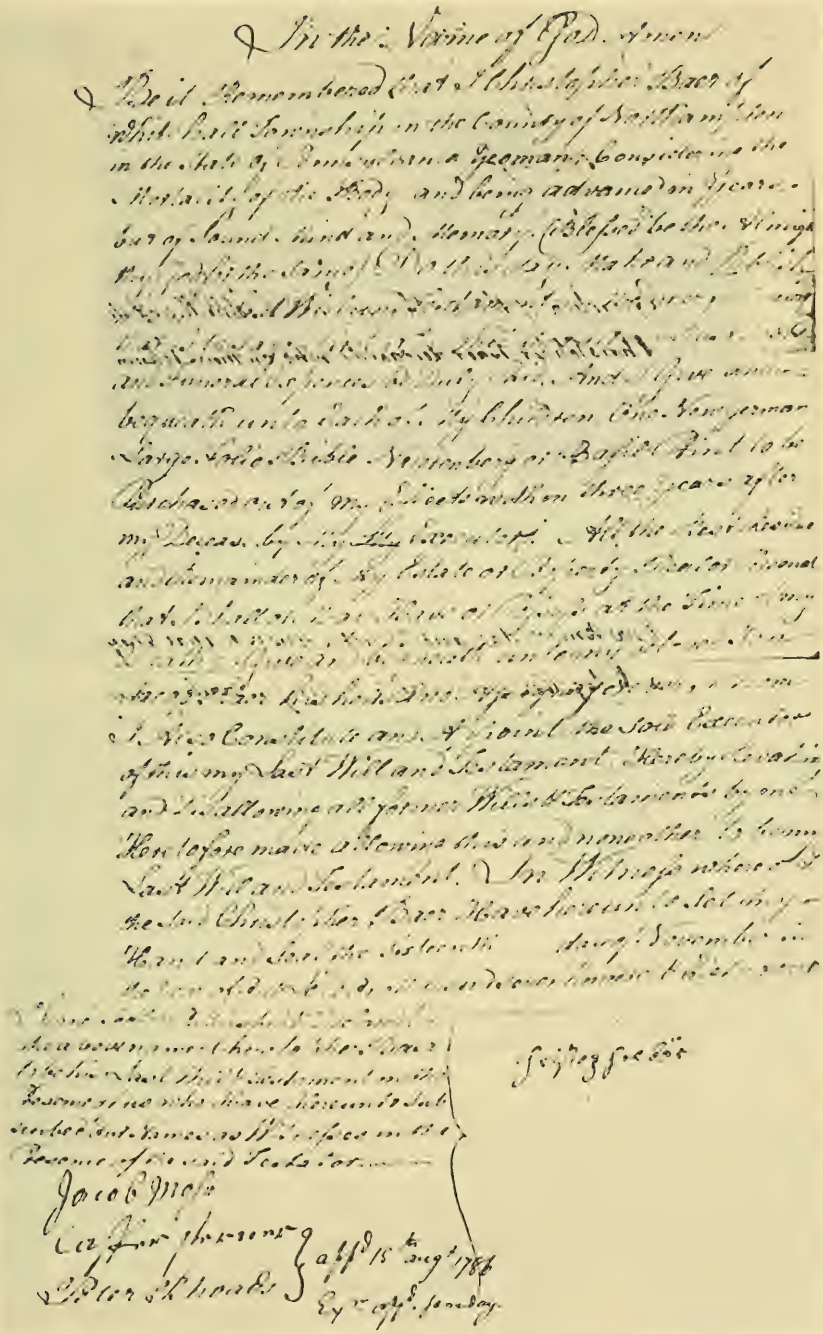
"All the rest Residue and Remainder of my Estate of Property, real or personal ... I give and bequeath to my beloved son Jacob, his heirs and assigns forever, whom I shall also ... appoint the sole executor of this my Last Will and Testament...." He signed his will in German Script.

CHRISTOPHER'S oldest son, HEINRICH, continued to live in Northampton County for several years after his father's death. With the independence from England now virtually complete, the new American government in nearby Philadelphia was taking steps to acquire sufficient funds for the running of the various budding agencies, plus an army and a navy.

In 1785, two years after the close of the Revolutionary War, HEINRICH BAER paid Federal taxes in the amount of nine shillings and two pence. This was based on his ownership of 50 acres in North Whitehall Township, plus two horses and two head of cattle.

Three years later his farm had grown to 80 acres, with his Federal tax being ten shillings and three pence. His brother John, owning his father's farm property, had 180 acres, with two horses and three cattle. His taxes were two pounds, five shillings.

HEINRICH lived in a log house, 30 by 22 feet. John's house was built of stone and was 40 by 24 feet. It was the house that formerly belonged to their father CHRIS-



LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT OF CHRISTOPHER BAER dated 15 August 1786.

TOPHER. A new Federal tax, levied in 1798, was based on the number of windows in a house. HEINRICH'S log cabin had two windows; John's stone house also had two. This

BAER BURIAL GROUND in Old Union Graveyard, originally alongside of Schlosser's Church. The cemetery today is across the road from Neff's Union Church, constructed in 1872. The community of Neffs was laid out in 1840.

resulted in HEINRICH paying a window tax of $200; John paid $280.[16]

This direct tax on property was viewed with great disfavor by the farmers of Northampton County and there was considerable sympathy in support of John Fries who led "Fries Rebellion" against the levying of the tax. Fries was convicted of treason and sentenced to death, but in 1799 President John Adams pardoned him.

HEINRICH and his younger brother John Jacob had talked often about the possibility of leaving Northampton County and moving west. A new part of Pennsylvania was opening up -- out west in the recently formed Somerset County of Pennsylvania. Many German pioneers had already settled there.

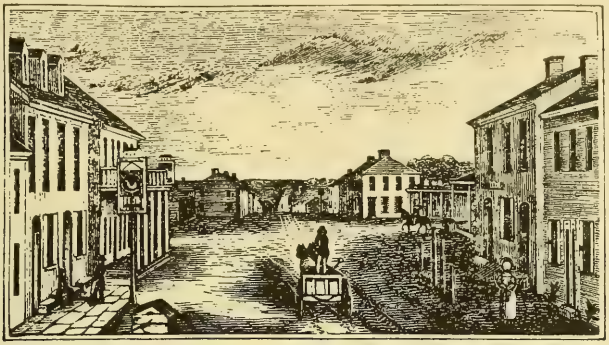
Now approaching 50 years of age, HEINRICH decided that he should make the break while he was still capable of starting a new life. He sold his farm and started his trek west. It was not yet 1800.

Somerset County was comprised of high, rather level table land between the Great Allegheny Mountain and Laurel Hill. These level wet lands, known as glades, were excellent for growing oats, rye and potatoes. These products, even before the turn of the century, were be-

---

[16] U. S. District House Tax, 1798 -- National Archives and Records Service, Washington, D. C.

ginning to have considerable demand by drovers and wagoners crossing the mountains on the "Glade Road."



SOMERSET, PA., as it appeared during the days when JOHN JACOB BAER lived nearby in the early 1800's.

This was the road taken by HEINRICH in 1799 when he headed into the wilderness of western Pennsylvania and settled in Brothers Valley. The Glade Road, in southern Pennsylvania, was pushed through into Somerset in 1772, aided by roads opened by Generals George Washington and John Forbes some 20 years prior.

The earliest pioneer settlers of Brothers Valley were members of the Church of the Brethren, a group of German families from the east coast. They arrived in 1762. They named their new home "Brueders Thal" -- Brothers Valley. But the Indians were prevalent and drove many of these German Baptists out.[17] However, the appeal of Brothers Valley and Somerset County spread and it was to this isolated glades area that HEINRICH BAER traveled some 25 years after the first settlement of those Church of the Brethren Baptists. With him were his wife, MARGARETTA and their young son, JOHN JACOB BAER (VI*48).[18]

---

[17] Jerome E. Blough, *History of the Church of the Brethren of the Western District of Pennsylvania* (Elgin, Illinois: Brethren Publishing House, 1916), pp. 57-59.

[18] There is a record of JOHN JACOB BAER born on 16 October 1783 and baptized on 9 December 1783, son of HEINRICH and MARGARETTA BAER, on page 154 of the Church Records of Schlosser's Church (Union Reformed Church) of Unionville (present day Neffs), North Whitehall Township, Lehigh County, Pennsylvania, translated by William J. Hinke in 1938. It is assumed that this HEINRICH is the son of CHRISTOPHER BAER. No other Henry is known to have been living in North Whitehall Township at this time. HEINRICH BAER is listed in the same records as being a sponsor (Godfather) of two children of friends, in 1777 and again in 1778. The Godparents of HEINRICH'S and MARGARETTA'S son JOHN JACOB were John and Magdalene Schleicher.

He farmed near Brothers Valley and became active in the Church of the Brethren.[19] HEINRICH encountered land ownership problems, because of a dispute between Pennsylvania and Maryland over (what is today) a 70-mile wide strip of southern Pennsylvania. Maryland claimed this strip which included Brothers Valley where HEINRICH and MARGARETTA had settled.

The problem, he learned, was due to the laying out of the original charters for the colonies. Surveys, maps and the "known lay of the land" were highly uncertain. Kings were vague in descriptions and grants, resulting in considerable overlapping. The 40° latitude was the line in question. When land companies and states made reference to this "line" the charters were so ambiguous that it could be interpreted as being on either the north or south side of the line.

HEINRICH and many of his neighbors were not certain as to whether their land was in Pennsylvania or Maryland. Some of the settlers around Brothers Valley actually had their land registered in Maryland.

Several years went by before the issue was resolved, and Somerset County and Brothers Valley remained in Pennsylvania. Some of HEINRICH'S neighbors had become so unhappy with their inability to obtain satisfactory title to their land they pulled up stakes and headed into Ohio

---

18 cont'd.

The naming of JOHN JACOB BAER followed the common practice of Palatine Germans whereby the child was given two baptismal names: a "church name" and an "everyday name." The most usual church name for males was Johannes (John), and for females Anna (Maria). A man was rarely referred to by his church name and then only in conjunction with his everyday name. Thus JOHN JACOB was normally called "JACOB." Only on special occasions, such as a baptism, would both names be used. This practice was less prevalent for females, where the double names were usually used. As can be readily appreciated, this practice leads to considerable confusion on many records. (From *The Palatine Immigrant*, The Quarterly Journal of Palatines to America.)

[19]It is probable that the Church of the Brethren was operating in Brother's Valley late in the 1790's when HEINRICH and his family arrived. His membership in the church, however, has not been documented but it is assumed he was a member based on the thin evidence that many Baer names are found in Brethren historical records. The Church of the Brethren was undoubedly active in the Somerset area during HEINRICH'S time there, but unfortunately there are no written records of the church from 1770 to 1825, according to Jerome E. Blough, *History of the Church of the Brethren of the Western District of Pennsylvania* (Brethren Publishing House, Elgin, Illinois, 1916), p. 59.

which had been admitted to the Union in 1803.[20]

Services for HEINRICH'S Brethren Church were conducted in German. The Bible given him by his father CHRISTOPHER was an important part of his life. "Meetings were held in the dwellings or barns of the members and the neighbors were called in to enjoy the blessing of religious services.... Ministers of the cross preached the unadulterated Word with a zeal and earnestness that made sinners tremble..."[21]

HENRY, as he was often called, was a shoemaker during several of his years in Brothers Valley. His son, JOHN BACOB BAER, was 20 years old in 1803, and after his marriage he, in turn, had a son named after him, JOHN JACOB BAER JR. ((V*24). He was born on 4 July 1812 in Somerset County.[22]

The Baer family moved on to Westmoreland County, Pennsylvania, just to the west of Somerset, and it was here that JOHN JACOB BAER JR. went to a school located between Laurelville and Mount Pleasant on the Glades Road.[23] "Copy books" for the pupils were made of foolscap paper, the teacher writing copies and the pupils imitating as well as they could.

Writing was done with pointed goose quills which the teacher had to cut. Writing the copies and cutting the pens generally took all morning and early afternoon. Only those children bringing paper to school and making copy books were taught writing. JOHN JACOB JR. was one of those who brought the paper to school. His preacher father knew the value of learning to read and write.

* * * *

---

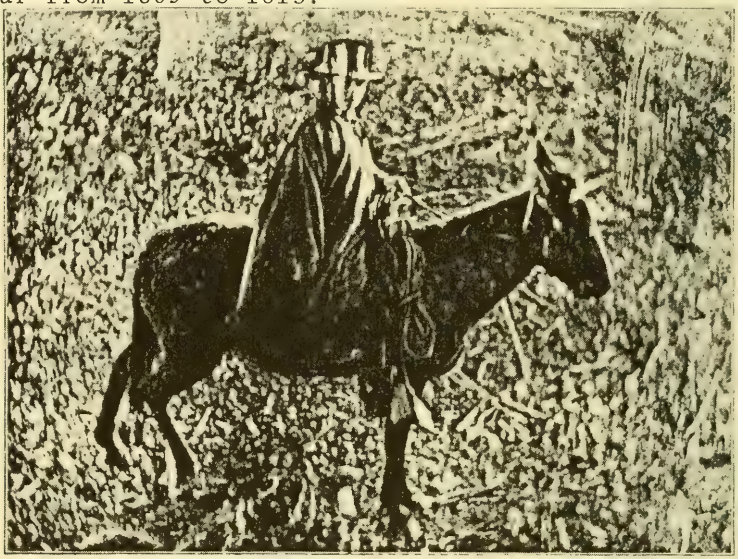
[20]This discussion of the Pennsylvania-Maryland boundary dispute was drawn largely from Florence Clint, *Pennsylvania Area Key* (Logan, Utah: Everton Publishers, Inc.; 1976), pp. 28, 29. This dispute has undoubtedly contributed to the difficulties in documenting HEINRICH BAER land holdings in Somerset County. One Heinrich Baer is listed in Allegany County, Maryland in 1803 as purchasing 66 acres for $400 in the area known as "Grassy Bottom." (Allegany County Records, Vol. V, p. 105). HEINRICH'S brother John Jacob Baer, born 1761, did emigrate to Allegany County in 1800, living in the Mount Savage area some 25 miles from Brother's Valley.

[21]*Two Centuries of the Church of the Brethren in Western Pennsylvania -- 1751-1950* (Brethren Publishing House, Elgin, Illinois, 1953), p. 87.

[22]HENRY BAER'S occupation is based on Somerset County Tax Assessment lists in 1813 and 1814. The 1812 date and place of birth of JOHN JACOB BAER JR. are mentioned on several occasions by his son, JOHN MASON BAER in the latter's biographies.

[23]It is not known that JOHN JACOB BAER JR. did in fact go to this school. Nor is it known for certain that HENRY BAER and his fami-

JOHN JACOB BAER SR. had made an acquaintance while living in Somerset County with the Rev. Christian Newcomer, a preacher with the United Brethren Church in Christ. Rev. Newcomer had visited Somerset almost once a year from 1809 to 1813.



A UNITED BRETHREN CIRCUIT RIDER of the early 1800's

The SENIOR BAER was impressed with the United Brethren Church which had been organized only a few years earlier, in 1800. Its formation sprung from the efforts of two "unsectarian" ministers, William Otterbein and Martin Boehm who, for some 30 years prior to 1800, had been preaching to Germans throughout much of Pennsylvania, Maryland and Virginia.

Otterbein was formerly a member of the German Reformed Church, and Boehm had been a Mennonite. Both had separated themselves from their denominations and, independently "Preached the Word" to meetings usually held in barns or private homes. "Men of high and low degree, representing every phase of religious belief known to the commonwealth .... came from far and near and sat under the spell of Gospel unity.... Souls were saved in overflow meetings..."

The two ministers met on 25 September 1800 in Frederick, Maryland, and there the United Brethren Church in Christ was born.[24] At this meeting, in Issac Long's

---

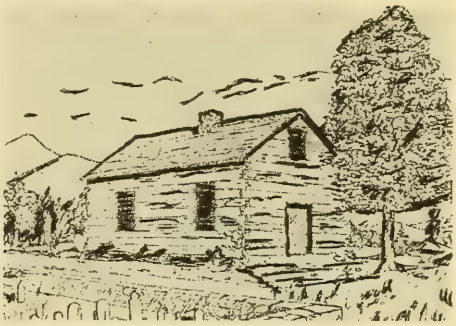
23 cont'd.
ly did in fact move to Westmoreland County. However, Eber Cockley, long-time Somerset County historian, does state that HENRY BAER (and presumably his son JOHN JACOB BAER SR.) did go to Westmoreland County, but Cockley does not give the source of his information.

[24] The Church of the United Brethren in Christ is not to be confused with either the "Church of the Brethren," long active in Somerset

barn, they greeted each other with: *"Wir sind Brueder!"* (We Are Brethren").

Attending this gathering was the Rev. Christian Newcomer. Already he was becoming known as one of the great circuit riders of the day. With the formation of the United Brethren Church in Christ, he could now represent an organized church and preach on its behalf.

Newcomer had begun his preaching during the Revolutionary War, traveling thousands of miles on horseback. He preached almost evevy night, in homes or barns or open fields. By 1813, after both Otterbein and Boehm had died and the infant church was without leadership, the members turned instinctly to Newcomer.



UNITED BRETHREN CHURCH IN CHRIST
Meeting House of Early 1800's

Being the head of the church did not deter Newcomer from continuing his circuit riding. He converted thousands during his horseback travels through Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia, Kentucky and Ohio.[25] It was during his visits to Westmoreland County in 1815 that he arranged for JOHN JACOB BAER SR. to "enter the Conference" of the United Brethren Church during the 1815 Conference in Mt. Pleasant, Pennsylvania.[26]

JOHN JACOB BAER SR. preached on behalf of the Church, and on 11 April 1821 he was ordained at the Church's Conference held in Hagerstown, Maryland on 10 and 11 April 1821. His preaching certificate read:

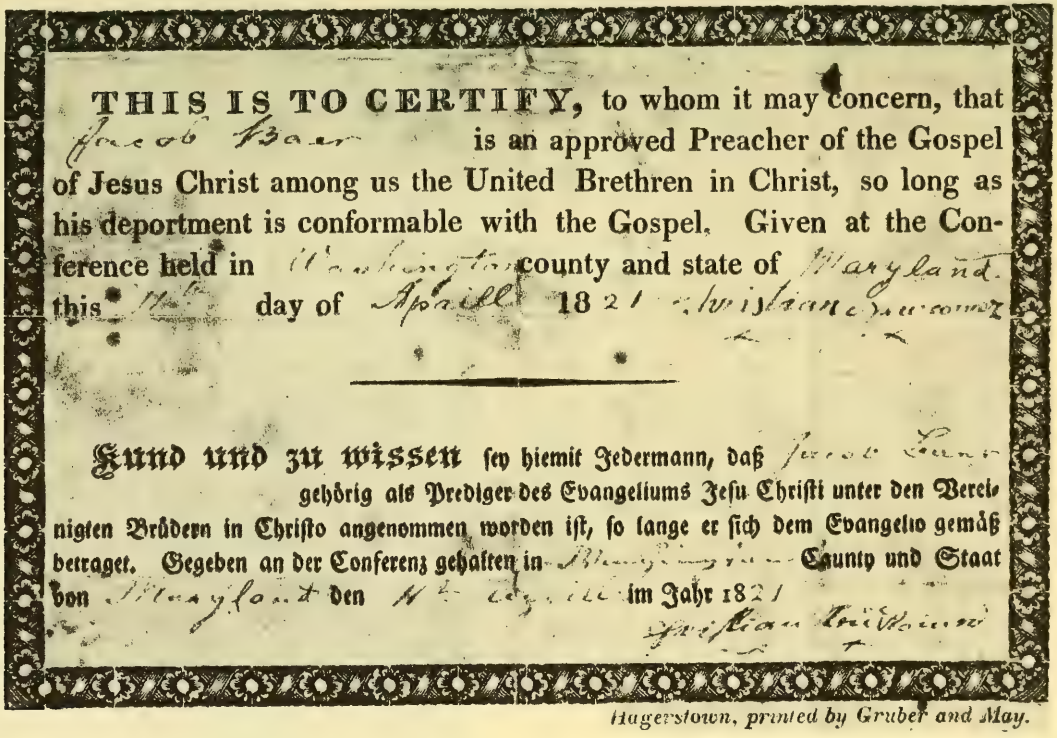
> This is to certify, to whom it may concern, that JACOB BAER is an approved Preacher of the Gospel of Jesus Christ among us the United Brethren in Christ, so long

---

24 cont'd.
County, or with the "United Brethren Church," organized by Moravians many years prior to the Church of the United Brethren in Christ. The United Brethren (Moravian) Church traces its origin back to 1457 and, some 300 years later, became the base of a remarkable revival of religion in England.

[25]Christian Newcomer's journal of his circuit riding days has been often reprinted. He described in great detail his daily activities, covering a span of several decades. He died on 12 March 1830, maintaining his diary up to his last days.

[26]Paul E. Holdcraft, *History of the Pennsylvania Conference of the Church of the United Brethren in Christ*, ("Sesqui-Centennial" Edition, 1939), p. 270.



THIS IS TO CERTIFY, to whom it may concern, that Jacob Baer is an approved Preacher of the Gospel of Jesus Christ among us the United Brethren in Christ, so long as his deportment is conformable with the Gospel. Given at the Conference held in Washington county and state of Maryland. this 11th day of April 1821 Christian Newcomer

---

Kund und zu wissen sey hiemit Jedermann, daß Jacob Baer gehörig als Prediger des Evangeliums Jesu Christi unter den Vereinigten Brüdern in Christo angenommen worden ist, so lange er sich dem Evangelio gemäß betraget. Gegeben an der Conferenz gehalten in Washington County und Staat von Maryland den 11th April im Jahr 1821

Christian Newcomer

Hagerstown, printed by Gruber and May.

PREACHING CERTIFICATE ISSUED TO JACOB BAER SR. on 11 April 1821 at the Conference of the United Brethren in Christ held in Hagerstown, Maryland.

as deportment is conformable with the Gospel; Given at the Conference held in Washington County and State of Maryland this 11th day of April 1821.

(signed) Christian Newcomer

It was printed in both English and German. It started JACOB BAER SR. on his circuit riding on behalf of the United Brethren Church. He was urged to go to Ohio where the Miami Circuit of the United Brethren Church in Christ had been organized some seven years earlier.

JOHN JACOB BAER SR. arrived in Seneca County, Ohio during the 1820's.[27] His son, JOHN JACOB BAER JR. was about ten years old. They located in the northwestern corner of the county, in Jackson Township near (present-day) Fostoria.[28]

---

[27]It is probable that the Baers lived in Wyandot County, Ohio, as well as in Seneca County. JOHN MASON BAER, son of JOHN JACOB BAER JR., is inconsistent on this score. In one biographical sketch appearing in *The Biographical Dictionary and Portrait Gallery of Representative Men of Chicago and Wisconsin*, (Chicago: H. C. Cooper Jr. & Co., 1895), p. 334, JOHN MASON BAER states that he was born in Tiffin, Seneca County. However, in Elihu Spencer's *Record of Pioneers of Outagamie County* (Appleton, Wisconsin: Post Publishing Co., 1898), p. 14, he is listed as being born in Wyandot County. Then, confusing the issue further is the statement in *Commemorative Biographical Record of the Fox River Valley* (Chicago: J. H. Beers & Co., 1895), p. 470, to the effect that he was born "in Wyandot County, Ohio, near Upper Sandusky, (his grandfather being) one of the pioneers of (that) county in Ohio." It is difficult to reconcile these conflicting statements on birthplaces, but it is quite possible that JOHN JACOB SR. did first emigrate to Wyandot County, and later the family lived in Seneca County when JOHN MASON BAER was born. The fact that Wyandot County was not formed until 1845 complicates the problem.

[28]The precise location of JOHN JACOB BAER SR.'S land in either Seneca or Wyandot County has not been determined. First, it is not known in which county he first settled. Second, no land records in either county are conclusive. There was a settlement of Baers/Bares in northern Wyandot and southern Seneca, the latter in Eden Township. This group of Bares emigrated from Rockingham County, Virginia. The spelling was for the most part consistently "Bare," and the early land owners in Eden Township have been documented as to their emigration from Rockingham County. However, one John Baer is known to have settled in Jackson Township in the northwestern corner of Seneca County as early as 1848 and probably earlier, according to Consul W. Butterfield's *History of Seneca County* (Sandusky: D. Campbell & Sons, 1848), p. 184. By the 1850's there were many land transfers and almost without exception all of these John/Jacob Bairs/Bears were born in Pennsylvania, as shown by U. S. Census

There were many Germans in Jackson Township, including Jacob Stahl, Jacob Kimmel, Henry Hoffman, Isaac Miller and others. German was spoken in their day-to-day activities as well as during their church services.

Seneca County had been formed only months before the Baer's arrival. Certainly the countryside was a sight to behold when they first cast their eyes on their future home; a luxuriant vegetation, with the majestic size of the forest trees, covered with thick foliage.

The first and obvious task facing the Baers was clearing enough land for a garden and log cabin. Not until this had been achieved did JOHN JACOB BAER have sufficient time for preaching. Most of his circuit riding was close to home, and he devoted only a part of his time to preaching. In this he was like most of the United Brethren preachers of the day. In 1830 there were 67 preachers in the Church, of whom only 18 were listed as "itinerants for the Year."[29] Circuit riders for the United Brethren Church of Christ were paid around $200 a year -- if they performed regularly, and were married.

JOHN JACOB BAER JR. grew up in this vigorous life of religion. On occasions he would accompany his father on his nearby circuit riding, and when the SENIOR BAER died in 1832 his interest in becoming a preacher increased.[30] Soon J. J. BAER was a circuit rider for the United Brethren Church.

---

28 cont'd.
data in 1850. One John Bair in 1853 purchased 80 acres in Jackson Township (Section 32, Township 3, Range 13: Book 26, p. 126, in Vol. II of the General Index to Deeds of Seneca County). One Jacob Bear bought 40 contiguous acres in adjoining Section 33 on 16 April 1859 (Book 33, p. 328). One Jacob Bair sold 80 acres in adjoining Section 28 to John Krieger on 18 October 1859. In 1856 Probate Court Records of Seneca County reveal a public sale of items of the "Estate of John Bear" of Jackson Township, with one Jacob Baer being a buyer of one or more of the items. Andrew Emerine was named the administrator of the estate. These John and Jacob Bairs/Bears/Baer could be the Baers from Somerset County, Pennsylvania, but this author cannot present proof even though it appears to be quite likely. Federal Census data do not contribute to the solution of location of the Somerset Baers. The 1830 U. S. Census for Seneca County lists only one John and only one Jacob Bare -- in Eden Township. This is a father and son, and both are known to have emigrated from Fairfield County, Ohio, and before that from Rockingham County, Virginia. A check of dozens of northern Ohio counties in the 1850 U. S. Census fails to disclose a John or Jacob Baer/Bare/Bair/Bear family with a JOHN MASON BAER at age four or a Cornelia Baer, age eight or nine, both known children of JOHN JACOB BAER JR.

[29] *op cit*, Holdcraft, p. 41.

[30] The 1832 death date of JOHN JACOB BAER SR. is based on Holdcraft's listing the 1832 date from the minutes of the Pennsylvania Conference of the Church of the United Brethren in Christ. JOHN BAER'S

In 1838 he married ANNA NANCY PALMER (V*25) of Maryland. Wed in Ohio, she was the daughter of SAMUEL PALMER (VI*50), a wagoner who transported goods between Philadelphia and Pittsburgh over the Great Wagon, the Forbes and the great Pennsylvania roads enroute to Cleveland.

The wagoner, with his Conestoga wagon, was an important cog in the growth of western Pennsylvania and Ohio. SAMUEL PALMER was one of thousands of wagoners who wheeled along over the mountains of Pennsylvania. He, along with other freighters, brought news and cash into the inns and way stations along the roads where they stopped.

SAMUEL'S Conestoga wagon was a huge canvas-covered carrier, with large iron-rimmed wheels. His wagon measured 20 feet long at the top and 14 feet along the bottom. It could carry ten tons of crates and their contents.

The Conestoga wagon was crafted by the Pennsylvania *Deutsch* of the eastern part of the state.[31] SAMUEL PALMER'S wagon, drawn by a team of six black Conestoga horses, was painted a bright blue, accented by a brilliant red. He took pride in his four-wheeled ark.

---

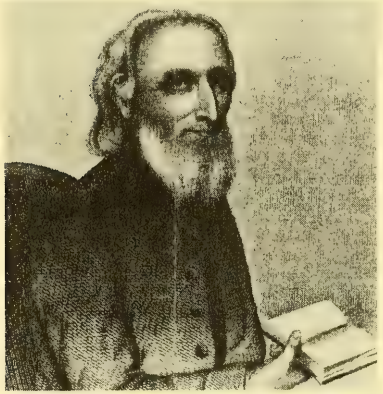
30 cont'd.

"membership ceased" in 1832 because of "death." An interesting contradiction between the Eden Township Bares and the Jackson Township Baers arises because of a gravestone in the private Kagy Cemetery south of Tiffin in Eden Township bearing the inscription "Jacob Bare -- Died 8 October 1832 -- 42 years, 8 months, 17 days." Descendants of the Rockingham Bares have long contended that this Jacob Bare was both a medical doctor and a preacher, and that he is the "Rev. Bare" who received his preaching certificate in 1821 in Maryland. These claims appear in "The Bare Family History" compiled in 1961 by Velma Augustine and Otto Foust. This "history" is actually an assemblage of genealogical information contributed by various descendants, and at no time is any documentation provided for the reader. Attempts to obtain such documentation from the compilers of the history were unsuccessful. The author reviewed the raw data that went into the history, and learned that the data submitted were included without verification. However, this is not to suggest that the Jacob Bare buried near Honey Creek across from the Kagy Cemetery is not the Rev. Baer to whom the preaching certificate was issued. However, no documentation has yet been presented to this author. It is quite probable that one or more of the families included in "The Bare Family History" descend from the Somerset Baers and not from the Rockingham Bares.

[31] "Pennsylvania Dutch" is an outgrowth of the Englishman's attempt to pronounce "*Deutsch*" which is "German" in English. Thus, the Pennsylvania Germans came to be called "Pennsylvania Dutch" shortly after their arrival in America.

JOHN JACOB BAER JR. met NANCY PALMER during a trip back to Maryland where her father owned a farm in Washington County.[32] They had five children, including JOHN MASON BAER (IV*12) who was born on 14 October 1845. He was next to the youngest.[33]

REV. JOHN JACOB, fervent in his devotion to religion, joined the Eighth Ohio Militia as a chaplain during the latter part of the 1840's when the War with Mexico broke out. For years United States' relations with Mexico had been deteriorating and the mutual suspicion resulted in open hostilities during April 1846.



A UNITED BRETHREN PREACHER

The slaughter of Americans at the Alamo inflamed the feelings of the public throughout the land. Moreover, the Mexicans were equally warlike, and the war began, largely over the annexation of Texas by the United States. The War lasted some two years, and upon its completion JOHN JACOB returned to Ohio.[34]

---

[32] JOHN MASON BAER in his biographies states that SAMUEL PALMER owned a Washington County farm on which the famous Civil War Battle of Antietam was fought in 1862. The circumstance and place of the marriage of NANCY PALMER to JOHN JACOB BAER JR. are not known.

[33] With one exception, the names of the other children of JOHN JACOB and ANNA NANCY BAER are not known. They had a daughter Cornelia Ellen, born in 1841. She married a Mr. Smith, and according to a gravestone in the Baer burial plot in the Riverside Cemetery in Appleton, Wisconsin her birth date is 12 February 1841, and her death in April 1887. All of JOHN JACOB'S children, with the exception of JOHN MASON BAER, are known to have died before 1895, based on the latter's statement in the *Commemorative Biographical Record of the Fox River Valley.*

[34] JOHN JACOB BAER'S son, JOHN MASON BAER, on several occasions refers to his father's participation in the Mexican War, listing him as a chaplain in the 8th Ohio Militia. The War Records Department of the National Archives in Washington, D. C. has no such record. Also, the Adjutant's General's Department of the State of Ohio, Division of Soldiers' Claims, does not list him as being in the Mexican War. This, however, could be because JOHN JACOB did not die in Ohio. The *Official Roster of the Soldiers of the State of Ohio -- Vol. 12* does not list him as being in the War with Mexico. In fact the directory does not show an Eighth Ohio Militia. This confusion between the statements of JOHN MASON BAER and official records is difficult to explain.

He realized that conditions in Ohio were changing rapidly. The anti-slavery movement was intensifying. The construction of railroads was offering people mobility they had never before experienced. Emigration into Ohio created a demand for new churches and preachers.

J.J. BAER JR. had over the years been observing the work of Rev. John Winebrenner, a preacher in the East who formerly was active in the German Reformed Church. J.J. BAER JR. had heard his father comment about the zeal of Winebrenner who, on occasions, had met with Christian Newcomer during their circuit riding.[35] Winebrenner withdrew his membership in the Synod of the Reformed Church of 1828, exclaiming that "my reasons for withdrawing from your Church (are merely) because I found her thus exceedingly degenerated ...."[36]

Winebrenner continued to preach in his own church in Maryland until on one Sunday "the door was locked against him and he preached an impromptu sermon on the front steps, from the text 'The door was shut'." His evangelical zeal attracted a loyal and growing following over the years and he subsequently formed the (Winebrenner) Church of God in North America. Winebrenner preached "repentance and regeneration, coupled with a belief in the resurrection of the just and unjust at the final judgement."

But Winebrenner did not escape attack, especially by several members of the German Reformed Church. He was accused of developing a "new-fangled invention (by a) cunning imposter brought in to turn the heads (derange) of the weak and to lead to captive silly women." His prayer meetings, denounced his detractors, were a "spiritual abomination."

The Winebrenner movement took place during the great religious revival of the early decades of the 1800's. This, coupled with the enormous emigration into Ohio, brought expansion to Winebrenner's Church of God in Ohio by 1845, two years prior to JOHN JACOB'S entering the service in the Mexican War.

Preacher BAER found Winebrenner's evangelism appealing, and he left the United Brethren Church in Christ to join the Church of God. In 1848, at age 36, he was "assigned to the Ashland circuit (and) moved to Shenandoah, Richland County, Ohio .... and traveled a circuit

[35]Christian Newcomer mentions meeting John Winebrenner several times during their years as circuit riders in the Maryland and Pennsylvania areas.

[36]C. H. Forney, *History of the Churches of God* (1914), pp. 18-20 and 68-70.

nearly 200 miles around."[37] Richland County is approximately 70 miles southeast of Seneca County.

He became a teaching elder, and in the 1 December 1849 issue of *The Church Advocate*, a Church of God periodical, he wrote:

> Dear Brethren: I feel thankful to my Heavenly Father that I have the blessed privilege of meeting with you in an Eldership capacity. My health was such I feared I should not be able to come to this meeting; but thanks be to God that I am here with you.
>
> The reason why I was not with you last year was in consequence of the circumstances with which I was connected. This was to my gratification settled. Brethren, I was long near my home this fall by sickness. But I was very happy in my mind, and the Lord gave me great comfort in my affliction.
>
> Upon the whole, I can say, I love the Church of God, her principles, doctrine and ordinances. I can truly say they are of God. I likewise design, by the peace of God, to live and labor with my brethren so long as I live, and as the Lord permits.
>
> I hope my brethren will bear with me in my afflictions and imperfections. Pray for me and my family, that I may live faithfully until death.
>
> J. J. Baer[38]

J. J. BAER attended the Elderships (conferences) of the Church of God in Ohio during the next three years. In 1852 he again reported in *The Church Advocate* that...

> I am truly glad that through a merciful Providence I have the privilege to meet you in this Eldership capacity. Since I met you last year I have tried to preach as much as I could, under existing circumstances.
>
> It results as follows: Between 70 and 80 professed religion. I baptized 15 believers, and organized one church numbering 17 members at Independence, Ohio.

---

[37] *ibid.* p. 70.

[38] These written words of JOHN JACOB BAER were obtained directly from original copies of *The Church Advocate*, Vol. XIV, No. 15, p. 114, located in the library of the Winebrenner Seminary at Findlay, Ohio.

> I should have felt much comforted if this body had remembered me in my circumstances, but this has been refused which has not gone down very well. I assure you I love the cause I am in, and will do all I can for the same.
>
> J.J. Baer[39]

JOHN JACOB BAER's health continued to deteriorate and his preaching capability declined. Within a few years he and his wife ANNA NANCY left Richland County and returned to Seneca County.[40] Their son, JOHN MASON BAER, was three years old when they moved to Richland, and about ten when they came back to Seneca.

The home-life of young JOHN MASON BAER in north central Ohio during the 1850's was, to his way of thinking, unpleasant to say the least. JOHN was a headstrong boy, and he rebelled at the strict discipline being forced upon him by his preacher father.

The rigorous and demanding German Reformed, United Brethren, and the Winebrenner movements had, over the years, such profound impact on JOHN JACOB that he permitted his religious views to take precedence over his family life. Moreover, he was not well. All of this resulted in a growing chasm between father and son.

In 1857, when 12 years old, young JOHN MASON left home with two dollars in his pocket, and headed toward Richland County, where the family had lived a few years earlier. After walking 75 miles he found himself in Lucas, Ohio, a few miles southeast of Mansfield. There he was lent a helping hand by a storekeeper friend who provided him with housing. JOHN located a job as a spinner with the Mansfield Woolen Mill at the foot of Mulberry Street.[41]

JOHN was not old enough to vote in the 1860 Presidential election that sent Abraham Lincoln from Illinois to Washington, D. C. But he was sufficiently mature to listen and engage in the many discussions that centered about the secession of southern states from the Union.

---

[39] *ibid.* p. 235.

[40] JOHN JACOB BAER'S return to Seneca County in the 1850's is based on the statement of his son JOHN MASON BAER in which he tells later of his being in Seneca County in 1857.

[41] JOHN MASON BAER'S occupation as a spinner was listed on the "Company Descriptive Book" of Company H of the "114th Reg't. Ohio Infantry," in the National Archives, Washington, D. C. The Mansfield Woolen Mill was apparently the only textile plant in Richland County in the late 1850's, according to Graham's *History of Richland Co., Ohio*, published in 1880.

On 4 March 1861 President Lincoln delivered his first inaugural address to the nation. He spoke about the supremacy of the national government. He insisted that the Union was perpetual and could not be destroyed, and that secession was illegal. He promised to enforce federal laws in all states, but that the "government would shed no blood" -- unless forced to do so. Moreover, he contended that the federal government would continue to "hold, occupy, and possess" those forts now in Union possession -- including Fort Sumter in Charleston Harbor.

But within six weeks Fort Sumter had fallen to the southerners and President Lincoln announced that the Rebels had fired the first shot and that steps would now be taken to suppress the "rebellion." He issued a call for 75,000 militiamen. The Confederacy called up 100,000 men, at first for six months but soon the term was lengthened to three years.

Virginia seceded on 17 April; Arkansas on 6 May; North Carolina 20 May; Tennessee 24 June. The Civil War was on, and the populations of both the North and South were fast developing a frenzied war psychology.

In Mansfield, where JOHN MASON BAER was still a spinner in the woolen mill, public meetings were held. Patriotic songs were sung and eloquent speeches erupted. Recruits "donned the blue" to fight for the preservation of the union of the states. The city "blossomed out in flags and banners; they floated from almost every house and well nigh canopied the streets."[42]

JOHN BAER turned 16 in October of 1861. He was not tall: five feet, eight inches. His hair was sandy. He watched the enthusiasm of the people of the community, and took pride when several of his friends joined the Ohio Voluntary Infantry. The Union forces had lost the Battle of Bull Run, and the northern cause seemed to be faltering. Lincoln's call for men continued, and JOHN, only 16, enlisted in Company I of the Ohio Voluntary Infantry on 12 May 1862.

The recruits of Company I gathered at Camp Dennison, just south of Columbus. Among the troops were several entire companies made up of college or school classes, who, under their teachers as officers, had started for the front. Other young men, though less scholastic, were not less high-purposed, and perhaps were more effective for the work of war. "Good God," exclaimed Gordon Granger, a captain of the regulars, "that such men as these

---

[42] *ibid.*

should be food for powder!"[43]

The O.V.I. militiamen were soon transported to Grafton, West Virginia, where there was a long and deep-seated feeling of hostility between the plantation and slave-owning Virginians and the mountaineers of West Virginia, mostly of Scotch-Irish and Pennsylvania German stock. The latter owned few slaves; their crops were different; they looked down the Ohio River for an outlet, not the eastern streams of Virginia.

They were furious at the system of Virginia law that permitted slave-holding counties to have extra members in the legislature. When Virginia seceded from the Union, the West Virginians seceded from the seceders. This brought Confederate troops from Virginia, poised to attack the all-important Baltimore & Ohio Railroad, vital to the southern was strategy.

Soon JOHN was transferred from Grafton to Clarksburg, West Virginia, the base of supplies. Company I, along with others, was detailed to guard the B & O. Soon the Federals were superior in numbers, and quickly gained the upper hand. The issue was resolved, and after 136 days in service JOHN was mustered out on 28 September. His performance was marked with a lack of excitement.

Within days he re-enlisted, this time in Company H of the 120th Ohio Voluntary Infantry. They trained and drilled at Camp Mansfield, preparing for what awaited them at the front. They left camp on 25 October 1862 with 949 men.[44] JOHN was made a Second Sergeant upon the formation of the company. His company was assigned to the XIII Army Corps, organized on 18 December.[45]

Gloom permeated the Union forces. The war news was discouraging. Gen. Ambrose E. Burnside had launched a massive attack against Confederate forces at Fredericksburg, Virginia, some 60 miles south of Washington, D.C.,

---

[43] James Kendall Hosmer, *The American Civil War* (New York: Harper & Brothers, 1913), p. 49.

[44] *op cit,* Graham's *History of Richland County,* p. 334.

[45] The description of JOHN MASON BAER'S activities during the Civil War is drawn from a variety of sources and combined into a sequential presentation in this chapter. All of his actions during the War, as described in this chapter, are documented by one or more of these sources: *Commemorative Biographical Record of the Fox River Valley, Wisconsin* (1895); *The Pioneers of Outagamie Co., Wisconsin* (1895); *The Biographical Dictionary and Portrait Gallery of Representative Men of Chicago and Wisconsin* (1895); *Soldiers' Album Personal Records* (1888); Hosmer's *The American Civil War, Vol. I and II* (1913).

only to suffer one of the worst defeats of the war. There were 12,000 casualties.

Out in the West, Gen. Ulysses S. Grant had moved down from northern Mississippi toward Vicksburg, Mississippi, a strategically located city still in Confederate hands. His objective was to take Vicksburg, a virtual river fortress, thus removing the obstacles then preventing free Union movement down the Mississippi.

His first target was to be Jackson, Mississippi, 50 miles east of Vicksburg. Once Jackson fell, Vicksburg would be untenable inasmuch as supplies over the Alabama and Vicksburg Railroad would be in complete jeopardy. Gen. William T. Sherman, with 32,000 men, was ordered to advance on Vicksburg from the west so that his forces and those of Grant could act in concert to overwhelm the Rebel forces.

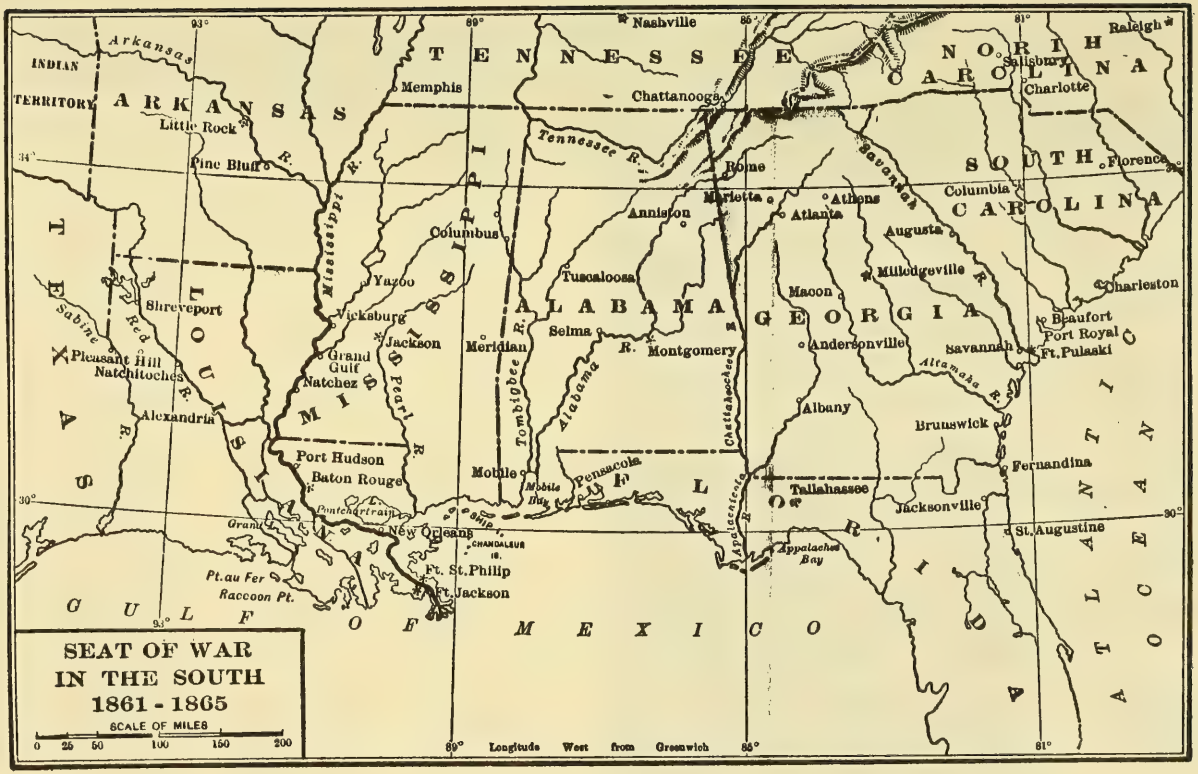
The plan began to deteriorate when it was discovered that Confederate forces, operating in friendly Mississippi territory, were destroying railroads in Grant's rear for many miles, working complete destruction. Grant's main depot in northern Mississippi was cut off, and his southward movement at a standstill.

Cooperation with Sherman was now impossible. Moreover, news of Grant's disaster could not be communicated to Sherman who, on schedule, was steaming down to the mouth of the Yazoo River, believing that an important Confederate garrison at Vicksburg had been drawn off to confront Grant.

Accordingly, Sherman flung his divisions against the Confederate lines at Chickasaw Bayou, eight miles north of Vicksburg. These forces included SERGEANT BAER'S Company H of the 120th Ohio Voluntary Infantry. They moved up the Yazoo River to Johnson's Landing where they disembarked from the transports.

The attack opened on 26 December, and on the following day the 120th O.V.I. came under Rebel fire for the first time -- just two months after they left Camp Mansfield back in Ohio. JOHN BAER, in charge of 26 men, was ordered to hold a gap while a working party laid a pontoon across the Chickasaw Bayou to a "broad shelf" beneath steep clay cliffs known as Walnut Hills beyond which was the village of Vicksburg.

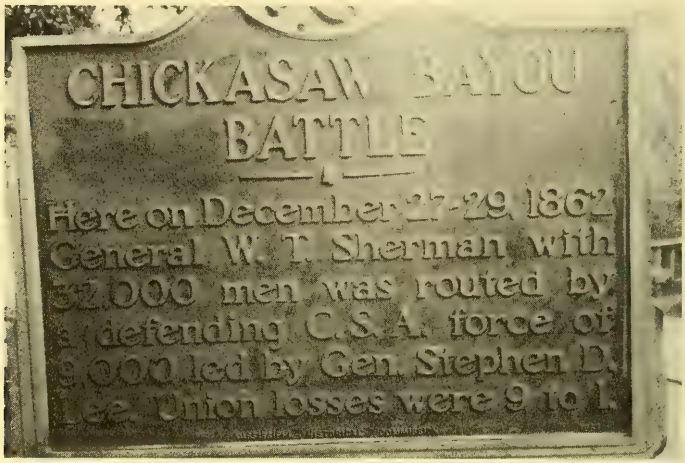
The Confederates, well fortified on the Hills, were beyond the reach of any Union gunboats. Moreover, Grant had not arrived! Sherman had no choice but to withdraw under enemy fire and part of JOHN BAER'S detail fell back. However, JOHN and eight others stood by their



JOHN MASON BAER'S CIVIL WAR ACTIVITIES centered largely in Mississippi and Louisiana when he participated in the famed Vicksburg and Red River campaigns of 1863 and 1864. He was mustered out as a Captain in 1865.

guns until they received final orders to abandon a forlorn situation. SERGEANT BAER pulled the lanyard on the last Union gun to be fired at Chickasaw. His performance resulted in his being promoted to First Sergeant on 28 December 1862.

The opening attempt on Vicksburg at Chickasaw Bayou was a complete failure and the Federal armada under Adm.



David D. Porter with the 120th O.V.I. aboard steamed up the Mississippi.

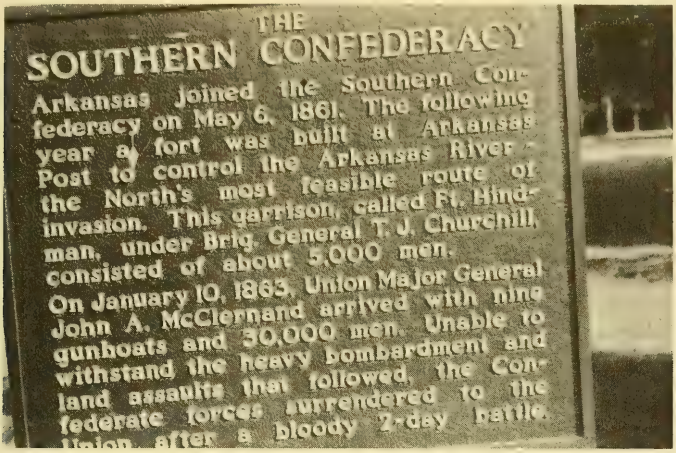
Northern newspapers were highly critical of Gen. Sherman and his defeat at Chickasaw. They sometimes referred to him as "Crazy Sherman." The immediate problem was what to do with some 30,000 men under his command.

On 4 January 1863 Sherman met with Major General John Alexander McClernand and others. They decided to attack Fort Hindman at Arkansas Post. The Confederates at this Fort some 50 miles up the Arkansas River from its confluence with the Mississippi could menace the Federal Base at Helena, Arkansas.

On 10 January the 120th O.V.I. disembarked from the armada and by nighttime were in a position for attack. The Southern forces numbered 5,000. The 120th Ohio's position was at the extreme left of the line. At 4 P.M. a charge was ordered on the left, and the 120th made a direct attack and was the first regiment to enter the Fort.

The Confederate forces, outnumbered five or six to one, raised the white flag in surrender after futile resistance. The fortifications were destroyed and the Rebel forces captured.

When Gen. U. S. Grant arrived on the scene to take charge of the Union attack on Vicksburg, on 18 January,



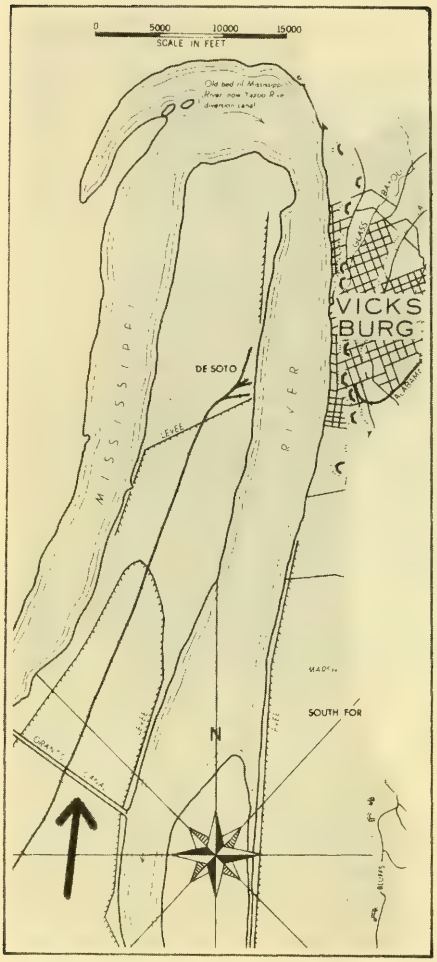
he took steps to make it possible for northern troops to pass by Vicksburg from north to south. This, he argued, could be achieved by digging a canal across a peninsula in front of Vicksburg. Such a canal, about a mile in length, when completed would enable Union forces to slip by Confederate batteries.

JOHN BAER'S Company H was assigned the task of digging a canal near Young's Point, some four miles below Vicksburg. The job was to dig an area 188 feet long, 60 feet wide and three feet deep in order to open up water transportation for Union forces west and south of Vicksburg. The men stood in swamp water two to three feet deep, shoveling mud into wheelbarrows.

Half the men soon became ill, due, in part, to the working conditions in a bayou, but also to the poor food. Morale was at a low point. Then news reached them that President Lincoln had issued his Emancipation Proclamation. He declared that "all slaves in rebellious states were 'forever free'."

This thought inflamed many men from the north, their feeling being that such a proclamation would result in slaves inundating the northern cities in order to escape their southern owners. A third of the officers in the Ohio Voluntary Infantry resigned in protest over the President's action.

But the digging went on, keeping the men busy during the winter months. Then, in early March a sudden rise in the river swept away the dam protecting the digging troops, and the entire project was abandoned (see map next page).



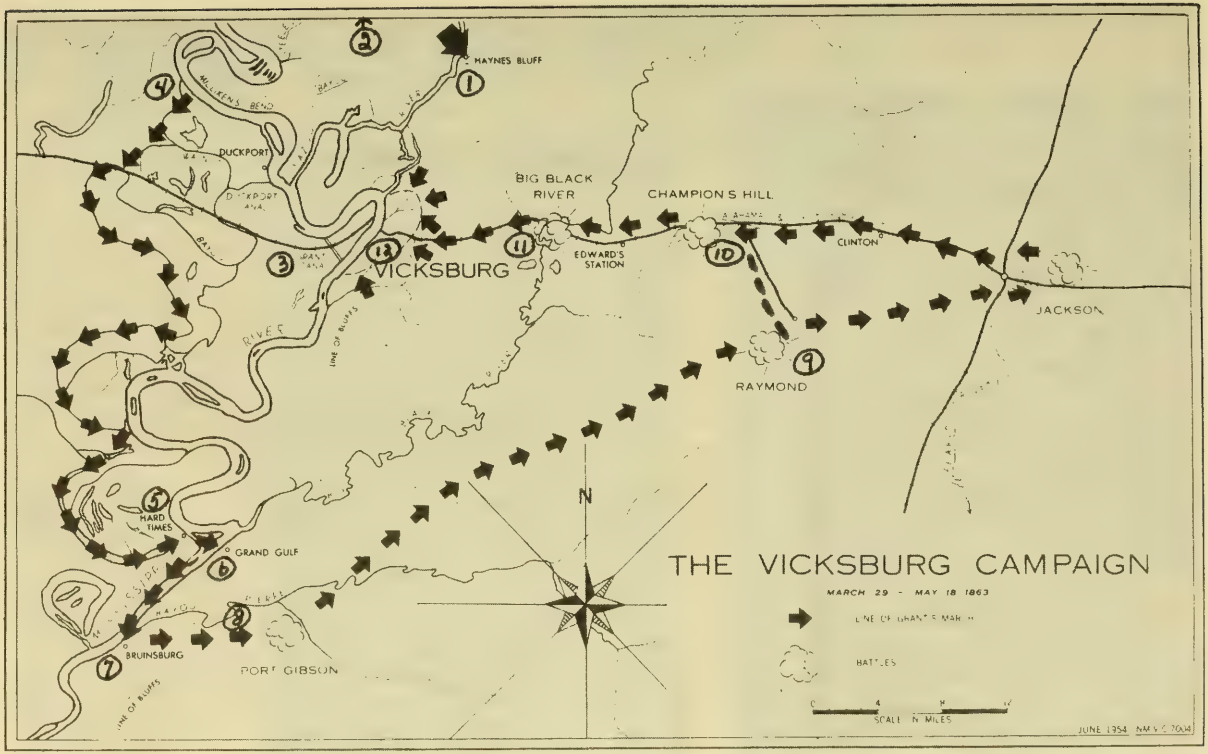
GEN. GRANT'S FORCES could not move south past Vicksburg because of this horseshoe bend in the river. Thus, the ill-fated "Grant's Canal" was attempted (lower left).

BAER'S Company H was next moved to Milliken's Bend, on the Mississippi, a few miles north and west of Vicksburg. Grant, now in full charge of the Vicksburg campaign, realized that he could not employ Adm. David D. Porter's transports for moving troops down the Mississippi past Vicksburg. Thus, he undertook a march from Milliken's Bend through Louisiana to a point south of the fortified city preparatory to a crossing of the river.

He had 40,000 men under his total command, including the 120th O.V.I. Gen. John C. Pemberton, the defender of Vicksburg, was not yielding easily. He had 40,000 of his own men ready to defend the city fortress. Grant now reasoned that Vicksburg must be taken from the east, even though his earlier attempt had failed. Thus, 24,000 of his forces would march to Hard Times Landing about 30 miles south of the city, cross the river, and attack from the eastern side of the river.

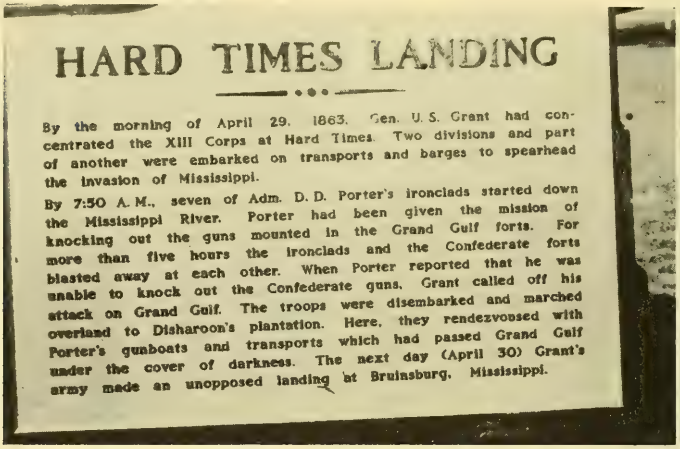
The march from Milliken's Bend to Hard Times Landing was a tedious one for the 24,000 Union troops, including JOHN MASON BAER. It was a tiring, strenuous 30-day foot journey, encumbered by long columns of wagon trains and all the necessary paraphernalia of an army on the move.

On 13 April the Union transports under Adm. Porter moved the forces across the River from Hard Times to Grand Gulf on the eastern side, but Rebel forces were well fortified and prevented the landing. The Union Navy could not silence the Confederate guns, so Company H of Ohio's 120th plus other troops turned south, nine



JOHN MASON BAER, WITH COMPANY H OF THE 120th OHIO VOLUNTARY INFANTRY, spent more than six months in the Vicksburg campaign. He was a part of the famous "Grant's March," designated by arrows in map, except for dashes between Numbers 9 and 10. Number 1 is Chickasaw Bayou; Number 2 is Arkansas Post; Number 3 is "Grant's Canal." Grant's March began at Milliken's Bend (Number 4). (National Park Service Map)

miles to Bruinsburg, Mississippi, where Grant's army landed on 30 April.

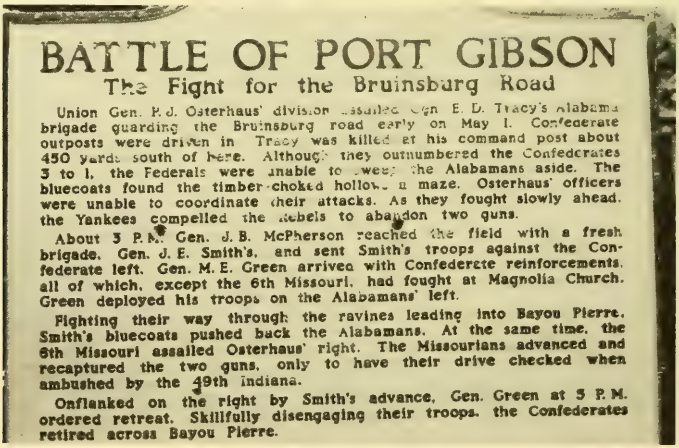


HARD TIMES LANDING

By the morning of April 29, 1863, Gen. U. S. Grant had concentrated the XIII Corps at Hard Times. Two divisions and part of another were embarked on transports and barges to spearhead the invasion of Mississippi.

By 7:50 A.M., seven of Adm. D. D. Porter's ironclads started down the Mississippi River. Porter had been given the mission of knocking out the guns mounted in the Grand Gulf forts. For more than five hours the ironclads and the Confederate forts blasted away at each other. When Porter reported that he was unable to knock out the Confederate guns, Grant called off his attack on Grand Gulf. The troops were disembarked and marched overland to Disharoon's plantation. Here, they rendezvoused with Porter's gunboats and transports which had passed Grand Gulf under the cover of darkness. The next day (April 30) Grant's army made an unopposed landing at Bruinsburg, Mississippi.

Grant's strategy was to meet the Confederate forces head-on, in their own territory. He recognized the need



BATTLE OF PORT GIBSON

The Fight for the Bruinsburg Road

Union Gen. P. J. Osterhaus' division assailed Gen. E. D. Tracy's Alabama brigade guarding the Bruinsburg road early on May 1. Confederate outposts were driven in. Tracy was killed at his command post about 450 yards south of here. Although they outnumbered the Confederates 3 to 1, the Federals were unable to sweep the Alabamans aside. The bluecoats found the timber-choked hollows a maze. Osterhaus' officers were unable to coordinate their attacks. As they fought slowly ahead, the Yankees compelled the Rebels to abandon two guns.

About 3 P.M. Gen. J. B. McPherson reached the field with a fresh brigade, Gen. J. E. Smith's, and sent Smith's troops against the Confederate left. Gen. M. E. Green arrived with Confederate reinforcements, all of which, except the 6th Missouri, had fought at Magnolia Church. Green deployed his troops on the Alabamans' left.

Fighting their way through the ravines leading into Bayou Pierre, Smith's bluecoats pushed back the Alabamans. At the same time, the 6th Missouri assailed Osterhaus' right. The Missourians advanced and recaptured the two guns, only to have their drive checked when ambushed by the 49th Indiana.

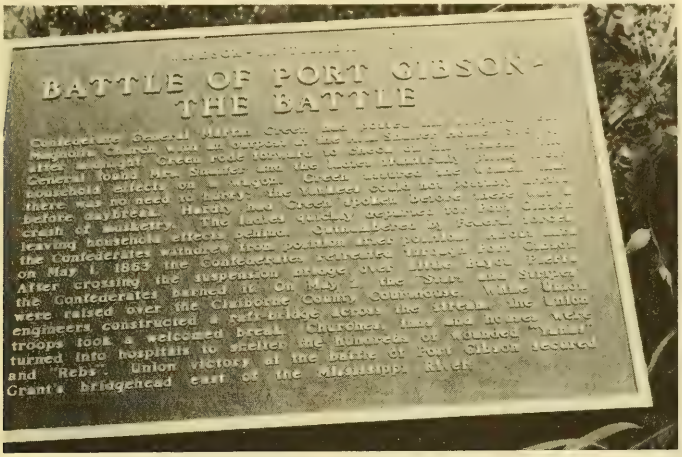
Onflanked on the right by Smith's advance, Gen. Green at 5 P.M. ordered retreat. Skillfully disengaging their troops, the Confederates retired across Bayou Pierre.

for speed, reducing the Rebel opportunity for adequate defense. Grant made the decision to land only men and arms at Bruinsburg, leaving behind all horses except those pulling cannon. Too, the armies were to move east away from the River without food rations, depending on their own abilities to live off the land. This tactic was to enhance their speed of movement.

SERGEANT BAER'S regiment took three days' rations on their own, and as part of the Division under Brig. Gen. Peter J. Osterhaus, a Prussian, took off after Confederate forces near Port Gibson. They encountered

Rebel resistance on Thompson's Hill, five miles west of Port Gibson.

Gen. McClernand's XIII Army Corps, of which Osterhaus' Division was a part, was ordered to attack along a



wide front, with Company H of the 120th on the dangerous left flank. At noon on 1 May the Confederates attempted to turn McClernand's right flank and nearly succeeded. But the left flank held firm, under Rebel fire, and forced the southern army to retreat.

The 120th Ohio bivouacked near Port Gibson that night, and by morning had counted their casualties -- one out of eight being killed or wounded.

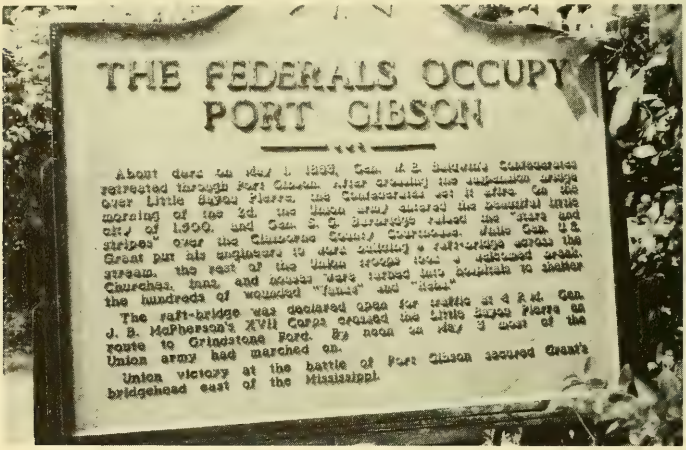
The day following the Battle of Port Gibson, Grant's forces threw a pontoon bridge across the Bayou Pierre while nearly 2000 cavalry gleaned the countryside of everything movable. They gathered up some 2500 Negroes and all the wagons, oxen, and mules they could lay their hands on in order to compensate for Grant's decision to leave such items on the west bank of the Mississippi. An ammunition train was made up of every sort of vehicle, drawn by every sort of animal, and loaded to the breaking point.[46]

Grant's strategy was now becoming clear. His goal was to reach Jackson, some 50 miles east of Vicksburg, and defeat Confederate forces there before they could reinforce Gen. Pemberton at Vicksburg. Grant moved east to Raymond, 15 miles west of Jackson, where Union forces took the small community on 13 May in the Battle of Raymond.

---

[46] John C. Pemberton, *Pemberton -- Defender of Vicksburg* (Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press, 1972), p. 125.

The 120th Ohio did not participate in the battle, but enroute from Port Gibson JOHN BAER saw retreating Confederate forces attempting to conceal their dead by chopping down trees and covering the bodies. Company H remained in Raymond until 18 May, mopping up after the



Union victory. Other forces of Grant's army were headed for Jackson where Confederate troops were defeated on 14 May. Grant's army was now free of any rear guard threat from Jackson as they turned to the main task of taking Vicksburg.

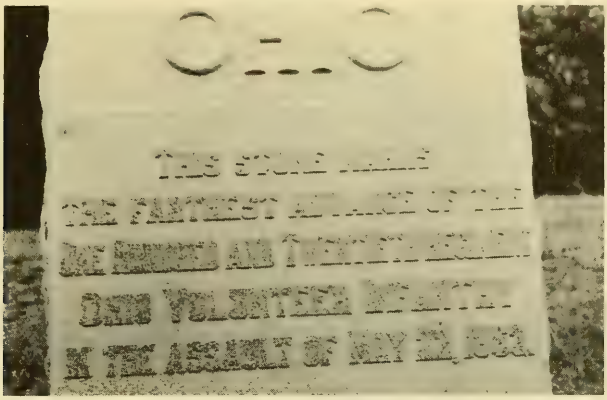
Grant, seeking speed before Gen. Pemberton could assemble concentrated forces against him, headed west towards Vicksburg with only three days' rations in his men's haversacks.

On 16 May the Battle of Champion Hill developed, halfway between Jackson and Vicksburg. BAER'S Company H and the 120th O.V.I. were ordered to the battlefront from Raymond double quick. From there they advanced to Big Black River toward Vicksburg.

Next was the Siege of Vicksburg. Pemberton and his Confederate forces were holed up inside the small city. Grant began heavy firing from the east while Adm. Porter and his gunboats opened up from the Mississippi River on the west of town. The Siege had begun.

The immediate problem for Grant was one of obtaining supplies for the armies in their new positions. On 19 May JOHN BAER was ordered to go to the Yazoo River, just a few miles north of Vicksburg, and open communications for supplies for his forces which had subsisted for 20 days on five-day rations. On 22 May, during a Federal assault on the city, when JOHN was returning from his Yazoo River mission he was struck in his shoulder by the explosion of a shell. With arm in sling, he

remained at his post. So impressive was his performance that he was promoted to Second Lieutenant upon the recommendation of Gen. J. H. Morgan.



MONUMENT IN VICKSBURG MILITARY PARK designating the farthest advance of the 120th Ohio Voluntary Infantry on 22 May 1862.

On 22 May the Ohio 120th was ordered to return east to the Big Black River bridge, to guard against the possible approach from the east of Rebel forces under Gen. Joseph E. Johnston. On 5 July the 120th moved along the line of the railroad from the Big Black to Jackson where a siege of that city was initiated (see map of Campaign).

REMAINING TRACES OF FOUNDATIONS of bridge over Big Black River as they appeared in 1980. CAPTAIN BAER and the 120th O.V.I. were ordered to guard the bridge immediately after the heavy Federal 11 May assault on Vicksburg.

The siege lasted seven days, and LT. BAER'S regiment had only roasted corn to eat. Prostration came upon every man in the regiment except BAER and Captain William McKinley, the only ones not in ambulances or on

HAND TO HAND COMBAT DURING 22 MAY FEDERAL ASSAULT ON VICKSBURG (Courtesy Chicago Historical Society). It was this day that the 120th Ohio made its furthest advance on the Confederate Vicksburg fortifications.

sick leave.[47] But Johnston's Rebel forces were defeated.

What remained of McClernand's XIII Corps was consolidated into two companies and returned to the Vicksburg area. Here they were reviewed by Gen. Nathaniel P. Banks at which time he declared them to be "an invalid corps." At a subsequent review, LT. BAER, suffering from exhaustion, fell senseless to the ground and was taken to the Marine hospital where he remained unconscious for six weeks.

During his hospital stay Vicksburg capitulated -- on 22 July 1863. But JOHN BAER was not there for the final victory, so vital to the Union military cause. The price was 10,000 Confederates lost; 9362 Union men lost.

That fall -- 1863 -- LT. BAER was released from the hospital. He rejoined his regiment in Opelousas, Louisiana, about 55 miles west of Baton Rouge, where the Union strategy was to obtain a firm hold on Texas. At this moment the North held nothing in that state. To many of the military men, however, the capture of Mobile, Alabama seemed to be the more feasible move after Vicksburg. It was the only gulf port between Florida and Texas remaining in Confederate hands.

However, it was thought in Washington that it would be more fruitful to move on Texas. LT. BAER and his regiment were sent to Plaquemine, Louisiana, a few miles south of Baton Rouge, where a fort was to be constructed. However, he was still in a poor state of health and he was sent home early on a 30-day furlough.

JOHN'S father and mother, now living near Appleton, Wisconsin, hardly recognized their son when he walked on to their farm after a 28-day journey from Louisiana to Wisconsin, much of it on foot. He weighed 95 pounds. And his furlough had all but expired. His first task was to seek an extension, which was granted.

JOHN'S parents, JOHN JACOB and ANNA NANCY BAER, had left Ohio in 1859 when JOHN JACOB'S health deteriorated to the point where he could no longer preach. He and ANNA acquired acreage in Section 32 of Black Creek Township of Outagamie County, 15 miles north of Appleton. They were attracted to this part of the country because of the number of Germans moving into Black Creek's wilderness, plus the cheap but good land.

JOHN JACOB and ANNA BAER devoted much of their time to rehabilitating their son. JOHN MASON responded well.

---

[47] McKinley became the 25th president of the United States; assassinated in 1901 at the start of his second term.

Any rift between father and son was healed. During the extension of his leave he purchased 80 acres of farmland in Section 28 of Black Creek Township, across the road from his parents' farm.[48]

Upon the expiration of his leave, LT. BAER reported in at Madison, Wisconsin, where, now a First Lieutenant, he was detained for four weeks awaiting a group of recruits he was to escort down the Mississippi River to the fighting fronts. A total of some 700 men was turned over to him for safekeeping and delivery.

BAER rejoined his own regiment during April 1864 at Plaquemine on the Mississippi River where the fort was nearing completion. The Union's strategy of moving into Texas via the interior prevailed. The Red River, from the Mississippi through Louisiana towards northeast Texas, was to be the approach. The Texas campaign was assigned to Gen. Nathaniel Banks.

BAER'S regiment was ordered to Baton Rouge on 18 April 1864 where they camped until May 2. They then embarked on the *City Belle*, moving up the Red River as a river patrol. The boat was ill-equipped for blockade running, without the necessary defenses. Guerillas were abundant on the shores and the *City Belle* was vulnerable indeed.

On their second day on the river, at a spot called Shaggy Point, the sharpshooters on the riverbanks began an assault that completely disabled the boat. Col. M.M. Spiegel and the boat's pilot were killed, and as the vessel drifted aimlessly men jumped and swam and ran for their lives. They "were under unremitting fire and many fell."

LT. BAER managed to reach the shoreline but as he scrambled up the bank he was struck by several minnie balls. He made one leap, then fell unconscious. When he recovered he saw Col. H. W. Slocum rushing past him. Slocum stopped, then went for aid. Soon several men returned with the Colonel and, "notwithstanding the murderous fire on the opposite shore and at the risk of their lives, carried him (BAER) into the woods. BAER protected himself behind a log, and then a tree."

The retreat was organized by Col. Slocum, but LT. BAER needed assistance in keeping up with his comrades. "There were 126 in all, poor fellows, with nothing left but their colors, guns and grit. Colonels Mudd and Barrett, in addition to Spiegel, were among the killed. Seven miles from the start LT. BAER begged his comrades

---

[48] A War Deed; 80 acres acquired 23 December 1863 -- W½ SW¼ Section 28, Black Creek Township, Outagamie Co., Wisconsin.

JOHN MASON BAER WITH COMPANY H OF THE 120th OHIO VOLUNTARY INFANTRY at Fort Plaquemine, Louisiana. JOHN BAER, now a First Lieutenant, is to the left of center, with saber on shoulder, facing camera.

to leave him, the rattle of the sabers of the pursuing cavalry being distinctly heard."

But Ike Miller and Andy Manhart, two men in his company, refused to leave him, and the three hid that night in a swamp. In the morning, after a night of "indescribable horror," a house was discovered where, they found, lived a Rebel family. They were people with humane feelings and they concealed the three men in the loft.

That afternoon a boat whistle was heard, and Manhart rushed out, waving a flag at the steamer *John Warner*. BAER and his two compatriots were taken aboard. The boat was carrying the 56th Ohio home for furlough and the surgeon attended to BAER'S injuries.

Hearing of the disaster of the *City Belle* the officers of the 56th Ohio determined that their steamer, plus three gunboats and one single-turret ironclad of their small fleet, would return to Shaggy Point and "settle accounts" with the Confederates. But the move was ill-advised, and the next day the *John Warner* was wholly disabled by a solid shot through its wheelbase. This sent the boat drifting, and the entire 56th Ohio, plus JOHN BAER and his two comrades, all jumped and swam madly for shore.

But LT. BAER could not maintain the pace of the other men; his injury forced him to forgo any attempt to escape. He was soon taken prisoner. The wounded, including BAER, were transported in wagons to a Confederate camp near Cheneyville, Louisiana, but the great number of men needing medical aid was so engulfing that many died without any help whatsoever.

BAER made an acquaintance with a Confederate officer who was so shocked by the wretched condition of the prisoners that he agreed to connive "at anything for their relief." An escape plan was devised whereby BAER and one of his companions, John Null, would be sent to Federal lines to seek medicine and food for the Union prisoners -- under a supposed flag of truce. The plan was conceived as an escape, and LT. BAER and Null started out for the Union lines.

BAER was still on crutches, and he and Null trudged slowly toward Federal positions. They slept during the day, moved cautiously at night so as not to be caught. After four days they were suddenly detected by bloodhounds, and BAER and Null climbed a tree to seek safety. The Confederate men were soon upon them, and they were recaptured.

LT. BAER, still in severe pain, his hands raw from four days and nights on crutches, threw himself on the ground, begging his captors to shoot him. He refused to return to the prison camp, but he was finally placed on the back of a horse for the trip to the prison camp at Cheneyville, ten miles south of Alexandria, Louisiana.

The Union's Red River tactic aimed at gaining a foothold in Texas was a disaster. The maneuver was undertaken during the spring when the river was supposed to be on the rise. As many Union forces were approaching Shreveport, Louisiana, the Red River fell, instead of rising, and Gen. Banks ordered a hurry-up retreat downstream, fearing that his troops might be stranded as far north as Pleasant Hill, halfway between Alexandria and Shreveport. That was the end of the Texas campaign, but LT. BAER, even though he had escaped the final stages of the Red River fisaco, was now held prisoner by the Confederates at Cheneyville.

Prisoner exchanges during 1864 were rare, General Grant refusing the many appeals from heartbroken mothers and wives on both sides. The chances that JOHN BAER would be transferred to a Union camp seemed remote, but in August word came through that he was being shipped to Camp Chase, just west of Columbus, Ohio, as part of a general exchange involving some 10,000 sick and wounded.

Camp Chase was one of the important military prisons of the North. Captured Confederates were confined here, and by 1864 the number of Rebel prisoners at Camp Chase reached an all-time high. The prison was recognized by both the South and North as being highly fair in the treatment of Confederate prisoners, but by 1864 food was rationed severely and the facilities for all men at Camp Chase deteriorated.[49]

LT. BAER, during the latter months of 1864, was placed in charge of 1700 Confederate parolees at Camp Chase -- after he had recovered his health sufficiently. Confederate soldiers, under parole, were permitted to roam wherever they pleased in Columbus, and on occasions would hold banquets at the American House where they would regale each other during enthusiastic outbursts in support of the southern cause. But this was soon curtailed, and LT. BAER'S assignment was to maintain appropriate discipline among his parolees.

During his stay at Camp Chase JOHN met a young lady named ELIZABETH CAROLINE RILEY (IV*13) who lived in Bethel, Clermont County, Ohio, some 100 miles to the

---

[49] Col. W. H. Knauss, "The Story of Camp Chase," *The Ohio Magazine*, Vol. I, No. 1, pp. 233-240.

southwest. LIBBIE'S father, GARRARD RILEY, also was solidly engaged in the Civil War. Even though JOHN'S interest in the young LIBBIE was high, visits with her were few, and correspondence ultimately took the place of personal visitations.

During these fall months of 1864 President Lincoln was up for re-election, and the public was most negative toward a second term. His policies were considered "bankrupt and slaughterous." General Grant, attempting to drive toward Richmond, had stalled in north central Virginia where, in the Wilderness Battle, he had lost 54,000 men killed or wounded. News of the Red River failure in Louisiana added to the gloom. And Sherman's march into Georgia had not been successful.

President Lincoln admitted to his close associates that it "was the end of the line for him." He was prepared to work out a plan for an effective transition of his administration to his successor, most likely to be Gen. George McClellan who had often denounced Lincoln's war policies.

But, suddenly, on 2 September, news reached Washington that Sherman had taken Atlanta, the strategic rail center of the south. Meanwhile, news from the Shenandoah Valley was good, Gen. P. H. Sheridan having won a decisive victory at Winchester, Virginia. When the final election returns came in on 8 November Lincoln had carried every Union state except Delaware, New Jersey and Kentucky. He was 55 years old.

The good war news continued. Sherman, after his Atlanta victory, marched straight to the Atlantic and Savannah, Georgia. On 21 December the city capitulated. In Tennessee Rebel forces were demolished. Young LT. BAER, his health recovered, left Camp Chase in December and rejoined his regiment now stationed at Carville, Louisiana, just south of Baton Rouge. Morale was running high as news of the war spread among the fighting forces. The word was that the war was rushing toward an early victorious close for the Union cause.

But such was not to be. Much of Florida, the Carolinas and other segments of the South were still holding out. LT. BAER found his 120th O.V.I. being consolidated into the 114th Ohio Infantry, so depleted were its ranks. The 120th had entered service in 1862 with 949 officers and men. About 150 recruits were added in 1864. When merged with the 114th on 27 November 1864 it had but 440 of the whole number remaining. Some 600 had been killed in action, died of wounds and disease, or discharged because of disability. LT. BAER'S ranking officer was still prisoner of war and his position fell to JOHN.

Their new orders sent them off on transports down the Mississippi to the Gulf of Mexico where they headed for Pensacola, Florida, to consolidate Federal positions along the various Gulf ports, including Mobile, Alabama. Still at the fighting front, BAER was one of 80 volunteers to form a skirmish line for the assaulting brigade moving on Spanish Fort and Fort Blakely. It was 8 April 1865.

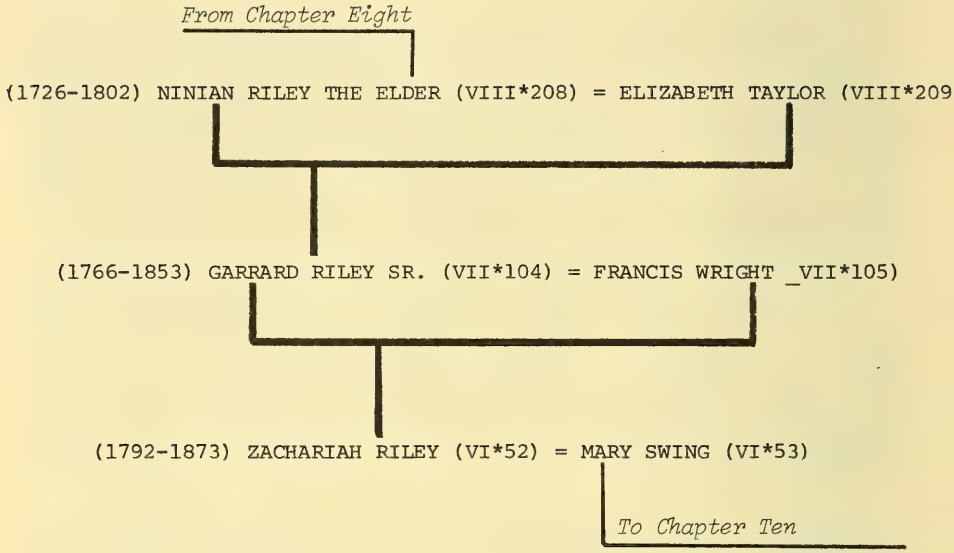
LT. BAER again survived the perilous fire during battle. One of the sergeants under BAER'S command shot a Rebel major who was standing so close that the powder singed BAER'S face. As Mobile fell to the Union forces, word reached the front that President Lincoln had been assassinated. The battle victory was tempered with sorrow. It was 14 April 1865. The Civil War had ended only days earlier, with the surrender of Gen. Robert E. Lee at Appomattox, Virginia, on 10 April. More than four million troops took part in the War; 617,000 were dead.

LT. BAER was sent to Selma, Alabama, after the close of the War; then to Mobile on 14 June. He had been promoted to Captain a month earlier. The 114th Ohio, including the old 120th, was consolidated into the 48th Ohio Batallion at which time CAPTAIN BAER was assigned to the staff of Gen. C. C. Andrews as Ordnance Officer.

Troops were mustered out as the summer progressed. Honorable discharge came to CAPTAIN JOHN MASON BAER on 16 October 1865. He was 20 years and two days old.

JOHN headed north, now a civilian, enroute to his farm in Black Creek, Wisconsin, but not until he was able to pay a visit to LIBBIE RILEY in Bethel, Ohio.

9


From Chapter Eight
(1726-1802) NINIAN RILEY THE ELDER (VIII*208) = ELIZABETH TAYLOR (VIII*209
(1766-1853) GARRARD RILEY SR. (VII*104) = FRANCIS WRIGHT _VII*105)
(1792-1873) ZACHARIAH RILEY (VI*52) = MARY SWING (VI*53)
To Chapter Ten

CHAPTER NINE — Riley, Wright

NINIAN RILEY (VIII*208) was 50 years old when the American colonies declared their independence from England. He was living in Montgomery County, Maryland, where he was born in 1726. His father and grandfather both lived in Montgomery County.

NINIAN'S grandfather was one of three brothers who came to America in 1634 from Northern Ireland where the English king, Charles I, was attempting to raise an Irish army, destined to serve in Britain. An earlier king, James I, had forced a forfeiture of land to the English crown, resulting in an immigration of Protestant Scots, Welsh, and English into Ireland. These Protestants resisted the formation of the army, and uprisings were many.

Many northern Irish were murdered or died of ill-treatment. Word reaching the Rileys of Northern Ireland hinted of a new life in America, and the three Riley brothers, with many others, set sail for this new English colony. Lord Baltimore, a member of parliament and Secretary of State of James I from 1609 to 1625, persuaded the King of England to grant him colonial land above the Potomac River.

Two hundred Protestant laborors and twenty Catholic gentlemen were in the first ship to arrive in the new colony in 1634. They settled nine miles up the St. George's River, which empties into the Potomac. Lord Baltimore announced to all that Maryland would be free of religious persecution, and that protection would be provided for all Christians, regardless of their beliefs.[1]

Despite Maryland's Act Concerning Religion, passed in 1649, many conflicts among a multitude of diverse

---

[1]The ancestors of NINIAN RILEY have not been identified, and only family legend reveals their having come to America in 1634 from North Ireland. NINIAN'S grandfather is said to have been Solomon Riley as mentioned in a Riley family reunion in North Indianapolis, Indiana in 1893 when Zachariah F. Riley, a great grandson of NINIAN told of three Riley brothers who settled in Maryland in 1634. This legend is supported somewhat by other information that tells of a 1634 arrival of 220 immigrants who settled in Maryland. A great, great, great grandson of NINIAN SR. Otis V. Riley (b. 1860), states in his biography that NINIAN SR. was born in England and "was a noted member of the clergy." However, there is nothing to support Otis Riley's contention that NINIAN SR. was the immigrant ancestor.

groups of people resulted in isolated instances of persecution. NINIAN RILEY, when a young man, heard a Baptist named Jerry Moore preach through the bars of a prison, exhorting his listeners to embrace the Baptist belief. Jerry Moore had been imprisoned for his evangelical zeal on behalf of the Baptist faith, but he continued to preach -- behind the prison grills.

The Baptist churches in Maryland and throughout the Colonies emerged largely from a leftist movement among the Puritans of New England. NINIAN, a young man living during the religious Great Awakening, watched the revolt spread throughout the Colonies against the traditional churches. The rebellion widened with dazzling speed, and multitudes were converted to the Baptists. NINIAN was one of them.

Earning his living as a farmer, he devoted much of his time to his church and soon was licensed to preach the Baptist faith. By the end of the American Revolution he had raised a family of four sons and eight daughters. GARRARD RILEY (VII*104), one of his sons, was born on 26 May 1766, being ten years old when the Declaration of Independence was adopted by the Colonies in 1776.

The Baptist religion dominated the lives of the Rileys of Montgomery County. But the news seeping north from North Carolina caused much discussion among the family members. They could move to North Carolina where land was cheap. Perhaps the family could prosper there. In addition the Baptist Church was becoming well organized in North Carolina.

This blend of a well organized Baptist church and cheap land in North Carolina resulted in the Riley family cutting their family ties with Montgomery County and heading down the Great Wagon Road to the South, through the Valley of Virginia. The year was 1784, only months after the close of the American Revolution.

The large family traveled inside or alongside their horse-drawn wagons. It was fall, and they admired the reddening of the maples along the Valley after crossing the Potomac at Watkins' Ferry, several miles south of Hagerstown, Maryland.

---

[2]The Baptist Sandy Creek Association was formed in North Carolina as early as 1772 at which time ten churches were active, according to G. W. Paschal in his *History of North Carolina Baptists -- 1663-1805, Vol. I* (1930) *pp. 406, 407.*

Traveling south down the Shenandoah Valley they encountered many types of people with whom they had had little contact during their lives in Montgomery. There were the poverty stricken who could not afford to purchase land in Pennsylvania or Jersey but who wanted land of their own. Others were skipping out on debts they could not pay back in the northern colonies. Then there were those fleeing to escape punishment for some evil deed.

As the Rileys moved southward they met frontiersmen whose morality startled these church-going evangelical Baptists. The Rileys were aghast at the householders along the way who danced, drank beer and whiskey, played cards, used profanity and ignored the Sabbath.

But, also enroute, they found solace in other southbound travelers who were seeking new and respectable lives: Methodists, Moravians, Presbyterians, Quakers and, of course, other Baptists. Indeed, travelers along the Great Wagon Road were a motley crowd -- the religious, the immoral, the poor, the adventurous, the ambitious.

The Road was long, and rough. In general, it followed old Indian trails, meandering along early paths not easily traversed by wagons. Only 10 or 12 years before the Rileys took off for North Carolina had the Road become passable to wagon traffic. Until that time it was merely a foot path, gradually giving way to the wagon.

The Riley family left Maryland in the fall because they had heard that the Road would be in better condition during that season of the year. The summer rains would have subsided, and through Virginia the counties appointed road "overseers" or "viewers" who were charged with keeping up the Road at county expense. These "overseers" were mostly farmers, and they assumed their road maintenance role in the fall after they had harvested their crops. Thus, travel in the autumn of the year was preferred.

Even so, the Road was often impassable. When rains did come, the mud and flooding virtually halted all traffic. When NINIAN RILEY and his family arrived at Looney's Mill Creek (later Buchanan, Virginia) they were greeted by a swollen river that required their using the ferry. Had it not recently rained, they could have forded the stream, but NINIAN thought it prudent to take advantage of the ferry.

Before embarking, NINIAN'S sons placed blinders on the horses to limit their vision. The ferry was a flat-bottomed scow, less than 30 feet in length. It had a sloped end and railings to keep the horses and livestock from going overboard. The Rileys found the short trip to be exciting, indeed, with the floodwaters rocking the ferry, flat-bottomed or not. One of their horses became overly nervous, and in its attempt to seek safety in the rocking boat broke its leg.

The Rileys slumbered at night either in their wagons or on the ground. On some nights they would seek permission from a farmer to sleep in his hay loft. Despite the rough life among the frontiersmen in the Valley, most people were willing to help the weary travelers. Farmers would sometimes provide a couple of beds and even meals for the family.

When households along the road referred to their offerings as "publick houses," they were restricted by law to charge no more than the county permitted. Lodging for the night was about eight cents per person. Keeping a horse with a "sufficiency of hay, fodder or sheaf oats" cost NINIAN 33 cents. The charge for breakfast was 20 cents per person.

With such a large family, NINIAN did not stop at many public inns. Not only was the overnight cost high, but they found the facilities were not always acceptable. In one public house they had to wash at the watering trough in the stable yard. They slept four to a bed. Then, to add to their discomfort, raucous singing prevented them from sleeping until the early morning hours. Better to depend on themselves, thought NINIAN, rather than pay to receive little in the way of sleeping comfort.

For the most part, the Riley caravan consisted of two-wheeled carts, which were much more maneuverable on the often narrow Road. They were pulled by a single horse. In addition they had several packhorses plus some livestock.

After three weeks the tired family approached Big Lick, Virginia (later Roanoke), where they ferried across the New River. Here the Great Wagon Road lost many of its travelers who took the Wilderness Road into Tennessee and Kentucky. But the Rileys were headed for North Carolina, and they were now no more than 60 miles from the Virginia-North Carolina boundary.

Crossing the line into North Carolina a few days later they found themselves in Surry County. The land

was beautiful, and a welcome sight to the travel-weary NINIAN, his wife ELIZABETH, their son GARRARD, and other children.

They continued on the Great Wagon Road for some 30 miles where they reached Shallowford, for many years an important traffic hub for Indians and early white settlers. During the Revolutionary War virtually all military traffic crossed the Yadkin River at Shallowford. Its attraction stemmed from the fact that during high water other nearby fords would flood, but Shallowford would remain usable.[3]

The Rileys turned west at Shallowford, following the old Mulberry Fields and Salisbury Roads to the southwestern corner of Surry County. Here NINIAN RILEY arranged for the purchase of 400 acres of patent land from the State of North Carolina. The acreage was located on "Buck Shoals Branch Waters" of Hunting Creek. He paid 200 shillings for the land.[4]

Living near the Riley farm was the family of CAPTAIN JOHN WRIGHT (VIII*210), a former plantation owner and lawyer from northern Virginia. He and his family had arrived in North Carolina in 1774. The Captain had married ANN WILLIAMS (VIII*211) in 1753. She was the daughter of JONAS WILLIAMS (IX*422) and his wife HONOUR.

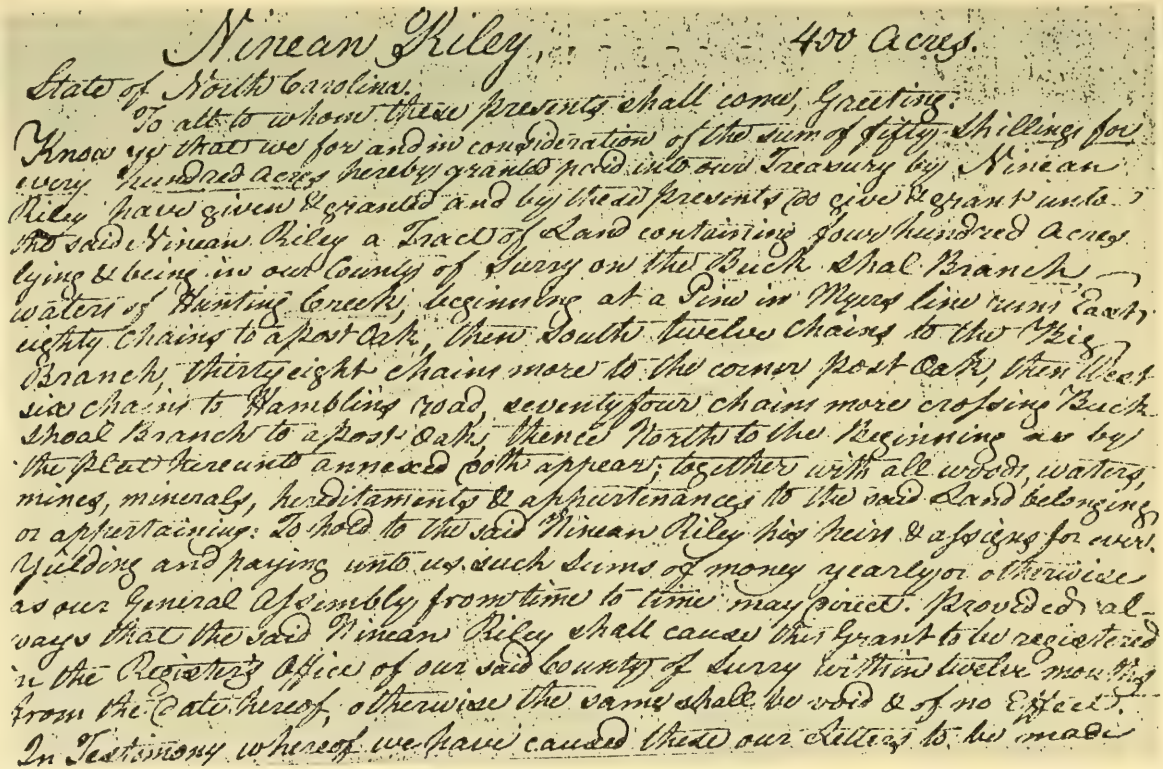
CAPTAIN WRIGHT descended from a long line of prominent Wright families of Montgomery County, Maryland, and northern Virginia.[5] However, after JOHN'S marriage to ANN WILLIAMS, he renounced his affiliation with the Church of England to which he and his ancestors had be-

---

[3]Shallowford is on the Yadkin River just east of Huntsville, N. C.

[4]Payment recorded on 19 August 1787 in Book D, p. 126, Surry County Deed Record Book, in Courthouse, Dobson, N. C. The lower half of Surry County, in which the NINIAN RILEY farm was located, became Yadkin County in 1850. "Surry" is the correct spelling although the county in south England is spelled "Surrey."

[5]CAPTAIN JOHN WRIGHT was a distant relative of General George Washington, being a second cousin, one generation removed. All descendants of JOHN WRIGHT are second cousins of George Washington, with the number of times removed determined by number of generations that follow CAPTAIN JOHN WRIGHT, plus one. For example, the author's wife, a descendant of WRIGHT, is a second cousin of George Washington, seven times removed! The genealogy on the Wrights and Washingtons is found in Appendix A, p. 463.



Ninean Riley - - - - - - 400 acres.

State of North Carolina.

To all to whome these Presents shall come, Greeting:

Know ye that we for and in consideration of the sum of fifty Shillings for every Hundred acres hereby granted paid into our Treasury by Ninean Riley have given & granted and by these Presents do give & grant unto the said Ninean Riley a Tract of Land containing four hundred acres lying & being in our County of Surry on the Buck Shal Branch waters of Hunting Creek, beginning at a Pine in Myers line runs East eighty Chains to a post Oak, then South twelve Chains to the Mill Branch, thirty eight Chains more to the corner post Oak, then West six Chains to Rambling road, seventy four chains more crossing Buck Shoal Branch to a post Oak, thence North to the Beginning as by the Plat hereunto annexed doth appear; together with all woods, waters, mines, minerals, hereditaments & appurtenances to the said Land belonging or appertaining: To hold to the said Ninean Riley his heirs & assigns for ever. Yielding and paying unto us such sums of money yearly or otherwise as our General Assembly from time to time may direct. Provided always that the said Ninean Riley shall cause this Grant to be registered in the Register's office of our said County of Surry within twelve months from the Date hereof, otherwise the same shall be void & of no Effect.

In Testimony whereof we have caused these our Letters to be made

SURRY COUNTY RECORDING OF NINIAN RILEY'S PURCHASE of 400 acres in Buck Shoals area in southwestern corner of North Carolina. The deed was recorded in 1789, five years after the family's arrival in the state. The lower half of Surry County, in which the Rileys settled, became Yadkin County in 1850.

longed since the days of the Reformation. This so embittered his parents that a rift grew between them, and JOHN and ANN decided to move to North Carolina where they had heard of the growth of the Baptist Church.

The Wrights had 18 children, some of them grown and married prior to the departure from Virginia in 1774. One of their younger daughters, FRANCES WRIGHT (VII*105), was born in 1769. She and GARRARD RILEY met and in 1785 GARRARD proposed, but she refused, saying she was too young at 16 to be marrying.

However, the resistance did not last long, and they made plans to be married during January 1786. FRANCES spun and wove and bleached her own wedding dress, apron and handkerchief. She made the yarn from raw cotton and knit her stockings.[6]

GARRARD became the owner of 100 acres on the North Fork of Hunting Creek and he worked the timber, the field and shop in order to provide the meat and bread for what soon was to be a growing family. FRANCES spun and wove all their clothing for both summer and winter.

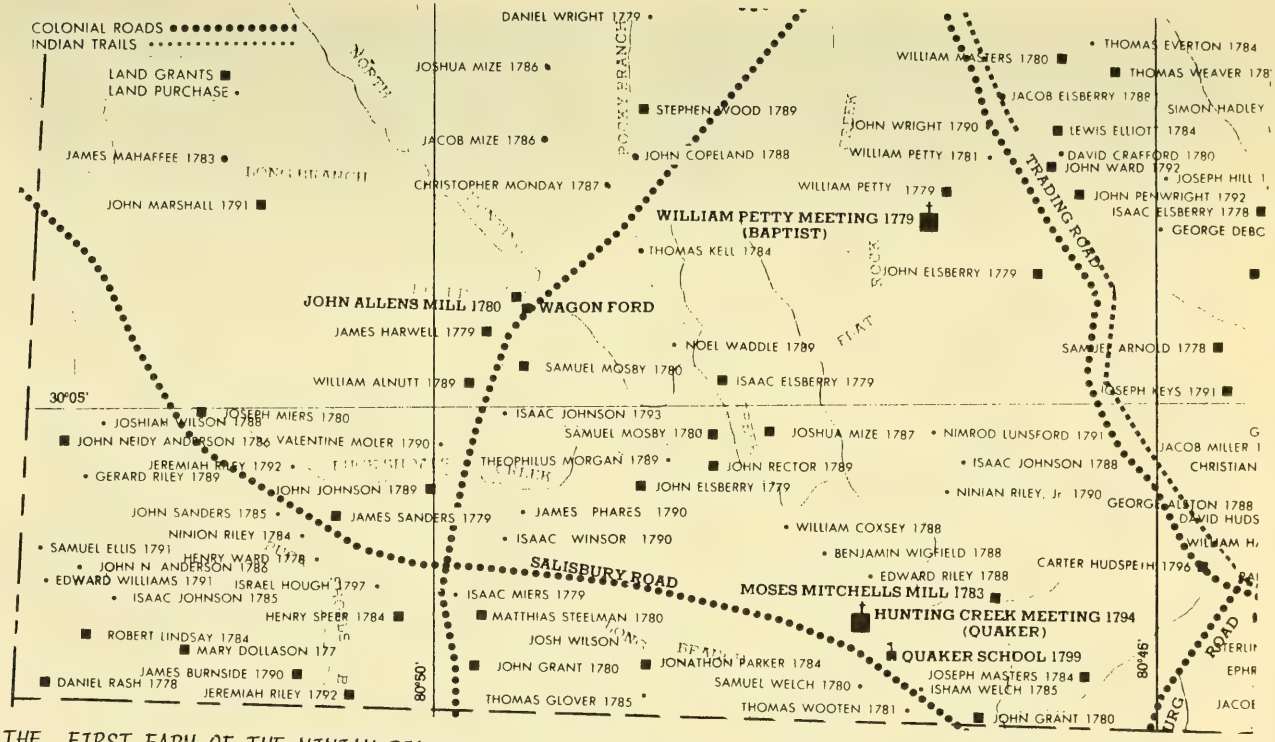
All of their furniture was homemade. FRANCES was a neat homemaker, and they were a happy couple, with pets, flowers and bright things about their house. GARRARD, following his father NINIAN, was active in the Baptist Church, and soon became a licensed minister.

Before the end of the year their first child, Nancy, was born on 6 December 1786, the first grandchild of NINIAN, now 60 years old. Nancy was a month old when her parents took her to NINIAN'S home where the grandfather viewed her for the first time. So elated was NINIAN when he saw Nancy that he jumped high into the air and clicked his feet together before he came down. Then, in this burst of excitement, he ran three steps up the wall of the room, impressing all who witnessed the performance.

NINIAN acquired considerable land in Surry County, but gradually dispersed it to his three oldest sons: GARRARD, James, and Ninian Jr. The latter received acreage in 1789, the deed reading in part that NINIAN RILEY SR. was passing ownership to Ninian Jr. "in con-

---

[6]Based on a paper delivered at the 1893 Riley Family Reunion.



THE FIRST FARM OF THE NINIAN RILEY FAMILY was on the Buck Shoals Branch of Hunting Creek in Surry County, N. C. This section of a historical map of Yadkin County (formerly Surry County) shows the approximate locations of five Riley families, including GARRARD RILEY, NINIAN'S son. Living about three miles from NINIAN RILEY was John Ellsberry, long-time friend of the Rileys. (From "Yadkin County Historical Documentation" printed in 1976 by The Custom House, Jamestown, N. C.)

sideration of the natural love and affection which he hath and beareth unto his son."[7]

A similar transfer of ownership to his fourth son, John, took place in 1794 when, as stated in the deed, "...whereas my youngest son John Riley has just arrived at the age of twenty-one."

These were exciting years for the Rileys. The families were doing well, and two of NINIAN'S sons, GARRARD and John, were now Baptist ministers. GARRARD'S family was growing. In addition to Nancy, three sons were born on the Surry County farm: Ninian, John and ZACHARIAH (VI*52).

A neighboring family with whom the Rileys shared many of their trials and tribulations as well as their successes was the John Ellsberry clan. John emigrated from Cecil County, Maryland, and settled near Hunting Creek. John Ellsberry's son, Isaac, born in 1755, married Agatha Wright, a sister of FRANCES WRIGHT RILEY, GARRARD'S wife.

They were pioneer Methodists, and a church built on the corner of Isaac's farm was long known as the Ellsberry's Meeting House. Young ZACHARIAH RILEY, born in 1791, spent many an hour on a crude stool, chin in hands, listening to Isaac Ellsberry recite fascinating stories of his experiences in the American War of Independence.[8]

The national news reaching Surry County was spirit-stirring. General George Washington had been elected the first president of the new United States in 1789, being inaugurated on 30 April. The first Federal Census in 1790 revealed that there were more than 200,000 persons living in North Carolina. Largest of all states was Virginia, with 820,000 inhabitants. The total U. S. population was four million.

As devout Baptists, the Riley families in Surry County were members of the earlier Separatist movement within the Baptist Church, siding with those taking a most severe stand in the fight for religious freedom. By the late 1790's this division dwindled and unity within the church prevailed. However, a new and gnawing problem was presenting itself among the Baptists in

---

[7]Book E, p. 82, Surry County, Deed Record Book, in Courthouse, Dobson, N. C.

[8]The Ellsberry and Riley families remained close during the several generations to follow. The Ellsberry information is based on a letter written by George W. Ellsberry, a great grandson of Isaac, to his sister Mary. It was reprinted in the Bethel (Ohio) Journal on 23 May 1902.

North Carolina. The attitude of southern Baptists toward slavery was something that the Rileys could not tolerate.[9]

Although Maryland was the first state to engage in slavery, the practice did not become prevalent in Montgomery County prior to NINIAN'S emigration to North Carolina. He saw some slavery in action in Montgomery, and he rebelled against it. He knew that Thomas Jefferson, among others, took the position that slavery was abhorrent and that it violated the moral sense that dignity belongs to every man, regardless of color.

In the eastern and central part of North Carolina there was a growing feeling among Southerners that slaves were, when in servitude, better off than they would be as free men. Those growing tobacco on the plantations in the Albemarle section of North Carolina were becoming adamant that slavery should be encouraged.

But GARRARD felt strongly about the slavery movement, rejecting it in vigorous terms. He talked to his father about the feasibility of moving away from North Carolina. He described what for many years had been Kentucky County of Virginia, declared a separate state in 1792. Daniel Boone, from the nearby Yadkin River in North Carolina, had emigrated to Kentucky not too many years earlier. The Cumberland Gap would make the trip over the Appalachian mountains possible.

Many North Carolinians had already moved to this western part of the country. Henry Riley had lived in Kentucky's Fayette County since 1789. The word reaching the Rileys and others in Surry County was that this frontier country would offer those willing to take the risk great economic gain plus a new religious life and a removal from the repugnant slavery institution. The Rileys were going West. It was 1796.[10]

The patriarch of the movement west was NINIAN RILEY SR., now 70 years of age. But GARRARD RILEY emerged as the active leader. He was 30, and eight other families, in addition to those of NINIAN SR. and GARRARD, rallied around the quest for a new life in Kentucky.

---

[9]The Baptists ultimately split on the slavery issue some years later, forming the Northern and Southern Baptists conventions.

[10]The 1790 Federal Census for Kentucky lists four Rileys: Henry in Fayette County, another Henry in Woodford County, John in Bourbon, and another John in Woodford. It is possible, even probable, that one or more of these Rileys were the forerunners of the North Carolina Rileys heading for Kentucky in 1796. The Henry Riley of Fayette County was on a Tax List as early as 21 May 1789.

The day came when all families began the arduous task of packing their belongings into seven wagons. There were the cooking utensils, bedding, the spinning wheel and the churn. The men stowed their carpenter's tools, their axes, their mattocks. Ten milk cows were herded together for the journey. GARRARD and FRANCES put their loom in the family wagon. And in each wagon was the family Bible.

Finally the teams were backed up to the traces, hitched to the wagons, and the trip began. Twenty adults, with 40 children, looked back on their homes of Surry County as they moved slowly down the road, filled with anxiety, facing weeks of unknown travel, hardship and privation -- and a life in the wilderness where they must provide their own food, clothing, medical care, and all other family needs.

They were heading for the Cumberland Gap, many miles to the west, in northern Tennessee. GARRARD'S oldest child, Nancy, was ten; Ninian was seven, John was six, and ZACHARIAH five.[11] The youngsters were comforted around the evening campfires by the presence of so many family members, including several uncles and aunts traveling in their own family wagons. In addition, Isaac Ellsberry and his family were making the move with the Rileys.[12]

It was an imposing caravan. Each night the wagons were drawn into a circle around the campfire, with the dogs constantly yelping at wild animals lurking nearby. One of the older men remained awake all night, on watch for some untoward event that might threaten the safety of the travelers. Bibles were read by the campfire light.

On their fourth day they reached the well-traveled Wilderness Road which, later, led them into the Cumberland Gap where a couple of dozen years earlier Daniel Boone had traveled on his pioneering trips to Kentucky. Here they encountered other families emigrating to the West. On rare occasions they would see a chaise bearing a well-to-do person. More common were the packhorse

---

[11]The minutes of the 1893 Riley Family Reunion state that five children of GARRARD and FRANCES made the journey to Kentucky. However, the identity of this fifth child is not known. It could have been Frances, a daughter, based on a listing of the children presumed to be in order of birth, provided by Otis V. Riley, a descendant of Ninian Riley, the second son of GARRARD SR.

[12]It has not been definitely established that Issac Ellsberry and his family accompanied the Rileys to Kentucky, but it is known that at least one family in the caravan was not a Riley. It is assumed to be the Issac Ellsberry family. They did in fact emigrate to Clark County, Ky.

trains, with a dozen or more riderless horses tied to the lead horse of the packman carrying provisions to an interior settlement. Each pack horse could carry as much as 600 pounds.

Leaving the Gap GERRARD and his cluster of wagons and cows and dogs headed northwest into Kentucky. They were soon struck with the beauty of the state. The forests were magnificent. They saw one sycamore tree that appeared to be at least 12 feet in diameter.

They were told by Kentucky frontiersmen that the Indians thought so highly of Kentucky that they refused to live in it -- using it only as a hunting ground. There were more deer and buffalo here than in any other area east of the Mississippi River. The Indians would cross over from Ohio (then a part of the Northwest Territory) and Tennessee. But they were not a threat to the Rileys. Since the end of the Revolutionary War in 1783 the Indians had gradually withdrawn from the area.

The Rileys were often helped by the Kentucky frontiersman who carried the familiar long-barreled rifle. ZACHARIAH, Nancy and the other children were intrigued by the garb: a deerskin hunting shirt with buckskin moccasins and leggings. On his head was the coonskin cap, with its tail hanging down to his neck. Over his shoulder he carried his sling, with its knife, shot pouch and hatchet.

In the lowlands of Kentucky the Rileys frequently encountered the many deer and buffalo attracted to the pastures. These deer and buffalo, in turn, lured a wide variety of wild animals who would prey on them. These were sights new to the Rileys. They now knew that they were indeed in a frontierland.

Excitement began to grip the families as they realized they were approaching the end of their arduous journey. The Isaac Ellsberrys left the group in Clark County in the central part of the new state. GARRARD and FRANCES, with their five children, bought a lease in neighboring Bourbon County, near Paris. They first saw the community as they passed through it on the Old State Road. It was a stopping place for wagoners. The Rileys were attracted by the Old Cane Ridge Meeting House, a log church, constructed in 1789 and used jointly by Baptists and Methodists.[13]

---

[13] *Historical Scrapbook, Bourbon County, Ky.* 1939.

NINIAN SR. and his other sons, however, decided to settle in Fayette County, ten miles south of Lexington, a community incorporated about a dozen years earlier. NINIAN SR. bought 1000 acres of excellent land just seven miles north of the Kentucky River. GARRARD soon recognized the greater opportunities in Fayette County and moved there the next fall, obtaining 50 acres in the center of his father's tract, on East Hickman Creek. Several of GARRARD'S brothers shared in this joint farming effort.

Here GARRARD built another log cabin, farmed, continued to increase his family which, after a few years, totaled a wife and ten children. ZACHARIAH, early in the 1800's, was helping with the farming chores.

With the passing of time, NINIAN SR. was becoming less and less able to handle his farm share. By 1802 he failed completely, and as the family gathered at his bedside he passed away. He was buried in a churchyard near Walnut Hill.[14]

GARRARD RILEY'S hope that the move to Kentucky would enable them to live without the slavery problem was not developing to his satisfaction. Even though he devoted much time to the Baptist Church, and toiled through long days on his farm, he found time to be concerned about the slavery movement that was constantly growing in his area as well as throughout Kentucky.

GARRARD RILEY was encouraged in 1800 by the election of Thomas Jefferson as President of the United States. The country's new leader promised to reduce federal expenditures by cutting back on the national debt, dismantling the Navy, reducing the Army, and repealing internal taxes. Jefferson sought less governmental interference, leaving the states to solve their own problems. And, highly important to GARRARD, he took a strong position in opposition to the institution of slavery.

Under Jefferson the country's economy expanded rapidly. But, to his dismay, so did slavery. In central Kentucky, as well as throughout the state, slaveholders and business men were aligned against the farmers and other anti-slavery proponents, the latter seeking to redraft the Kentucky constitution so that slavery would be outlawed.

However, slavery moved forward. GARRARD wanted to live on free soil. Finally, he decided to move to Ohio,

---

[14]The year of NINIAN RILEY SR.'S death has not been established. Most references give 1802 as the date.

which had been granted statehood in 1803 as the 17th state. Ohio had been formed from the Northwest Territory which Congress had established as a "free land," without slavery. So, in 1805 GARRARD decided to explore Ohio. He left his family in Fayette County and headed for the Ohio River.

He and his horse traveled over the Old State Road to Maysville, Kentucky, a river port from which Lexington and central Kentucky drew mercantile supplies from the East. GARRARD then followed the Ohio River some 50 miles east to Portsmouth, Ohio, a small community formed only two years earlier. GARRARD turned north along the Scioto River which empties into the Ohio River at Portsmouth. He followed the old Indian path of the Shawnee who not too many years earlier had fought unsuccessfully to keep the white man from encroaching into their lands.

GARRARD'S destination was Chillicothe, in the Valley of the Scioto Trail, along the great highway for the Shawnee. Only a few years prior the Shawnee had used the same path from the neutral hunting ground of Kentucky to the fishing grounds of Sandusky Bay and Lake Erie to the north.

As GARRARD started up the Trail along the edge of the high land from Portsmouth he paused at Raven Rock, the site of the Ohio River lookout post so long used by the Indians to spot unsuspecting whites on their flatboats drifting down the Ohio to Cincinnati, Maysville and other ports to the west. Many an unwary boatman had met his death here, trapped by the jealous red man.

Chillicothe was 40 miles north of Portsmouth. The town was settled in 1796 and had been the capital of the Northwest Territory. It was now the capital of the new state of Ohio when GARRARD arrived there in 1805. GARRARD'S real interest in Chillicothe, however, stemmed from the Scioto Baptist Association that had been organized to oppose slavery.

He was impressed with what he saw. The land was productive, and somewhat cleared of forest. But his enthusiasm was dimmed considerably by the prevalence of ague, a malarial fever. He saw people shaking on the streets and on the porches of their homes. He decided to return to Kentucky.

GARRARD was determined to move to Ohio, and the following fall he again took off for Maysville, ferried across the Ohio River at that point, and turned northwest some 25 miles to the headwaters of Indian Creek, about four miles from Bethel, a small community in Clermony County, 25 miles east of Cincinnati.

GARRARD viewed with great favor the work being done by Baptist churches in the Cincinnati area. Cincinnati had been organized as a town only four years earlier, and the Columbia Church there spawned other Baptist churches throughout Hamilton and Clermont Counties, all taking active roles in opposition to slavery.[15]

GARRARD, upon arriving in Clermont County, called on Obed Denham who with his wife Mary had emigrated to Clermont County in 1797 from New Jersey. Obed had bought 1500 acres in Tate Township at "seven quarters of a dollar per acre." Denham pointed out to GARRARD that he had given land to Bethel's Regular Baptist Church just a few years earlier because this church "does not hold slaves nor commune at the Lord's table with those who do practice such tyranny over their fellow creatures, for to build a house for worship of Almighty God, to bury the dead and no other use."[16]

This was what GARRARD wanted to hear. He was enthusiastic. GARRARD knew that Bethel and Clermont County was to be the new home for the Rileys.[17]

GARRARD saw what he considered to be great bargains in land. He picked out 200 acres about four miles from Denham's, measured it off, as was the practice, and paid $400 for what was formerly a part of the Virginia Military Lands. The property was located on the road between Bethel and Point Pleasant on the Ohio River.

He returned to his family in Kentucky and, in excited terms, told them of what he had found in Clermont County. They made plans to leave Fayette County. The oldest child, Nancy, was now a young lady of 20. ZACHARIAH was 15, and fully capable of assisting his father in the establishment of their new home.

---

[15]The Columbia Church was located five miles east of the present downtown area of Cincinnati. Its first pastor, Rev. John Smith, became a U. S. Senator from Ohio in 1803, and later became the victim of unfavorable publicity related to Aaron Burr's alleged treasonable activities after the latter had been defeated in 1804 as governor of New York State. References to the Columbia Church and the Scioto Baptist Association are drawn from "The Baptist Movement in Ohio," by Isabelle Circle, as it appeared in *Advent of Religious Groups into Ohio*, ed. by Ferne Reedy Lubbers and Margaret Dieringer (Mansfield, Ohio: The Ohio Genealogical Society) pp. 2-4.

[16]Harry L. Hale, "Tate Township, Before Ohio Was Admitted to Union, A Dense Forest," *The Bethel Journal*, 14 June 1973, Sec. 2 of the Bethel 175 Edition.

[17]*ibid.* "Bethel" means "a spot for the worship of God." An attempt to name it Plainfield never took hold. "Bethel" prevailed.

Again the Rileys organized their total belongings into and alongside their wagons and started their trek to Ohio and Clermont County.[18] They followed an old Indian war path from Point Pleasant on the Ohio River to their land in Tate Township, pushing their way through a tangle of undergrowth and shrubbery to the wilderness in which GARRARD had purchased his 200 acres.

The family gazed with some wonderment upon their new location, a dense forest at the headwaters of Indian Creek: great white oaks, maples, beech, black walnut, hickory and elm. "Flowers were everywhere. The woods were almost impenetrable."

The first morning GARRARD instructed the boys on how to make a "hunter's camp" of poles which would be a shelter until they could complete the building of their new cabin. The "hunter's camp" was built on green poles, having three windowless walls and a pole roof, with the front of the cabin completely open.[19] In the middle of the opening young ZACHARIAH built a fire to keep the wild animals away at night.

There were bears in the nearby woods, along with panthers and wolves. Deer were abundant, providing venison for the family. Wild hogs abounded. Small game also was readily available: raccoon, opossum, rabbits, and squirrels. Indian Creek and other streams swarmed with fish, plus otter, muskrat and beavers along the banks. There would be food, but the family had to catch or shoot it.

After the "hunter's camp" was constructed, work on their cabin began in earnest. Trees had to be felled in order to provide a cleared area for the cabin. It was GARRARD'S sixth log cabin -- three in North Carolina, two in Kentucky, and now one in Ohio.

First, down came the trees which were felled, rolled and then burned. The ground was dug with mattocks and hoes in preparation for some planting that would, hopefully, tide them over the winter. Then came the rectangular 12 x 15 foot log cabin, high enough for one to stand erect, but no higher. The logs were chopped and shaped at the ends so that they could be locked more closely together.

---

[18]Several members of the Riley family remained in Kentucky, including John W. and Williams W. Riley, two of GARRARD'S sons. Ninian Riley, another son of GARRARD, moved to Clermont County but returned to Kentucky. The descendants of NINIAN RILEY SR. in Kentucky are many.

[19]*op cit.* Harry L. Hale, *The Bethel Journal.*

The roof was made of clapboard, an advanced building product, brought down the Ohio River on flatboats, and transported over land by the Riley sons some 10 miles from the river dock at Port Pleasant to Bethel. The leftover pieces of the clapboards were used as "chinks" to fill the cracks between the logs. Then followed the plastering of the crevices. The Rileys were pleased with their log cabin, and it provided the family with a degree of warmth that brought all of them through their first winter.[20]

Early that first winter the Rileys were startled by the decision of daughter Nancy to wed Houton Clark, a man as old as Nancy's father. They were married on 6 December 1806. Clark was a native of Yorkshire, England, born in 1766. He came to Bethel in 1798, a year after Obed and Mary Denham bought their acreage.

In 1801 Houton opened a tavern, a small log cabin, Bethel's first inn. Five years later he constructed a brick inn, much larger. It comprised ten rooms "and a large attic." Nancy was the cook and housekeeper for this tavern, being "a tidy woman who kept every nook and corner of the rustic inn in perfect order." The Clark inn prospered, and later it became a stopping place for coaches when the road between Bethel and Cincinnati became a toll pike. It was here that Houton and Nancy Riley Clark operated the inn and raised their children.[21]

GARRARD'S zeal for work and religious effort in Clermont County was without bounds. He spent every Sunday and many evenings preaching the gospel. He organized the Indian Creek Baptist Church, and soon it had a membership of more than 50 persons. He served as its pastor for six years.

---

[20]Drawn from Williams: *History of Clermont and Brown Counties, Ohio; Vol. I* (1913), p. 150.

[21]The 1893 Riley Family Reunion transcript makes many references to Nancy Riley Clark as the family member to whom all Rileys turned. It was reported that she prepared notes on the family's trip from North Carolina to Kentucky, describing the journey in detail. These notes have not been located, if indeed they exist. Nancy and Houton Clark (later spelled Houghton Clarke) had seven children: three sons and four daughters. All achieved some degree of prominence. Perhaps the best known was Reader Wright Clark who served two terms in the Congress of the United States. Houton Clark died in 1834. Twelve years later Nancy married John Salt, a farmer living about five miles southwest of Bethel. She died 14 June 1857 in Clermont County.

THE HOUTON CLARK INN WAS THE FIRST TO BE ESTABLISHED in Bethel. First a log structure, this brick building replaced the initial cabin. Nancy Riley Clark handled the cooking and housekeeping for the Inn, gaining considerable fame for her food preparations. As a gesture of hospitality Houton offered each guest a healthy shot of "Monongehela whiskey." Subsequent drinks of Monongahela cost the consumer six and one quarter cents, or one rabbit skin if the guest happened to be short of cash. The original brick building was enlarged several times by subsequent owners. Located at South Main and West Plane Street, the building ultimately gave way to the Grant Memorial Building

In 1812 he returned to Kentucky where he had charge of three churches. He found it necessary to split his time between his "flock" and his family.

ZACHARIAH RILEY was living with his father in Kentucky when the War of 1812 broke out between the United States and England -- a war designed to prevent Great Britain from controlling what the United States thought was an infringement on its right to trade with France.

Also, some U. S. Congressmen from several western states such as Kentucky and western New York State claimed that the British were encouraging Indian attacks in some of the newly formed states such as Ohio and Indiana. British authorities in Canada were known to be feeding arms and ammunition to the Indians as a means of retaining their friendship.

One of the strategic aspects of the war was a planned invasion of Canada, but this was proving difficult because the United States did not have control of Lake Erie. This resulted in the surrender of the American frontier post of Detroit early in the war by Brig. Gen. William Hull.

The governors of Ohio and Kentucky had been ordered by the War Department to send reinforcements to Gen. Hull, but the 2000 militia and 1000 regulars did not reach him in time.

Major General William Henry Harrison was named Commander-in-Chief during September 1812, with orders to retake Detroit. Gen. Harrison's plan was to collect substantial troops at the foot of the Maumee rapids, near the southwest corner of Lake Erie.

The following winter Fort Meigs was constructed on the Maumee River, completed in February.[22] Gen. Harrison anticipated a British advance from Detroit under Brig. Gen. Henry A. Proctor as soon as the spring thaws broke up the ice on Lake Erie and the Maumee. In March Harrison issued an order for more troops from Kentucky, and ZACHARIAH RILEY, with others, volunteered on 15 March, 1813.[23]

---

[22] Just south of present-day Toledo, Ohio.

[23] The date of ZACHARIAH'S enlistment ranges from 15 March to 29 March 1813. According to "Affidavit of ZACHARIAH RILEY, Bounty Land Claim, State of Ohio, Clermont County," dated 28 April 1855, the enlistment date was 15 March 1813. However, the date appears as 29 March on "War of 1812 Company Muster Roll for ZACHARIAH RILEY," Captain Archibald Morrison's Company of Infantry, 13 Reg't. Kentucky Militia. National Archives and Records Service, Washington, D.C. Captain Archibald Morrison is later referred to as "John C." Morrison in some historical reports.

He was immediately assigned to the Kentucky Militia and, with minimum training, under Captain John C. Morrison, was sent marching across Ohio to join other Kentucky volunteers who earlier had been held back when they could not reach Gen. Hull in Detroit in time.

British Gen. Proctor, with 500 regulars and 1500 Indians, began their move up the Maumee late in April, preparing to lay a siege of Ft. Meigs. By 29 April the main body of Indians in their canoes crossed from the left bank of the Maumee to the Ft. Meigs' side, surrounding the garrison within. The siege had begun in earnest.

FORT MEIGS, ON MAUMEE RIVER in Ohio, in which ZACHARIAH RILEY fought in War of 1812. The Fort is just south of present-day Toledo.

On 4 May an American, Captain William Oliver, skillfully avoiding the Indians, managed to sneak into Ft. Meigs with news that Gen. Green Clay was on his way down the river with 1500 Kentucky volunteers on flatboats. He could, according to Captain Oliver, reach Ft. Meigs in two hours, but was holding back awaiting orders.

Gen. Harrison immediately ordered Gen. Clay to dispatch 800 men, directing them to land on the left bank of the river one and a half miles above the fort. They were "to march thence to the British batteries, take possession of their cannon, spike them, cut down their carriages, return to their boats and cross over to the American side."

The remainder of Clay's forces were ordered to land on the right bank and fight their way to the fort, while being aided by sorties from the garrisons at Ft. Meigs. Colonel William Dudley was in command of the 800 Kentuckians, including Private ZACHARIAH RILEY, scheduled to land on the left bank.

The men formed three lines on the left bank, advancing as silently as possible so as to surprise the British. Before they reached the enemy battery, however, a small band of Indians discovered the Kentuckians, fired upon them, and retreated. Realizing that they had been discovered and that silence was no longer necessary, Col. Dudley's men raised a tremendous shout and opened fire.

The British, now realizing what was happening, abandoned the battery without resistance but to the Americans' surprise had moved to their rear where they attacked the bewildered Kentuckians. The Indians, now in greater numbers, joined in the assault. Both Captain Morrison and Colonel Dudley were killed in the frenzied battle.

The Americans surrendered, and were stripped of most of their clothing and arms. As they were marched back to the British Ft. Miami, the Indians formed a line to the left of the road, there being a high bank on the right where the road passed.

At this point the Kentuckians were forced to run the gauntlet into the fort, with the Indians whipping, shooting and tomahawking the prisoners as they passed. ZACHARIAH managed to survive, but at one point the man in front of him was shot and he stumbled over the dead body. Those in back stumbled over ZACHARIAH and momentarily the passageway to the fort was blocked with bodies.

Once inside, ZACHARIAH looked up at the top of a dilapidated wall to see a painted Indian open fire on a nearby fellow prisoner. Then, after re-loading, he shot two more Americans. Next, he laid down his gun, drew his tomahawk, jumped to the ground and killed two more defenseless men.

ZACHARIAH felt sure a wholesale massacre was to begin as the Indians became more and more excited. The British officers made a weak attempt to quell the frenzied Indians, but their efforts were meaningless, the Indians being out of control.

While this carnage was raging a voice was suddenly heard from the rear, in Indian tongue. It was Tecumseh, the Shawnee chief, who was returning by horse from the battle on the left bank of the Maumee.[24] He sprang from

---

[24]Tecumseh was renown as an orator, warrior and dancer. As a young man he participated in the Shawnee campaigns against the Kentuckians beginning to cross into Ohio late in the 1700's and early 1800's. His father and two brothers were killed during the struggle against white encroachment. Tecumseh was born in 1768 and died only months after the Ft. Meigs encounter, on 5 October 1813 during a battle against Gen. William Henry Harrison's army.

WAR OF 1812.

DECLARATION OF SOLDIER FOR PENSION.

To be executed before Judge or Clerk of Court.

State of Ohio } ss.
County of Clermont }

On this 11th day of April A. D. one thousand eight hundred and seventy One personally appeared before me A. T. Corwin Judge of the Probate Court of Clermont Co. Ohio a Court of Record within and for the county and State aforesaid, Zachariah Riley aged - 80 - years, a resident of Bethel County of Clermont State of Ohio who, being duly sworn according to law, declares that he was married; that his wife's name was Mary Gwinn — to whom he was married at Clermont Co Ohio on the 9th day of February 1817; that he served the full period of sixty days in the (1) Military service of the United States in the war of 1812; that he is the identical Zachariah Riley who (2) Enlisted in Captain Archibald Morrison's company, Col. Dudley's regiment, Irvin's brigade, Gen'l Harrison's division, at Lexington, Kentucky, on the 12th day of March

1813, and was [redacted] taken prisoner near Ft. Meigs on the 5th day of May 1813; that (3) He was held a prisoner about Seven days by the British at the mouth of Huron River, His parole bound him not to serve during the war unless exchanged & before any exchange was effected peace was made. He was in the battle at Dudleys defeat near Ft. Meigs. He has rec'd a land warrant for 160 acres of land

---

that he, at no time during the late rebellion against the authority of the United States, adhered to the cause of the enemies of the Government, giving them aid or comfort, or exercised the functions of any office whatever under any authority, or pretended authority, in hostility to the United States; and that he will support the Constitution of the United States; that he is not in receipt of a pension under any previous act; that he makes this declaration for the purpose of being placed on the pension roll of the United States, under the provision of the act approved February 14, 1871, and he hereby constitutes and appoints, with full power of substitution and revocation, Geo L. Irving *of* Batavia, Ohio *his true and lawful attorney to prosecute his claim and obtain the pension certificate that may be issued; that his post office is at* Bethel *County of* Clermont *State of* Ohio *that his domicil or place of abode is* Bethel Clermont Co Ohio

Jacob Riley (Seal)

APPLICANT.

his mount at which point he thrust himself between two Indians and a prisoner about to be killed.

Tecumseh grabbed one Indian by the throat and the other by the chest and tossed them to the ground. Then, drawing his tomahawk, he ran between the Indians and the Americans, "brandishing them with the fury of a madman, and daring any of the hundreds of Indians surrounding him to attempt another murder." With tears in his eyes he exclaimed "Oh, what will become of my Indians?"

Gen. Proctor was standing nearby. Tecumseh turned to him, and in a stern voice asked why he had not put a stop to this inhuman massacre. "Sir," replied Proctor, "your Indians cannot be commanded."

"Begone!" retorted Tecumseh, in the greatest disdain. "You are unfit to command; go and put on petticoats."[25]

That afternoon ZACHARIAH and other prisoners were placed on open boats and transported to British ships. The battle was considered a success, albeit a costly one to the Kentuckians. Of the original 800 men landing on the left bank of the Maumee, only 150 escaped without harm. Some 650 were either killed or captured.

ZACHARIAH remained a prisoner for eight days, until 13 May. The Kentuckians were then paroled by the British with the understanding that no further military service would be permitted for the duration of the war. ZACHARIAH was discharged from service after six months.[26]

He returned to Clermont County, where he took up farming. He was 22. Living nearby in Tate Township, was a family by the name of Swing. MARY SWING (VI*53) was the only daughter of GEORGE SWING (VII*106). She was 16 years old when ZACHARIAH RILEY returned from the War. He courted her for three years.

---

[25]This account of the battle at Ft. Meigs, often called "Dudley's Defeat," was drawn from James P. Averill, *Fort Meigs - Most Important Military Point in the Northeast.* (Toledo: Blade Printing and Paper Co., 1886) pp. 16-23.

[26]Under his "Bounty Land Claim" under "Act of September 28th, 1850, ZACHARIAH received a Land Warrant entitling him to 80 acres. He disposed of this for cash. He again applied for bounty land under the Act of 1855 and apparently was awarded an additional 80 acres (according to the "War of 1812 Declaration of Soldier for Pensions," State of Ohio, County of Clermont, dated 11 April 1871, based on the pension Act of 14 February 1871). In this latter application ZACHARIAH states he had previously received 160 acres of bounty land. His pension, based on the 1871 Act, amounted to eight dollars a month for life.

THE NEW BOUNTY LAW.

OLD SOLDIERS ATTEND!

The Subscribers are Agents for procuring Bounty land warrants under the law just passed by Congress.

All surviving Soldiers of any of the Wars since 1790, who were in Service

FOURTEEN DAYS,

and in case of their death, the Widows and Children are entitled to Warrants for

ONE HUNDRED AND SIXTY ACRES!

And wherever a bounty warrant for less than that amount has heretofore been obtained, another may now be had to make the quantity up to 160 acres.

Persons entitled would do well to apply soon, before the department is crowded with applications.

March 10, 1855.

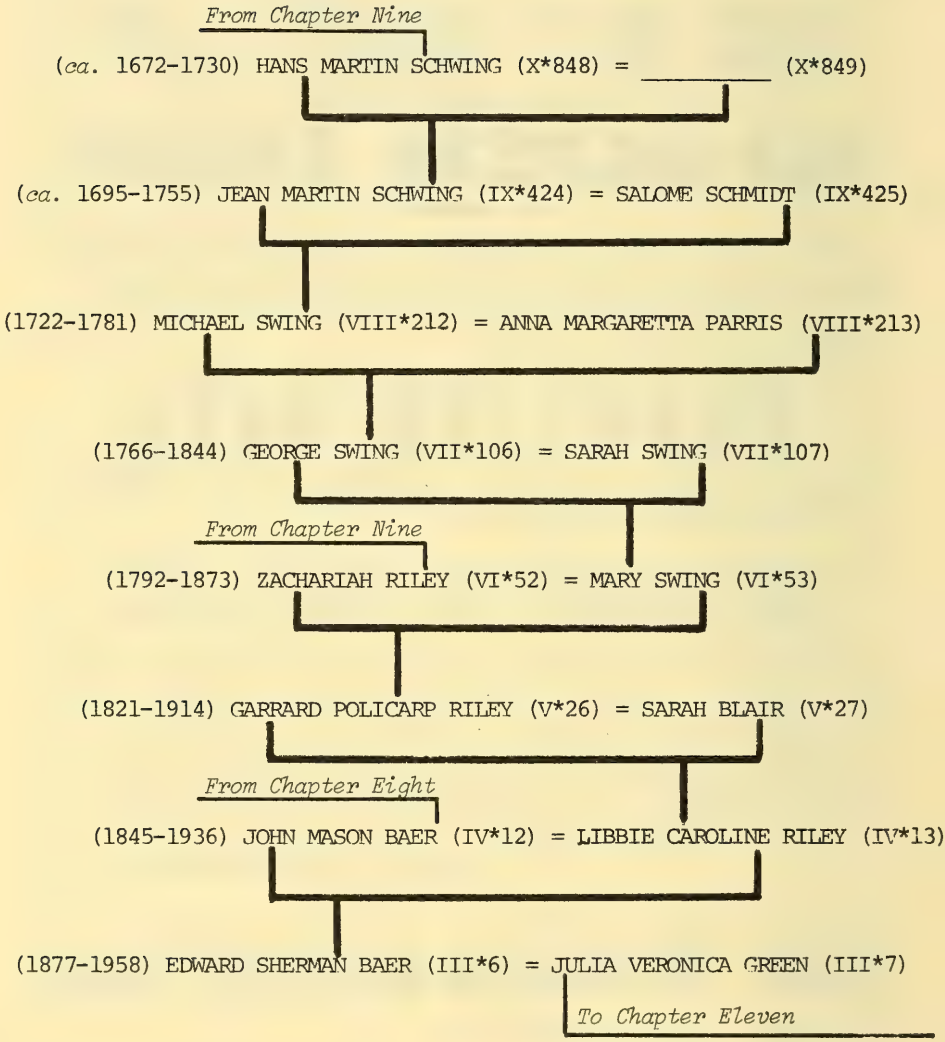
COOLEY & CROSWELL.

Four Thousand Acres of Land

For Sale by the Subscribers

THE ACT OF 1855, providing additional bounty land for war veterans, gave rise to a new service business aimed at aiding the soldiers in obtaining their bounty land. Posters such as this were posted in many public and government places, urging veterans to take advantage of the newly passed Act.

10


From Chapter Nine
(ca. 1672-1730) HANS MARTIN SCHWING (X*848) = _____ (X*849)
(ca. 1695-1755) JEAN MARTIN SCHWING (IX*424) = SALOME SCHMIDT (IX*425)
(1722-1781) MICHAEL SWING (VIII*212) = ANNA MARGARETTA PARRIS (VIII*213)
(1766-1844) GEORGE SWING (VII*106) = SARAH SWING (VII*107)
From Chapter Nine
(1792-1873) ZACHARIAH RILEY (VI*52) = MARY SWING (VI*53)
(1821-1914) GARRARD POLICARP RILEY (V*26) = SARAH BLAIR (V*27)
From Chapter Eight
(1845-1936) JOHN MASON BAER (IV*12) = LIBBIE CAROLINE RILEY (IV*13)
(1877-1958) EDWARD SHERMAN BAER (III*6) = JULIA VERONICA GREEN (III*7)
To Chapter Eleven

CHAPTER TEN — Swing, Riley, Blair, White

European travelers in the Rhine River Valley in the late 1600's relied heavily on inns and taverns for overnight accommodations and food. These inns were an essential part of the traveler's life.

Most inns were marked by some insignia portrayed on a sign in front of the establishment. There was the "Crown Inn," or the "Lion Inn," or the "Bear Inn," and others. HANS MARTIN SCHWING (X*848) was the innkeeper at "Zur Blume," the "Flower Inn," during the late 1600's.[1]

Zur Blume was located in Strasbourg on an island between two branches of the Ill River in northeast France, about two miles from the confluence of the Ill with the River Rhine. It was an important inn. Strasbourg was at the crossroads of routes from France to central Europe and from the Netherlands and Italy. Geographically the city was of strategic importance to many peoples in many European countries.

HANS MARTIN SCHWING'S life was complicated. He was a Huguenot, a French Protestant, whose life was made miserable by the continual harassment of the French rulers. Much of HANS' troubles -- and the troubles of other Huguenots -- stemmed from the Edict of Nantes, issued many years earlier by Henry IV of France. The Edict, in essence, granted Protestants in France a large measure of religious freedom.

While the Edict was received with glee by the Huguenots, the Catholic Clergy contrived many ways to circumvent it. Many declarations by the rulers were issued, attacking the family life of the Protestants. Finally a system of "dragonades" was conceived which enabled government soldiers to live with Huguenot families and deliberately mistreat them.

HANS MARTIN SCHWING and others throughout the region suffered from a wide variety of persecutions: in their civil life, in their property rights, and of course in their inability to exercise their supposed rights to religious freedom. But they continued to resist.

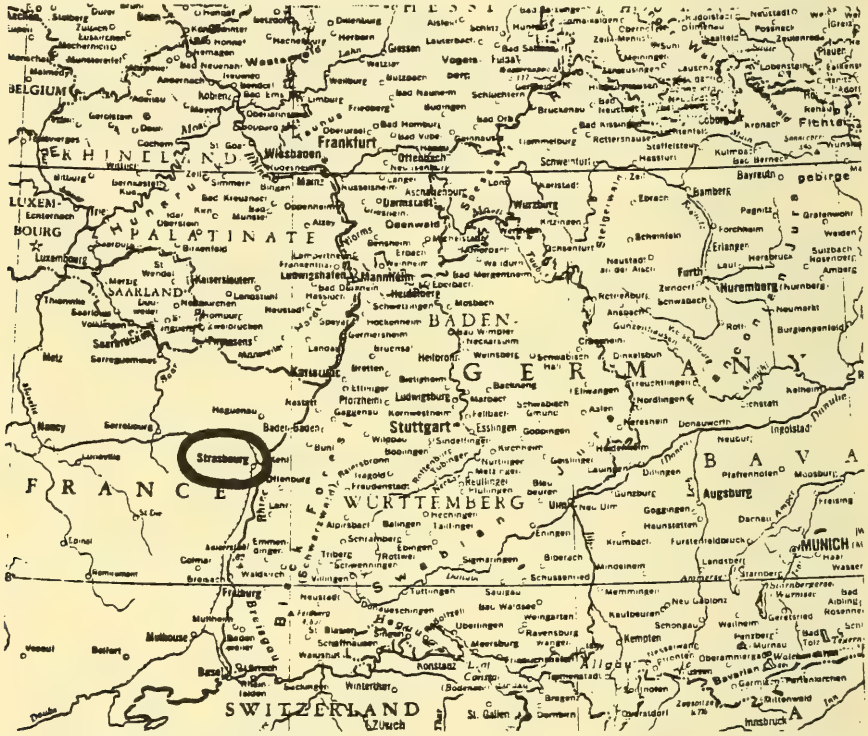
In 1681 HANS and his neighbors were aghast when Louis XIV seized Strasbourg, thus depriving them completely of its freedom. Then, four years later, Louis XIV announced the revocation of the Edict of Nantes,

---

[1] Some graphic portrayal on signs in front of inns was necessary because many of the travelers could not read.

stating that inasmuch as so many Protestants had been converted to Catholicism, the need for the Edict no longer existed.

At this point HANS MARTIN SCHWING and his neighbors realized that they no longer had any religious or civil liberty. They were at the mercy of the French ruler.



MAP SHOWING STRASBOURG *in northeast France where the* SCHWING *family lived during the 1600's.*

HANS' son was born into this life of strife -- at the close of the century. The son was named JEAN MARTIN SCHWING (IX*424). Young JEAN was married on 4 May 1716 to SALOME SCHMIDT of nearby Bischweiler (present-day Bischheim), a suburb of Strasbourg.

He had long listened to his father's many denunciations regarding the unfairness of Louis IV, and the unnecessary harassment of the Huguenots. As JEAN grew into manhood he himself experienced the life of suffering to which Protestants were exposed.

JEAN and SALOME SCHWING had ten children, four of

whom died in infancy.[2] One of their children, MICHAEL SCHWING (VIII*212), born in 1722 in Bischweiler, listened to his father and grandfather over the years. He grew impatient. MICHAEL gradually realized that so strong was the repressiveness the only possible solution for the Schwings was escape.

By the time MICHAEL was in his early teens, he became well acquainted with the German Palatinates, across the Rhine. He heard about some Palatinates who had immigrated to America, a far off land where opportunity was said to be without bounds. Moreover, a man named William Penn was urging Germans, and anyone else who sought true religious freedom, to take up land and live in his "Pennsylvania Island."[3]

MICHAEL SCHWING, living close to the German border, spoke German fluently. He observed this exodus of the Germans from the nearby Palatinate, and he decided to join them.

So it was that during the summer of 1741 he boarded the ship *Marlborough* at Rotterdam, stopped at Cowles, England, for certification, and many weeks later landed at Philadelphia on 23 September 1741.[4] He found the city teeming with Germans, most of whom had already settled in the more desirable nearby farming areas.

MICHAEL, however, found satisfactory land in Philadelphia, and with the expertise of Germans, farmed it well. His letters to his family in Strasbourg were filled with enthusiasm. He was enjoying complete religious freedom. He was, he wrote, able to live as well or even better than the upper classes of Strasbourg.

His sister, Salome Schwing, seven years his junior and still in Strasbourg, listened to her family discuss MICHAEL'S letters. On 8 April 1749 she married Jacob Rummel and shortly thereafter announced that she too was

---

[2]The genealogical data on the early generations of the Schwings-Swings was drawn from Albert H. and Harry P. Swing's *The Swing Family* (1961). Their genealogical data appear in Appendix A, page 466.

[3]More complete information on Palatinates in Germany appears on the earlier pages describing the European backgrounds of the Horning and Baer families.

[4]As reported in Strassburger and Hinke, *Pennsylvania German Pioneers*.

leaving for America. So, this young lady of 20 years left her family and with her husband sailed for the new world across the Atlantic. They arrived in Philadelphia late in 1749 at the same spot MICHAEL had landed eight years earlier.

Salome and Jacob Rummel purchased a farm in York County which had just been established in that same year, although the Germans had settled there some 25 years before. Her letters to MICHAEL, still living in Philadelphia urged him to move to York, an area she described as being unequaled in beauty and as productive in agriculture as any place in the world.

MICHAEL, however, remained in Philadelphia where he married ANNA MARGARETTA PARRIS (VIII*213). Their first two children were born there: the older, Anna Margaretta Swing, in 1753, and the younger, Anna Elizabeth Swing, in 1755. Both were baptized in the Lutheran Church of St. Michael and Zion.[5]

Salome and Jacob Rummel were still pressing MICHAEL and his family to break away from Philadelphia. MICHAEL visited them in York, some 80 miles distant. The trip took four days.

MICHAEL was impressed with what he saw. He soon made arrangements to purchase a farm there. He prospered. His land was not flat, and its rolling characteristic enabled the meadows to drain well and still not collect water in the valleys. Rainfall ranged from between 35 and 45 inches a year which, with the change in seasons, yielded a sufficient variety in temperatures to permit healthy growing conditions.

Although "anything would grow" the pasture land was good to cattle and hogs and profitable to the Swings. "Pennsylvania Dutch" beef and pork were highly salable and made their way to popular markets in the town of York and other communities throughout York and Lancaster counties.

It was fortunate that this great Pennsylvania land

---

[5]MICHAEL SCHWING changed the spelling of the family name to "Swing" in line with the popular effort among Germans of his day to Anglicize surnames. Even though the early HANS MARTIN SCHWING family lived in Strasbourg, France, in the Alsace region, they were probably strongly German in the origins. Over the centuries Strasbourg, as well as other areas of Alsace, were intermittently governed by the Germans, French and Romans. During World War II it was in German hands from 1940-44, and was again restored to France after being taken by French and American armies.

was being operated by the industrious Germans and others from the Alsace region of Europe. The Swings, along with their neighbors, were an austere group, rejecting any show of frivolity in their dress or life style. The Bible was a vital part of their daily lives.

Each son, as soon as he reached the age of ten or eleven, became a part of the family farm operation, handling first the mundane chores, then gradually engaging in the more difficult aspects of producing an adequate farm income for the family. Young sons would toil ten or twelve hours doing chores and other work, broken only by a hearty breakfast and, later, a noon meal called dinner.

MICHAEL and ANNA MARGARETTA SWING produced four more children after moving to York: three sons and one daughter. One of the sons was GEORGE SWING (VII*106), born in 1766. At the outbreak of the American Revolution GEORGE was old enough to be working in the family's farming operation. His father, MICHAEL, was 54 at the time of the Declaration of Independence, too old for military service.

Although the Swings were Lutherans during their time in Philadelphia they became active in York's Trinity First Reformed (German) Church.[6] Young GEORGE, along with his father, mother, three sisters and two brothers, fervently worshipped God on Sundays. Reared in a family life that embraced the tradition of Our Lord, rigid conduct, and simple hard work, GEORGE brought his parents' lifestyle into his own.

MICHAEL SWING and his family lived less than 100 miles from Swing's Corner, in Salem County, New Jersey, where MICHAEL'S brother Samuel settled after arriving on the *Brotherhood* from Strasbourg 3 November 1750.[7] Samuel was 18 years old when he disembarked at Philadelphia. Ten years later he married Sarah Diament, and within the next eleven years they had six children, including SARAH SWING (VII*107) who was born in 1762.[8]

---

[6] Based on the fact that GEORGE SWING'S younger brother, Michael, born two years after GEORGE, was baptized in the Trinity First Reformed Church of York.

[7] *op cit*, Strassburger and Hinke, *Pennsylvania German Pioneers*.

[8] Samuel Swing was a private in the Revolutionary War, enlisting in the New Jersey Militia, 10 September 1775, before the Declaration of Independence.

MICHAEL and ANNA MARGARETTA SWING and their children of York visited the Samuel Swings several times after the close of the Revolutionary War. Their son GEORGE was in his late teems, and he found his first cousin, SARAH, an attractive young lady, although four years his senior. As time went on, GEORGE and his younger brother Michael made frequent trips between York and Swing's Corner, some 20 miles east of Wilmington, Delaware.[9] On their horses, they could make the trip in less than three days.

SARAH, often called SALLIE, was considered by all as a beautiful young lady. She was quiet, being raised in a highly religious atmosphere in the remote area of Salem County of New Jersey. But SARAH and GEORGE, first cousins, maintained their romantic interest, and were married in 1785. GEORGE 19 and SARAH was 23.

They returned to York after their wedding, and GEORGE continued to farm. He was ambitious, and prospered in the York farming countryside. By 1789 he and his brother Michael decided that life would be better if they moved to Pittsgrove Township in Salem County near their uncle, Samuel Swing, SARAH'S father. Later GEORGE and SARAH moved to another farm in Deerfield Township in Salem County.

GEORGE'S industry and talent brought him and his family a level of prosperity well above most of those living in his area. This continued throughout the 1790's. Their father MICHAEL had died in York, shortly after their arrival in New Jersey.

But GEORGE'S ambition could not be satisfied or contained. By the turn of the century news about the formation of a new state reached GEORGE. When he first heard about Ohio it was part of the Northwest Territory. Ohio was to be formally admitted to the Union in 1803.

This opportunity struck GEORGE SWING as one which may never present itself again. By 1804 he and SARAH had five children. The youngest, MARY SWING (VI*53) was born in 1797. She was their only daughter.

GEORGE and SARAH realized that making a move to Ohio was by far the most important decision of their lives. GEORGE pointed out that they would be living in wild country, and that they would all be facing hardships unknown to them now. They would be living far from their many relatives and friends in Salem County.

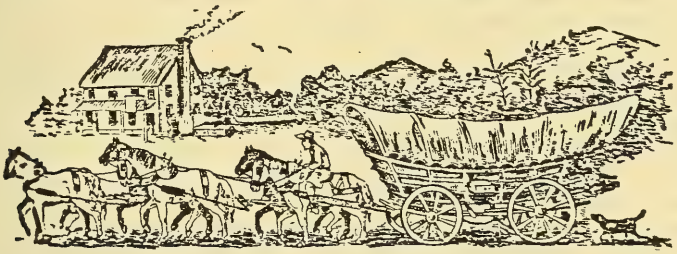
But, despite all these considerations, the family

---

[9] Swing's Corner, Salem County, New Jersey, is present-day "Shirley."

sold their farm, packed their money and belongings and started off for Pittsburgh, in the western part of Pennsylvania. The value of their New Jersey land had doubled. They had one wagon, and inside it each boy packed a blanket, provisions, cooking utensils and "a rifle and shot-gun, in order to somewhat vary the monotony of beans and pork with a rabbit and quail along the road. The owners (of the guns) were men who could use the guns to keep peace if necessary, and also to afford protection to themselves during the journey."

The boys were Michael, 18, Samuel, 16, Lawrence, 14, and Wesley, 11. Little MARY was seven. In addition to the immediate family three servants accompanied them: Maria Lawrence, an apprentice boy, Josheets Ireland, and a hired man. They were heading for Clermont County, Ohio, about 25 miles east of Cincinnati.



With only one wagon, most of the men walked a great part of the more than 300 miles to Pittsburgh. They headed first for Philadelphia where they picked up the Great Philadelphia Wagon Road. Arriving in York they had a reunion with descendants of GEORGE'S father, MICHAEL SWING.

Salome Swing Rummel, GEORGE'S aunt, had died about 11 years earlier, in 1793. Her first husband had passed away many years before that, in 1759, and she had remarried, to Johan George Gump, 20 years her senior. But both were now dead.

From York the Swings continued along the Great Wagon Road to Chambersburg at which point GEORGE was uncertain as to the best route to follow to Pittsburgh. Upon reaching Bedford he inquired regarding the road ahead and he was urged to take the Glade Road through Somerset.[10] The advantage of the Glade Road was that it had fewer steep climbs over the mountains. The old Forbes Road was shorter, and fewer tolls, but the Glade Road would get them to Pittsburgh sooner.

---

[10]The Chambersburg-Pittsburgh Pike ran through Bedford and Somerset Counties, some 12 miles north of the town of Somerset.

They were 80 miles from Pittsburgh when they left Bedford, and with some of the mountains being 3000 feet in height, it would take them a good eight days to complete their land journey. It was a wilderness. Only a few inns dotted the road, unlike the more heavily traveled Lancaster Pike out of Philadelphia.

Finally, after days of precarious travel, the Swings came upon a rolling plateau. They were startled by the dramatic view of two rivers hundreds of feet below, joining to form the huge Ohio. The two rivers were the Allegheny and the Monongahela. They created a great triangle. This was Pittsburgh. From here the Swings began to lay plans for the second chapter of their journey to Clermont County, Ohio -- down the Ohio River.

They found a rooming house in Pittsburgh. GEORGE went to the riverfront to locate someone who could give him information about a flatboat for the journey to Ohio.[11] He found several yards capable of hammering together a boat within a couple of weeks, once some deal between GEORGE and the builder had been worked out.

GEORGE found one builder that had been recommended as being reliable -- a trait not overly common among flatboat builders. But GEORGE had enough money to have one built, and that placed him in an enviable position in that few travelers seeking transportation down the Ohio were able to pay for a boat. These travelers had to work out some arrangement involving shared ownership and such deals frequently had a way of turning out in favor of the builder -- at the end of the voyage.

But GEORGE was welcomed avidly by the builders with whom he talked, and selected the one recommended to him. He was to pay $256 for his flatboat, based on the going rate of $4 a foot. His boat was to be 64 feet long. The width would be 22 feet.[12]

The builder apprised GEORGE that the price included his piloting the boat as far as Cincinnati, where GEORGE told him they would disembark for the trip to Clermont County. He held a tentative deed to nearly 500 acres of

---

[11] While the details of the Swing trip from Salem County to Clermont County are not known, George L. Swing, a grandson of GEORGE SWING, does state in a letter to a cousin that his grandfather did travel to Pittsburgh by land and on to Clermont County on a flatboat. (*op cit, Events in the Life and History of the Swing Family*, p. 223) .

[12] The use of steam power for boats was being experimented with by 1804, but its commerical use by steamboats on the Ohio River and elsewhere did not take place until the 1820's and 1830's.

timberland in Tate Township. GEORGE could sell the boat intact, or have it disassembled and sold as lumber. Or, the builder hinted, he might be willing to purchase the flatboat for a reduced price, and continue down the Ohio River to St. Louis or even to New Orleans.

The boat had to be large enough to carry the Swing family, plus their horses and baggage. It would be necessary to have more than one man available to handle the boat, and the builder was impressed with the fact that sons Michael and Samuel, as well as the hired man, would be of great assistance.

For the next two weeks GEORGE and his four sons walked to the boatyard each morning and watched their boat being constructed. It was rectangular, with the hull shaped out of huge timbers some eight and ten inches square. The deck was enclosed with planks that served as walls for the family living during the trip.

A trap door in the ceiling provided entry to the roof, via a ladder. At the stern was a lengthy steering oar, enabling the pilot to maneuver the boat around the many hidden obstructions known to be sunken along the river.

The riverboats were often called arks, and the name was an apt one. Clumsy in appearance, the Swing's boat was a combination of a crude home and stable. There were no windows in the living area, only small holes out of which the pilot and the Swings could point their rifles and muskets should an Indian attack develop from shore. But, with one or two boats leaving Pittsburgh a day, Indians were becoming less and less of a problem.

It was generally agreed, though, among the many pilots making the journey down the river that the real threats to safety were sunken trees that had been carried down the river, only to become stuck. Sometimes a part of the tree would protrude above the water, but often nothing would be visible. GEORGE'S boat builder and pilot had charts showing known obstructions and sand bars, all of which added to the Swing's feeling of security at having such a capable captain. But new hazards always lurked, and therein lay the danger.

Finally the day came when the actual embarkation began. The horses were led aboard, nervous at their new surroundings. Then came the baggage and food. SARAH would do the cooking. Finally, all seven members of the Swing family plus their three servants came aboard and the signal for casting off was given.

The skipper shoved the boat out into the middle of the Ohio where it picked up the main current. The pilot

and Michael together manned the sweep, as the steering oar was called. Samuel and the hired man were down below, striving to calm the horses. The animals were frightened by the movement of the scow and were neighing and kicking against the planks. Thus began the 800 mile journey to Cincinnati.

It was a silent, slow drift, passing almost nothing but greenery on both sides of the River -- Virginia on the left and the new state of Ohio on the right. There was little on the shorelines but wilderness. On rare occasions the Swings could see a small opening in the forests near the edge of the river where some pioneer had braved the many hazards of living and carved out a place for his cabin and, perhaps, his family.

SARAH adjusted well to the many problems brought on by the limitations of cooking on a houseboat. The party of 11 enthused about her preparations. After dinner each evening, at sundown, they would anchor in midstream, choosing a spot far enough away from shore so that they would not be surprised by some Indian attack. All boats anchored at night, it being far too hazardous for travel after dark with no lights or signals to permit navigation.

Day after day the flatboat drifted down the Ohio. Day after day it was the same scenery -- a rather leisurely pace that presented no problems and little excitement, except the realization that soon they would be nearing their destination. They passed the mouth of the Scioto River at Portsmouth, Ohio, without incident -- a point where Indians on the high Raven Rock would spot the white man traveling down the Ohio and then lay in ambush. The Swings were now less than 100 miles from Cincinnati.

Cincinnati was a bustling city, its wharf brimming with activity. Other flatboats were arriving and departing for St. Louis. GEORGE arranged for a native to load their belongings onto wagons and transport their goods, and the family of seven and three servants over the narrow road to Tate Township in Clermont County, Ohio -- some 25 miles east and a bit south of Cincinnati.

GEORGE SWING soon encountered Obed Denham in a small town known as Denhamstown. Obed had laid out the town only a few years earlier. He told GEORGE that he wanted the place called Bethel. Denham advised GEORGE on the locations of the better lands, and GEORGE purchased 489.5 acres between Poplar and Sugar Tree Creeks, the land running from one creek to the other. He paid two dollars an acre for the solid timber land. The Swing cabin was "40 or 50 rods west of the turnpike bridge that crosses Poplar, about a mile and a half west of Bethel."

So thick were the trees that they were looked upon as enemies, for the first task was clearing an area where they could build their cabin and plant some vegetables. The family worked hard together, and by the summer of 1805 had a cabin and a growing garden.

Soon after they settled in Clermont County GEORGE SWING made a return trip to Cincinnati, his first since their arrival some months earlier. The one-way journey to the big city took more than a day -- with his wagon and team. When in Cincinnati he deposited $1000 he had brought with him from New Jersey in the Farmers' and Mechanics' Bank of Cincinnati. It was run by some Methodists, including the Rev. Oliver M. Spencer, a well-known preacher in Cincinnati. GEORGE, a staunch Methodist, saw this as sufficient reason for him to rely on the bank's management, and this was where he opened his account.[13]

He had many purchases to make. Several good cows cost him $10 a head. A horse sold for $20; a pair of working oxen $18. He bought a set of rawhide harness for $4, and a wooden mould-board plow for $5.

The Swings had become resolute Methodists during their years in Swing's Corner in New Jersey. The first Methodist Conference in the United States was held in the East in 1792, and the followers of John Wesley began spreading the word on Methodism. The movement gathered amazing numbers of converts, and circuit riders were carrying this frontier of religion throughout the East and South. GEORGE and SARAH SWING, while living in New Jersey, were among the converts. They took their religion seriously.

In Ohio, the Miami Circuit of Methodism was established in 1796, and this Circuit included Bethel. By the early 1800's Bethel had its own Methodist Church, meeting in the home of Michael Ellsberry.[14] The minister was Moses Warden, a saddler by trade. It was this church in which the Swing family became active members.

By 1808 GEORGE SWING constructed a large brick home in an area which became known as "Swings Corner." He

---

[13]The Farmers' and Mechanics' Bank of Cincinnati ultimately failed, and in its demise GEORGE SWING lost his $1000.

[14]Michael Ellsberry was a son of Isaac Ellsberry whose family presumably made the trip from North Carolina to Kentucky in 1796 with the family of GARRARD RILEY. The Ellsberrys moved to Bethel in 1807. Isaac died there in 1813.

later assumed the Bible agency for the American Bible Society. In this role his assignment was to make certain that every family in the township had a Bible. He devoted himself to Methodism, and he rately missed sitting in his pew on Sunday mornings. He enjoyed "pointed preaching," and would often express his satisfaction by shouting "amen!" or "preach on!!"

THE GEORGE SWING DWELLING *in Tate Township, Clermont County, Ohio, as it appeared in 1980. MARY Swing lived in this house from 1808, when it was constructed, to 1817. It is located near "Swings Corner," named after the New Jersey settlement.*

In 1812 GEORGE decided to enter the sheep business. Merino wool had been selling for a dollar a pound in the eastern markets, and by the start of the War of 1812 the price was as high as $2.50 a pound. Growing sheep spread fast and the production of wool became important to the economy.

But the vagaries of raising sheep were such that he could not depend on a regular income from that source. So he switched to hogs and cattle. It was more profitable. The rich harvest yielded by his oak, hickory and beech trees provided ample food for the fattening of the hogs. It was generally thought that it "cost the farmer nothing to raise his hogs," other than transportation to Cincinnati where the prices ranged from $1.50 to $1.75 per hundred weight during the early 1800's.

GEORGE SWING was a leader in the community of Tate Township. His industry and vigor brought him considerable monetary success. He gave a sizable portion of his farm to each of his sons. Michael, however, farmed his land for only a short time. He soon moved to Milford,

near Cincinnati, where his wife's family was located.

MARY SWING, the only daughter of GEORGE and SARAH, was still at home. By 1814 she was 17 years old. One of the Swing neighbors was GARRARD RILEY and his family. They arrived in Clermont County in 1806, two years after the Swings. The families were well acquainted, both being pioneers of the area.

Bt 1812 GARRARD RILEY was spending his time in Kentucky as a Baptist preacher. ZACHARIAH RILEY, his son, was 22 years old in 1813 when he returned from his service in the War of 1812. To the delight of these two well-known and influential Clermont families, ZACHARIAH RILEY and MARY SWING were married on 9 February 1817. The ceremony was conducted by a Methodist minister.[15]

ZACHARIAH RILEY and GEORGE SWING, MARY'S father, enjoyed each other. GEORGE admired ZACHARIAH'S industry as well as his creativity. "Uncle Jack," as ZACHARIAH was often called, grew up on his father's farm, and later worked his own farm. But Uncle Jack was mechanically inclined and soon became a wheelwright, setting up his shop in Bethel where he made wheels.[16]

He specialized in the big wheels used largely for spinning wool. However, he also made the small wheels for spinning flax and they were in substantial demand throughout southern Ohio and northern Kentucky. Another of his products was the loom, a machine for weaving thread and yarn into cloth.

---

[15] It appears that ZACHARIAH was the first in this Riley family line to deviate from the longstanding adherence to the Baptist denomination.

[16] Most of the information on ZACHARIAH'S business activities was drawn from two sources. First, his oldest son, William Riley, at the age of 75, delivered a paper about his father at the 1893 Riley Reunion. Second, Benjamin Morris in 1858 wrote a "History of Clermont County" for *The Cincinnati Gazette*. Benjamin was a brother of Thomas Morris of Clermont County who was elected to the U. S. Senate in 1833. Whether the article ever appeared in the Cincinnati newspaper is not known. This author worked from a copy of the original manuscript.

As ZACHARIAH'S reputation spread, he branched out into the making of furniture. His chief product was the chair, and the ZACHARIAH RILEY chair developed a reputation for its quality.

He built many mills in Clermont County, for himself and for others. Some were powered by water; others by horses; still others with steam. His Bethel compatriots often voiced the opinion that his following as one of the area's ingenious millwrights stemmed from his willingness to service the mills he produced.

As ZACHARIAH'S and MARY SWING RILEY'S prosperity grew throughout the years, so did their family. By 1835 they had a family comprised of one daughter and eight sons. The oldest was son William, born in 1818. Next was GARRARD POLICARP RILEY (V*26), born on 17 November 1821. Their last child was Zachariah Riley, Jr., born in 1835.

During the early 1820's, when sons William and GARRARD were very young, ZACHARIAH bought a farm three miles southwest of Bethel. In 1835 he purchased a mill property on Poplar Creek, one mile west of town where he maintained farming operations.

GARRARD, 14, and his brother William, 17, worked the farm, along with their father. However, as ZACHARIAH turned to his non-farming enterprises, GARRARD and William assumed more and more of the responsibility of the farm.

One day GARRARD was splitting wood on the family farm when he slipped and the axe cut into his foot. So serious was the injury that GARRARD was laid up for the entire winter.

GARRARD'S grandfather, GEORGE SWING, living nearby, took a keen interest in GARRARD, bringing him books to read. During his visits, GEORGE SWING would offer prayers on behalf of young GARRARD, praying that the boy would "grow up and be a useful man."

The grandfather inspired in GARRARD a desire for learning, a desire even to be a scholar. Up until his injury GARRARD had little education, barely able to read the New Testament, used in his school. His father, ZACHARIAH, was more interested in developing GARRARD into a good worker and producer. But grandfather SWING had the greater influence on young GARRARD.

Of benefit, too, during his enforced inactivity were additional books loaned to him by the family's neighbor, James Buntin. These readings were related to

reforms of the day, including the issues of slavery. Young GARRARD, on occasions, was exposed to further slavery discussions within the family when his paternal grandfather, GARRARD RILEY SR., ZACHARIAH'S father, visited them from Kentucky.

After completing the "common school and academy" GARRARD'S zest for more learning intensified. He startled his family one evening by talking about going to college. His father, ZACHARIAH, objected. He took the position that GARRARD "had learning enough." But his mother insisted that he should "be obedient to his conscience." So, despite ZACHARIAH'S opposition, young GARRARD enrolled at Granville College in Granville.Ohio, for the term commencing 22 September 1842.

Granville was located 20 miles east of Columbus, about 125 miles northeast of Bethel. When the school first opened its doors on 13 December 1831 it was known as Granville Literary and Theological Institute.

Eleven years later GARRARD, 20 years old, was one of 96 students that fall in 1842. He was in the Classical Preparation Course, along with 28 other students. In addition to the English Course, he took Latin Grammer, Latin Reading, Greek Grammar, Greek Reading, Modern and Ancient Geography, and Arithmetic.

GARRARD located a small room over a cobbler's shop in Granville. He received the room in exchange for working with the cobbler in the mending of shoes. His furniture consisted of a rickety bedstead, a small pine table, and two wooden chairs. Here it was that GARRARD studied his Latin, Greek, and mathematics by the light of a tallow candle. He often was without any funds whatsoever and found it necessary sometimes to by-pass meals. But he was dedicated, and he excelled as a student.

GARRARD RILEY went to Granville for four years, taking such subjects during his senior year as Astronomy, Moral Science, Demosthenes De Corona, Evidences of Christianity, Political Economy, Elements of Criticism, and Political Grammar.

His efforts and intellectual achievements were rewarded at the close of his final year when he was named valedictorian of his class and selected to make the valedictory address at commencement.

One morning three days before commencement GARRARD was taken by surprise when his father knocked on the door of his room over the cobbler's shop. ZACHARIAH had been in Columbus on business and he came over to see his son -- the first trip he had ever made to Granville. He

SENIOR CLASS.

First Term: Astronomy; Wayland's Moral Science; Demosthenes De Corona; Evidences of Christianity.

Second Term: Wayland's Political Economy; Butler's Analogy; Kames' Elements of Criticism; Political Grammar; Kent's Commentaries, 1st volume.

Throughout the whole course, weekly exercises in composition and declamation.

PREPARATORY COURSE.

The preparatory course will, in ordinary cases, occupy two years, (more or less according to the previous attainments, age, and capacity of the student,) and embrace the following authors and studies, viz:

Stoddard and Andrew's Latin Grammar, Andrew's Latin Reader, Cæsar's Commentaries, Cicero's Select Orations, Virgil; Sophocles' Greek Lessons, Sophocles' Greek Grammar, Felton's Greek Reader; Kirkham's English Grammar, Geography, Modern (Mitchell's) and Ancient; Arithmetic, (Davies' and Colburn.)

ENGLISH COURSE.

This is designed to afford the means of obtaining a thorough and extended English education—such as will qualify young men in the best manner for the active and responsible business of life. It embraces the studies of the College and Preparatory Courses, the text books being generally the same.

PAGE FROM THE 1842 CATALOG of the Granville Literary and Theological Institution, Granville, Ohio.

did not realize that commencement was at hand.

GARRARD told him of his accomplishments: his being chosen valedictorian of his class. ZACHARIAH looked at him, and saw a son who had educated himself by mending shoes, making brooms, and gardening; a son who was dressed in shabby clothes, living in Spartan quarters; a son who had earned every penny for his education.

Normally a stern person and set in his ways, ZACHARIAH melted. He recognized what his son had achieved, and for the first time saw his son as he really was. He at once bought him a fine new suit, and provided him with board and other clothing through his graduation.[17]

GARRARD returned home and began teaching in Clermont schools. A young lady named SARAH BLAIR (V*27) lived nearby in Batavia and GARRARD sought her company. SARAH was already being courted by Ulysses S. Grant, whose parents had recently moved to Bethel in 1842 from Point Pleasant where their son was born.[18]

Ulysses had just graduated from West Point in 1843 and was one of the most eligible bachelors in Clermont County. However, GARRARD RILEY, too, was a highly desirable young man, and SARAH chose GARRARD.[19] They were married in 1844.

SARAH was the daughter of JOHN BLAIR (VI*54) and ANTIS WHITE BLAIR (VI*55). Both the Blair and White families emigrated to Clermont County very early in the 1800's. The Whites, from New Jersey, settled in 1804. The Blairs were in Clermont County by 1812. ANTIS' par-

---

[17] Much of this description of GARRARD RILEY'S early life was drawn from *Biographical Memoirs of Grant County, Indiana* (Bowen Publishing Co., Chicago, 1901). Information on Granville College and GARRARD'S courses were obtained from the University Archives of Denison University, the name the school adopted in 1845.

[18] Ulysses Simpson Grant became the 18th president of the United States, from 1869 to 1877. He was Commander-in-Chief of the Union forces during the Civil War. His parents christened him Hiram Ulysses Grant, but he disdained the initials "HUG."

[19] R. L. Whitson, *History of Grant County, Indiana, Vol.I, 1812-1912* (1914), p. 382. SARAH was quoted in this history many years later as saying "Father Riley 'stole his bride away' when Ulysses S. Grant, who was a young man in Clermont County, Ohio, at the same time, sought her company."

ents were DAVID WHITE (VII*110) and NANCY VAUGHN WHITE (VII*111).[20]

While the year 1844 brought happiness and excitement into the newlywed lives of GARRARD and SARAH Riley, sorrow also exhibited itself. GARRARD'S grandfather GEORGE SWING died early that year, on 12 January.

GEORGE SWING had remained vigorous in Methodism throughout his life, and he took particular interest in the sick. Over the years he spent a considerable amount of time visiting those throughout the township who were ill and unable to move beyond their own doors. GEORGE SWING often conducted funerals in his later years when families were unable to procure a minister. Often he was seen standing at the head of a newly-dug grave talking to the little company that had gathered at the site.

GEORGE SWING was buried in the Swing family cemetery just west of Bethel -- 40 years after he arrived from Pittsburgh on a flatboat, and 78 years after his birth.[21]

A prominent Bethel attorney and U.S. Senator, Thomas J. Morris, took an interest in this young GARRARD RILEY who was able to express himself so well on community, state and national issues. He spent considerable time with GARRARD discussing the slavery question. Thomas Morris was best-known for his speech in the U.S. Senate -- the first abolitionist speech ever made before that distinguished legislative body. The speech was in reply to Kentuckian Henry Clay's position on slavery.

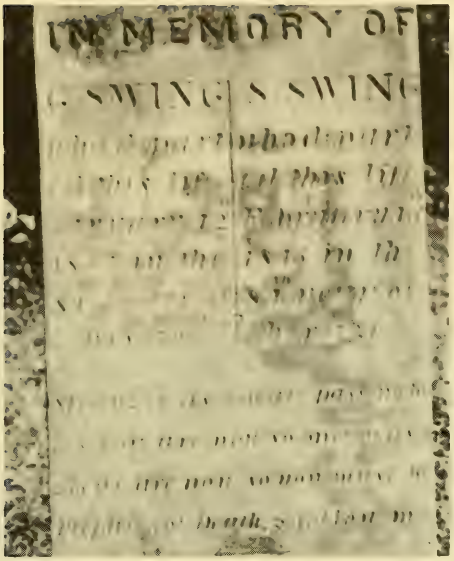
One day Senator Morris said to GARRARD: "Young man, if you live to be my age you will see this government torn to pieces -- an international war perhaps -- all on account of this great evil, slavery." Morris strengthened GARRARD'S anti-slavery position.

GARRARD became one of the original 13 members of the Wesleyan Methodist Church in Clermont County - founded mainly on the principal of opposition to slavery. Becoming its minister, he lectured and preached as an aggressive abolitionist.

---

[20] For further information on the Blair and White Families, see Appendix A, p. 473. The contentions of some genealogists that SARAH BLAIR was related to Francis Preston Blair and his son, Montgomery Blair, famous politicians during the middle 1800's, are without foundation.

[21] GEORGE SWING'S wife, SARAH SWING, his first cousin, died the following year and also was buried in the family plot three miles west of Bethel. A major highway into Bethel was detoured slightly so as to ensure continuance of the family's private burial ground.



SWING FAMILY CEMETERY (below) west of Bethel, Ohio.
Above is gravestone of GEORGE and SARAH SWING.

One day he was challenged by one of his Kentucky cousins, the Hon. Marion Clark, to debate the slavery issue in public. The cousin had acquired a fortune, and with it a large contingent of slaves. GARRARD accepted the challenge, and the question agreed on for the debate was: "Does the Bible justify American slavery?"

The debate lasted two days and two nights, before large audiences. It ended when GARRARD asked his opponent the question: "If the Bible justifies slavery, then who is to be the slave in America?"

GARRARD posed the question three times before Marion Clark could respond. He then replied: "No man under heaven can answer that question." The decision went to GARRARD.

The country was fast becoming embroiled over slavery. Along the Ohio River families were divided -- those living in Kentucky favoring, and others in Ohio opposing. There was rivalry and jealousy. The situation was tense.

When the Federal government passed the Fugitive Slave Law in 1850, the north considered it to be an infamous measure. It commanded that fugitives -- alleged or real -- who should escape from one state to another be delivered and returned to the slaveholder.

The fugitive -- alleged or real -- could be seized without a warrant. When an officer did issue a warrant he received a fee of ten dollars, but if he declined to do so he received five dollars anyway. Officers who refused to execute certificates could be fined $1000, and if the negro escaped after arrest the marshall became liable for his value.

The slave law caused a surge in anti-slavery activities. For many years an "underground railroad" had been operating along the Ohio River, whereby fugitive slaves were secretly and voluntarily sent from place to place at night, until they reached communities where they could be safe and free.

In 1852 Harriet Beecher Stowe wrote *Uncle Tom's Cabin*, a stirring story of the life of a southern slave.[22] The book galvanized anti-slavery feeling, and the underground railroad began to flourish. Bethel in Clermont County was an important "station" on the "railroad."

---

[22]Much of the action in the book takes place at Ripley, Ohio, along the Ohio River 18 miles southeast of Bethel.

GARRARD RILEY and his neighbors were active participants in this highly secret operation. Slaves in Kentucky would cross the Ohio River in one way or another -- sometimes on ice cakes during the winter. Cincinnati was an important "station" for these slaves. They arrived in the middle of the night, then fed and hidden in the cellars of "conductors" homes.

After a couple of days and nights of rest, the slaves were supplied with the necessary clothing and sent away along a secret route to another underground station. Many arrived at Bethel.

THE OHIO RIVER AT POINT PLEASANT where many slaves during the 1840's and 1850's climbed ashore after having made it across the River from Kentucky to Ohio in one way or another, even by jumping from one floating block of ice to another. A total some 1500 "operators" in Ohio were ready to arrange passage on the Underground Railroad to Canada.

GARRARD RILEY was a "conductor" on the railroad in his area.[23] It was his job, along with others in the community to shroud the fugitives. GARRARD concealed several in the basement of his church. After a couple of days GARRARD arranged for their next trip on the railroad. During the night he placed three negro slaves in a covered wagon of a friend who was traveling to the next station, Xenia, Ohio. The slaves were hidden under straw and behind sacks of potatoes.

---

[23] William H. Siebert, "Ohio's Aid to Fugitive Slaves as a Contributing Cause of the Civil War" in *Social Science Journal, Vol. IV*, Aug. 1932, No. 3, pp. 5-17. Also, Siebert, *The Underground Railroad from Slavery to Freedom* (New York City: The MacMillan Co., 1898), p. 418, Appendix E, under "Directory of Underground Operators from Clermont County. GARRARD'S name was spelled "Jeret Reilley."

The message GARRARD wrote to the next conductor was "I am sending you herewith three sacks of black wool." No names of conductors or the routes to be taken were ever placed in writing. The risk of being caught was great, and the penalty severe.

On those occasions when a fugitive would be caught he would be placed under court jurisdiction for "reclaiming." The underground railroad participants, friends white and black, would have a buggy and the fastest horse in the county in waiting.

A hubbub would be started in the courtroom, and during the confusion the refugee would be hustled through a convenient door or window. Before the spectators knew what was happening the fugitive had been spirited away to parts unknown.

Thousands of slaves obtained freedom via the underground railroad. The ultimate destination from Bethel was usually Detroit and then into Canada where the British provided a haven for the frightened but relieved slaves.

GARRARD and SARAH had three sons and five daughters, including LIBBIE CAROLINE RILEY (IV*13), born on 18 November 1846. The entire family was imbued with Methodism.

GARRARD'S grandfather, the SENIOR GARRARD RILEY, father of ZACHARIAH, was well along in years. One of the SENIOR GARRARD'S great grandsons, the Rev. John W. Riley Jr., had long been urging him to visit him in Bloomfield, Edgar County, in central Illinois, where John's father and grandfather had been Baptist ministers since 1830. The Senior John W. Riley laid out the town of Bloomfield in 1831 and ran a small store in addition to his preaching.

The SENIOR GARRARD RILEY made the trip to Bloomfield early in 1853 and on several occasions preached to his great grandson's congregation. However, late that year the old man died suddenly, at the age of 88.[24]

On a plain white gravestone in Bloomfield appear these words:

GARRARD RILEY
A Baptist Minister of the Gospel
Who Died on 26 December 1853

* * * *

[24]*The History of Edgar County, Illinois* (Chicago: Wm. Le Baron Jr. & Co., 1879; Rpt. Evansville, Indiana: Unigraphic, Inc., 1968), pp. 531-536. John W. Riley Sr., preached in Edgar County for six years and then moved to Ohio. His son, George W. Riley, took over as the church's minister. Ultimately, George's son, Rev. John W. Riley Jr. became a Baptist minister in Edgar County.

When the Civil War was declared GIRRARD Riley enlisted in the 50th Ohio Volunteer Infantry. He was 40 years old.[25] Elected the regiment's chaplain, he soon participated in the Battle of Perryville (Kentucky) where, in 1862, more than 1300 young men lost their lives. An additional 5000 were wounded, many crippled for life.

As a chaplain, GIRRARD could not carry a musket during the battle, but he could carry canteens of water to the thirsty Union fighting men. During the night, at the peak of the battle, he time after time risked his life as he responded to the calls of the dying and wounded. "From all parts of the battlefield (he) could hear the pleading and cries of the suffering men."[26]

But GIRRARD'S service with the 50th OVI in Kentucky was often disturbing to him. He was bothered when he saw military orders issued to Union Soldiers authorizing them to guard the property of Rebel plantation owners against destruction because Kentucky had not seceded from the Union.

Also, he objected when many Kentucky slaves sought protection within the Union regiments, only to be returned to their owners in keeping with the Fugitive Slave Law. His heart ached when these slaves "were betrayed in the house of their friends," many of the northern soldiers being in sympathy with the slave law.

One Negro slave, seeking refuge, came upon GIRRARD. The chaplain took him in as a servant. But the slave lived in constant fear that kidnappers would seize him, for he would be valuable on the open slave market, being strong and healthy. Kidnappers followed the Union Army, and would nab almost any Negro, claiming them to be theirs, and then would sell them back into slavery.

One afternoon, GIRRARD went into town to do some food purchasing, taking his servant, Dave, with him. While in the store, Dave, who was holding the horse, was grabbed by a couple of kidnappers. GIRRARD, when he emerged from the store, saw Dave struggling with the two kidnappers. Chaplain Riley commanded them to let loose of the Negro, saying in a stern voice "Release my servant at once!"

---

[25] The spelling of GARRARD appears to have changed during his lifetime from GARRARD to GIRRARD. This may have been deliberate on the part of GIRRARD seeking to differentiate his name from his father's. Various records also spell the name GERARD, GIRARD and JERET.

[26] After the War, GARRARD learned that a cousin, Clark Riley, was a Confederate soldier in the Battle of Perryville.

Although they let loose of Dave they claimed that the black man was the slave of a man in Georgia. They persisted that they would get Dave, one way or another.

GIRRARD realized that Dave was not safe with him in the Union Army in Kentucky, so he arranged to have him travel across the Ohio River, to the Riley home in Bethel where SARAH and the children were striving to keep the farm operating.

He obtained a pass for the servant, and hurried him to the landing where Dave would embark for the Ohio side of the river. But the kidnappers were following the entire plan. While on the wharf they seized Dave's pass while CHAPLAIN RILEY was purchasing his ticket for passage.

GIRRARD, returning, realized what had happened, and pushed Dave on board the ferry, wrote a quick note to his wife and another for Dave, giving him instructions as to how to get to the Riley farm in Clermont County.

Just as he finished the letters, the bell clanged, signaling the boat to cast off. GIRRARD grasped the black man's hand and said "You will soon be a free man now, Dave. Remember your promise to be faithful to my family. I will stay on and help fight this war out and then, thank God, there will be no more slavery."

With tears streaming down his face, Dave cried "God bless you, Chaplain." The kidnappers, watching the entire episode, turned away, one of them commenting "He deserves to beat us: such grit as that will make the Yankees win in the end."

GIRRARD was obsessed with the plight of black people. In August of 1863 President Lincoln announced that he was authorizing the mustering of all able-bodied Negro men into the Union Army. Stated the President: I believe it is a resource which, if vigorously applied now, will soon close this contest. It works doubly, weakening the enemy and strengthening us."

General Ulysses S. Grant fully endorsed the move, declaring that Lincoln's action, along with the emancipation proclamation, was the heaviest blow yet given the Confederacy. Black outfits were soon organized, and ultimately 180,000 Negroes, most of them emancipated slaves, were engaged on the Union side in a fighting role.

GIRRARD was elated with Lincoln's pronouncement. He immediately applied for a position that would place him with these new "colored troops." He received a commission as senior Captain of Company K, Sixth United States Colored Troops.

He returned briefly to Bethel, then headed east, where he was to join his troops. He took his oldest daughter, Antis, with him for a visit with his wife's relatives in Salem County, New Jersey. This left his wife Sarah at home with two daughters, LIBBIE CAROLINE, age 16, and Carrie, age 7, and three sons, the oldest being Charles W., age 13.[27]

CAPTAIN RILEY and his troops were assigned to Yorktown, Virginia, under General Benjamin F. Butler. They were to engage in the campaign aimed at taking Richmond. The regiment remained there for several months, during which GIRRARD and selected men from his regiment were given several assignments behind enemy lines.

On occasions General Butler would commission CAPTAIN RILEY to move into areas where slaves could be set free, and sent to a "contraband ship" at Norfolk. GIRRARD made may close friends among these slaves.

On 28 October 1864, "Before Richmond," from the Camp of the U. S. Colored Troops, GIRRARD wrote to an uncle in New Jersey:[28]

> Your communication gives me much encouragement, and I am always glad to hear from friends and relatives in New Jersey.
>
> Since we last wrote, our regiment has been called on to pass through many scenes of blood and carnage. On the morning of the 29th of September our brigade, only about 900 strong, charged on the rebel line of works, where we met over 2000 of the enemy.
>
> As you have doubtless read, our little brigade was almost annihilated. But the works were carried and the rebels routed. Our own regiment went in with 300, and came out with only 72. Our officers were nearly all either killed or wounded.
>
> I was in front of the line of battle with my company deployed as skirmishers. Out of our 30 picked men, we lost 22; but through the abounding mercy of God, and, as I think, in answer to prayers on my behalf, no bul-

---

[27] GARRARD and SARAH RILEY'S daughter, Mary Melissa, had died on 26 September 1860. Another daughter, Etta Mary, had died at the age of four years.

[28] From Gilbert S. Swing, *Events in the Life and History of the Swing Family* (1889), pp. 236-239.

let pierced my flesh, though many passed through my hat and uniform; one bullet cut my coat collar, and another went through my canteen on my right side; and another through three thicknesses of cloth under my left arm.

We can but feel thankful to God and grateful to all his people who pray that our life may be spared. I have thought that God sent me to defend my country, and believed it was a Christian duty to stand in the foremost of the fight.

I once heard a pious lady say that she never could reconcile the idea in her mind of a Christian going into the Army to fight; it was so inconsistent with the Christian character that she was tempted to doubt the piety of all fighting men.

I beg to differ with the lady's views upon this subject, for I believe that a man can serve God and his country just as acceptably in fighting the enemies of liberty with the musket down South as he can in the halls of legislation or the quiet pulpits of the North, and I am inclined to think he can do much more effectually in the former place.

My own observations are that Christian men make the best soldiers and the most zealous and ardent defenders of our national independence.

Our troops are still at work on the canal at Dutch Gap, but it will be spring before this great undertaking can be completed. Since leaving the "Gap" our brigade has advanced, and is now six miles below Richmond on the James River; a small force of men holds the line of works here. There was considerable cannonading and a general movement last night, and we are expecting orders to advance upon the city within a few days.

Two colored soldiers from our regiment informed me that they enlisted from Salem County, and that they were formerly acquainted with and employed by Dr. Charles Swing of Sharptown, and Leonard Swing of Pittsgrove, and while in the employ of these gentlemen had dug thousands of loads of marl from the beds at Woodstown, N. J. Their names were Bond and Sullivan.

Prices here are very high; potatoes $2.50 per bushel, butter 75¢ and 80¢ per pound, and eggs about the same a dozen. I would like to know the prices of butter, eggs, home-made cheese, etc. in your market and if we should winter here I might save considerable by sending you the money, and have boxes of provisions expressed to us....

G. P. R.

GIRRARD'S prediction in the letter to his uncle proved to be correct: that "it will be spring before this great undertaking can be completed." Richmond fell on 2 April 1865 when Gen. Grant broke through the Confederate forces. One week later Gen. Robert E. Lee surrendered to Grant at Appomattox, Virginia, on Palm Sunday, 9 April 1865. CAPTAIN GIRRARD RILEY and his colored troops contributed to the victory.

GIRRARD was transferred to the Headquarters Third Division of the 10th Army Corps at New Berne, South Carolina. From there he again wrote his uncle on 24 June 1865:

> It has been a long time since I have heard from home and quite as long perhaps since you have heard from me. For the last four months I have been on General Paine's staff, have had a great deal of writing and some business outside the office, such as settling difficulties between former masters and slaves; but amid all our cares, dangers and excitement, have not forgotten our relatives and friends.
>
> You, no doubt, with all other good people, rejoice in the close of the war. How wonderful the workings of Divine Providence; to Him be all praise, honor, and glory!
>
> I am going home in a few days, and our troops will soon be mustered out of service. I have not heard from Captain George W. Swing for three months....I cannot write, for all my thoughts are homeward; will be there in ten days. Write to me at Bethel, Ohio....
>
> The war is ended. Blessed be God; and at this moment I can subscribe myself one of the happiest of living men.
>
> G. P. Riley[29]

When GIRRARD returned to Bethel he found his home town quite changed. His family was safe, and they had survived the war with the help of many neighbors and relatives.

But the attitudes of the members of GIRRARD'S church were now quite different from before the War. With slavery abolished that issue disappeared and the chief cornerstone on which this Methodist Church had been founded no longer existed. Moreover, he soon found himself at odds with the church members over his role in

[29] *ibid.*

the Grand Army of the Republic, a Civil War servicemen's organization.

The G. A. R. was founded in Decatur, Illinois on 6 April 1866, and GIRRARD joined almost immediately. The Methodists in Bethel found this decision to be distasteful to them, feeling that his move suggested a military thrust hardly acceptable in view of his role as a clergyman. As a result, GIRRARD was excommunicated from his church.

BETHEL, OHIO, AS IT APPEARED IN 1865, at about the time GIRRARD P. RILEY returned home from his service in the Civil War. First building on right is the Methodist Episcopal parsonage, then the church roof and tower. The first house on the right is the ZACHARIAH RILEY home.

Added to this disappointment was the state of the Bethel Academy over which he had presided before the war. When GIRRARD left for the war front, the academy declined quickly and was non-existent upon his return.

Life for GIRRARD seemed to be turning against him. His father, ZACHARIAH, had become blind shortly before his return to Bethel at the close of the Civil War. His mother, MARY SWING RILEY, died on 4 November 1865.

GIRRARD decided to enter business. He developed his saw mill into a factory making articles of turned wood. He also brought a large flour milling company up to a prosperous level. His income was the highest of his life.

Then, with suddenness, it all disappeared. His entire plant was swept away by fire. As he stood watching the flames engulf his enterprise, one of his workmen turned to him and asked: "What will you do now, Mr. Riley?" Replied GIRRARD: "I will do what is right, and trust in God." Then, as an afterthought, he commented: "Perhaps it is all for the best. I may have been growing too worldly."

During these post-war days at the Riley household an occasional visitor from Wisconsin was JOHN MASON BAER who, like GIRRARD RILEY, had returned from the Civil War only two years earlier. The attraction in the Riley homestead, of course, was GIRRARD'S daughter, LIBBIE C. RILEY, who was now 21 years old.

The year 1867 was well along when JOHN BAER talked with GIRRARD RILEY about his desire to marry LIBBIE. So it was that CAPTAIN JOHN MASON BAER and LIBBIE CAROLINE RILEY were married on 14 November 1867. JOHN was 23.[30] The Rev. George W. Swing, LIBBIE'S uncle, officiated at the wedding ceremony.[31] LIBBIE, with her new husband, moved away from her life-long Bethel home, to Black Creek in Outagamie County, Wisconsin.

Her father, GIRRARD, was also preparing to move away from Bethel. He had received an offer from a rather wealthy Methodist Church in Bureau County, in north central Illinois, which he accepted. He remained in Bureau County for four years. He was then assigned to the Fairmount Methodist circuit of northern Illinois.

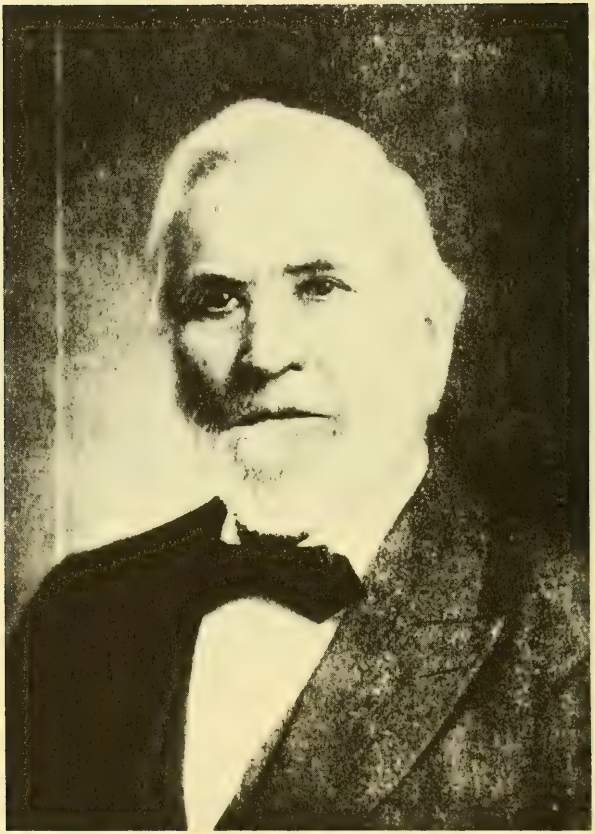
But GIRRARD was not happy in his work. His real love was centered in young people, and while at Fairmount he started a children's publication *The Golden Voice*. The paper filled a real niche, and its circulation grew rapidly.

GIRRARD found himself again active in a business,

---

[30] The Clermont County wedding certificate lists JOHN MASON BAER'S name as "J. M. C. BAER." This addition of the "C" was explained many years later by CAPTAIN BAER when he applied for a Civil War pension. He stated that: "There were two John Baers in Co. H, 120 Ohio Voluntary Infantry, and to distinguish us, the boys called me Charlie. My wife and her people knew me as Charlie and the letter "C" was added after John M. in my marriage license. This was never born on the roles of my Co. or ever used by me afterward."

[31] Rev. George W. Swing was a grandson of GEORGE SWING, who emigrated from New Jersey to Clermont County in 1804. LIBBIE'S grandmother was MARY SWING RILEY, the only daughter of GEORGE SWING, the emigrant to Ohio.



Gerard P. Riley

but he was insistent that he would not be bound by the daily chores of running an enterprise. He sought direct contact with young people.

He moved to Marion, in Grant County, Indiana, where he was agent for the publishing house. As the years rolled by GIRRARD initiated an undertaking he had mentally been working on "for over 40 years."[32] He formed "Riley's Brigade," an organization of some 40 young boys in Marion under the auspices of the Rev. Driver of the Methodist Church of Marion.

The Brigade's early days were spent in Bradford's Opera house in North Marion. But GIRRARD sought a building, a "church." where they could hold their meetings and drills. FATHER RILEY, as he was called, obtained a gift of a lot from the Marion Land Company and, with donations from friends, erected a church building on West Second Street for $1500. One "noble lady" of Marion told GIRRARD that she would meet the payroll of the construction workers whenever needed -- in order to complete the edifice.

Riley's Brigade was a semi-military organization, combined with discussions related to acknowledging "their duty to God and their country."[33] FATHER RILEY insisted that by enabling the boys to form good associations they would grow up into good citizens of the community. He imbued them with a sense of loyalty, courtesy, friendliness and obedience.[34]

FATHER RILEY also developed a following among adults, and for years he conducted non-denominational services in his small church called "Riley's Mission," located on First Street, west of Butler Avenue. Members of his congregation described him as a tall, kindly and elderly man who had a winning way with all people -- young and old.[35]

---

[32] About this time GIRRARD RILEY seemed to alter the spelling of his name, to GERRARD. More often, however, he signed his communications "G. P. Riley."

[33] *Marion (Indiana) Chronicle-Tribune*, 12 September 1954.

[34] Riley's Brigade is said by residents of Marion to have been the forerunner of the Boy Scout movement which originated in Great Britain, but spread to the United States in about 1910. GERRARD RILEY continued his work with the Brigade until the early 1900's.

[35] GERRARD POLICARP RILEY died in Marion on 14 October 1914. He was buried in the I. O. O. F. Cemetery, Marion. His wife, SARAH BLAIR

GERRARD P. RILEY AND HIS WIFE SARAH BLAIR RILEY were members of the Grant County (Indiana) Octogenerian Club during the early 1900's. The first meeting was held on 1 September 1903 and was attended by both GERRARD (top row, third from left) and SARAH (top row, fourth from left).

AUTO-OCTO PARADE—the octogenarians riding back to town in automobiles, a feature of each annual meeting

* * * *

LIBBIE RILEY BAER had never visited Black Creek Township in Outagamie County in Wisconsin prior to her marriage to CAPTAIN BAER. Although her young husband had attempted to prepare her for their new life together, she was overwhelmed upon their arrival to see the nature of the isolation in which she was to live.

The township was half swampland. Roads, until just a few years before their arrival, were nothing more than crude cart paths. The first school was built after the close of the Civil War, and before that sessions were held in the home of C. W. Hopkins, a business and civic leader of Black Creek. The teacher was paid $12 a month, out of which she spent 50¢ a week for board.

LIBBIE discovered that the town's only general store had opened only shortly prior to arrival. There was no railroad, and Appleton, the nearest town of any size, was a good 12 miles away over dusty or muddy roads.

The young couple's farm that JOHN MASON had purchased in 1863 during the Civil War was located in Section 32 in the southwestern part of the township. Across the road lived JOHN JACOB and ANNA BAER, JOHN MASON'S parents who had emigrated from Ohio in 1859. J. J. BAER, as he referred to himself, was 53 when his son and daughter-in-law took up residence.[36]

---

35 cont'd.
RILEY, predeceased him by two years, dying on 20 December 1912. She also was buried in the I. O. O. F. Cemetery. Their home in Marion at the time of their deaths was 735 Cassius.

[36]The 1870 U. S. Census for Outagamie County shows J. J. BAER listing both his parents as being foreign born. This is contrary to other evidence that strongly indicates his father being born in Pennsylvania. The accuracy of Census data is of course related to the knowledgability of the informant, and if the informant was J. J. BAER'S wife or daughter-in-law, it is quite possible neither was aware of the birthplace of J. J. BAER'S parents. Or, it could be simply an error on the part of the enumerator--if it is in fact an error.

Within a year JOHN MASON and LIBBIE had their first child, a daughter, Antis Mayette Baer, born 28 September 1868.

Black Creek took on an air of prosperity beginning in 1870 when the Green Bay & Lake Pepin Railroad was constructed through the county. Trains stopped at Binghampton, a town only a short distance from the Baer farms. With the completion of the railroad, lumber became an important part of the community.

The young Baers, early into their married life, adopted one of LIBBIE's younger brothers, Charles M. Riley, who was 20 years old in 1870. His father, GIRRARD RILEY, had moved to Bureau County, Illinois, and young Charles opted to live with his sister and her husband in Wisconsin. He worked with JOHN MASON on the farm.

J. J. BAER had been in poor health for many years, going back as far as when they lived in Ohio during the early 1850's. It was hoped that the move to Outagamie County would improve his physical condition, but even after 13 years in Wisconsin, it was not to be. The REV. JOHN JACOB BAER, the long-time United Brethern and Winebrenner preacher, died in 1872, never fully recovering from the ailment that had plagued him over many of his final years.[37]

GRAVESTONE OF JOHN JACOB BAER in Riverside Cemetery, Appleton, Wisconsin.

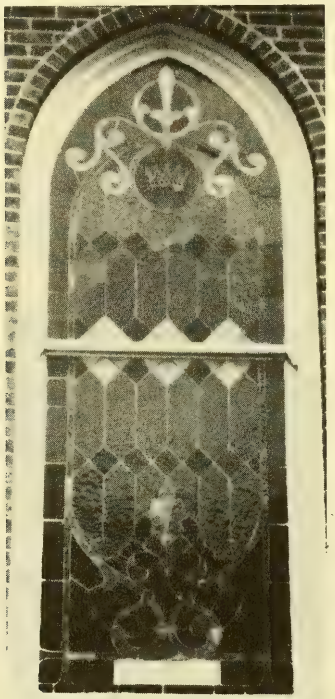
During the latter part of 1872 JOHN and LIBBIE decided to visit Bethel. LIBBIE was pregnant, and she was desirous of having the baby born in surroundings less primitive than those existing in Black Creek Township. Moreover, her Grandfather, ZACHARIAH RILEY, was 80 years old and not well. He had been blind since 1863. She was eager to see him and, of course, her many friends whom she had not seen

---

[37] ANNA NANCY BAER, J. J.'s wife, died nine years later, on 24 May 1881. The *Appleton Post* carried this obituary: "BAER: in the town of Black Creek, May 24th, 1881, Mrs. ANNA BAER; aged 72 years. The deceased had been a long and patient sufferer, having been prostrated for over six years. She was a woman highly esteemed by all who knew her."

since she moved away from Clermont County more than three years earlier.[38] The baby was born on 22 March 1873: a boy, Charles Otho Baer.

ZACHARIAH lived for two years after LIBBIE'S visit, passing away on 10 March 1875. At services in the Methodist Episcopal Church in Bethel, the Rev. George W. Swing led in singing, scriptural reading and prayer. Rev. Swing was a nephew of MARY SWING RILEY, ZACHARIAH'S wife.



MEMORIAL WINDOW for ZACHARIAH RILEY, in Regular Baptist Church (1853), Bethel, Ohio, presented by Sadie Sherman, his great granddaughter.

Then followed the eulogy by Rev. Chiney, the "preacher in charge," who read in part:

> (He) joined the Baptist Church at Bethel, Ohio, in the fellowship of which he remained until his release from his earthly tenement.
>
> ....His eyesight failed him over twelve years ago, and though compelled to grope his way in gloom and darkness, abandoning forever many pleasures consequent upon the sense of sight, yet he was never heard to murmur or complain, or even deem his lot a hard one; but with an intellect vigorous for planning he found many avenues of pleasure and happiness to his mind that he might never have thought of if his sight had remained.
>
> From this loss he became more resigned, quiet and hopeful for the future, all vanity, world-mindedness and ambition, charity and meekness, so that even this light affliction was greatly sanctified to his good.
>
> His memory, which was always good, was now greatly strengthened, his conversational powers greatly quickened.

[38] The true reason for the visit to Bethel is not known. It could have been precisely as stated above. However, there was a devastating fire in Black Creek in 1871, and it is possible that the Baer farm was destroyed, and that the family moved to Bethel until they recovered. This, however, is pure conjecture.

He delighted very much in talking with young people, giving his own experiences and warning them of the dangers in their pathway. He was always fond of children, and by kind talk, thrilling stories and many little presents and rewards he won them and bound their hearts to him so that they loved to meet him and lead and call him their own blind grandpa.

....His pilgrimage has ended; his cloudy days are passed; his sufferings are over; his feet are through the journey, and may we modestly hope that he has already realized the joy that is felt where there are no tears or troubles, no groans or graves, and where sorrow and sighing forever flee away.[39]

ZACHARIAH RILEY was buried in the Swing Family cemetery west of Bethel, joining his wife MARY SWING RILEY, who had died ten years earlier on 4 November 1865. Her death occurred during the year that her son GIRRARD returned home from his service in the Civil War.[40]

* * * *

[39] A memorial window in the name of ZACHARIAH RILEY is in the Bethel Baptist Church, placed there by Sadie Snow Sherman of Marion, Indiana, a great-granddaughter of ZACHARIAH. She was the daughter of Antis Riley and Thomas Sherman.

[40] For information on the genealogy of the Riley family, see Appendix A, p. 464.

In Black Creek, Wisconsin, JOHN MASON BAER was becoming more and more active in civic affairs. He soon was serving as a magistrate, chairman of the township council and a member of the County Baord of Supervisors. Their second son, EDWARD SHERMAN BAER (III*6) was born in Black Creek Township on 28 October 1877; their third son and fourth child, John Miller Baer, was born there on 29 March 1886.[41]

Soon after John Miller's birth, the family left the farm and moved to Appleton, a fast-growing community 12 miles to the south in Outagamie County. In 1887 CAPTAIN JOHN MASON was elected Registrar of Deeds of the county. He was elected three times. His political leanings were strongly toward the Democratic party.

In 1893 JOHN and LIBBIE BAER packed up the family and headed for North Indianapolis where the Riley clan was staging their sixth family reunion. Riley gatherings had been held at irregular intervals beginning in 1846 in Clermont County, Ohio.

This was the first one for JOHN and LIBBIE, and they were excited in anticipation of again seeing many of the Riley family. The reunion was held in Greenleaf Hall, and was officially known as "The Riley Family Re-Union Association." Membership qualifications were two: (1) being a descendant of NINIAN RILEY or the elder GARRARD RILEY, and "became such the day of their birth, and all their descendants inherit this birthright forever," and (2) anyone marrying a descendant "is a member the day of the marriage, but if married a second time to one not a descendant, this membership ceases....Two ways to get in, birth and marriage; two ways to get out, marriage and death."

There were 800 known members of the Association. More than 100 attended the 1893 opening dinner on 4 September, furnished by descendants of John Riley, Sr. He was a son of GARRARD RILEY SR., who had lived for six years in Bloomfield, Illinois, where the second reunion was held in 1859. It was in Bloomfield that GARRARD SR. had died in 1853.

---

[41] Three of JOHN and LIBBIE BAER'S children were presumably named after LIBBIE'S brothers and sisters: Antis Mayette, after her sister Mary Antis; Charles Otho, after LIBBIE'S brother Charles; EDWARD SHERMAN, after Mary Antis' husband Thomas Sherman. Their fourth child, John Miller Baer, was named after his father JOHN BAER. The middle name, "Miller," could have originated from "Ike Miller," a Civil War compatriot who JOHN MASON BAER credits for saving his life. However, John Miller Baer's son, John Mason Baer, says the name "Miller" came from a neighbor friend.

During the Reunion's first session, Sadie Sherman, seven year old daughter of Tom and Antis Riley Sherman, recited a poem written by LIBBIE RILEY BAER, Sadie's aunt. It was entitled "Long Ago," and presented by little Sadie with the full talent of an elocutionist.

Much of the program that followed related to selected members of the Riley family presenting histories of ancestors--NINIAN, GARRARD, SR., ZACHARIAH and others.

But little Sadie Sherman was one of the top performers. During the Riley Reunion, soldiers of the Encampment No. 90 of the G. A. R. were meeting in Indianapolis, and Sadie stood on the stage of Tomlinson Hall in front of 7,000 veterans of the Civil War and recited "A Little Girl's Wish," a poem written by LIBBIE RILEY BAER. Ex-president William Henry Harrison presided, and presented her to the audience. The speaker of the evening was Indiana's Governor William McKinley.[42]

I wish I could be a soldier,
But then I never can,
I wish that I had been a boy,
And then I'd be a man,
And soon I'd be a soldier,
Without a thought of fear.
And first I'd be a captain,
And then a Brigidier;
And I'd march--march--march
With stately, martial tread,
A big hat like a smoke-stack
A setting on my head.

Sadie then marched back and forth across the stage to martial music, performing an "about face" in true military style. She then continued:

Or perhaps I'd be a bugler,
I'd sound the "reveille,"
And every sleeping soldier
Would rise to honor me,
All dressed up in my uniform
With buttons shining bright
I'd stand up in the early dawn,

[42]William Henry Harrison had just completed his four-year term as president earlier that year; William McKinley, the compatriot of JOHN MASON BAER during the Civil War, became President of the United States four years later, in 1897. He was assassinated early in his second term, after defeating William Jennings Bryan. The assassination was plotted by a group of anarchists in Europe who planned to assassinate several rulers of countries of the world. The King of Italy had already been killed. At a reception in Buffalo on 6 September 1901 an anarchist shot McKinley, covering the gun in his scarf-wrapped hand.

And blow with all my might.
I'd blow--blow--blow--
So thrillingly and sweet
Till all the hills around the camp
The echo would repeat.

Seven year old Sadie then imitated the blowing of a bugle, to the music of "reveille" off stage.

Or else I'd be a drummer-boy,
I'd beat the rat--tat--too,
And then I would not have to grow,
For size I think I'd do.
And tho I would not like to see
Folks killed! or think it right!
Yet if my comrades had to go,
I'd lead 'em in the fight.
And I'd beat--beat--beat--
The rat--tat--tat--tat--too,
And every rap to "Rebs" would say,
"Look out! We're after you."

Or else I'd be a cavalry man,
And ride a big black horse.
My hair a flowing down my neck,
A long moustache of course;
Gold lace upon my uniform
A plume upon my hat,
And silver spurs upon my boots,
Side arms and all of that.
And I'd charge--charge--charge!
So awful I would fight;
Skedaddle! How the Rebs would run,
Whene're I came in sight.

Sadie "charged" by raising her hand aloft as if with a sword. Spirited music accompanied the movement. Sadie then closed her performance with the final stanza:

But since I cannot be a boy,
Or ever be a man,
Or ever be a soldier,
I'll do the best I can.
To Encampment No. 90
I'll be a daughter true,
I'll love the starry banner
That is loved so well by you.
And I'll pray--pray--pray,
"Dear Lord with loving hand,
Guide the dear old Union veteran
Who fought to save our land."

Sadie then knelt, with her hands folded. The music was soft and sweet, and the Civil War veterans, most of them in their fifties and sixties, rose to give

her a great ovation. Governor McKinley's speech followed.

The next day CAPTAIN JOHN MASON BAER delivered his speech on the subject of "The Sons-in-Law of the Riley Family." He told how he began corresponding with a young Riley girl near the close of the Civil War; how he occasionally would send her a lock of his hair. Said he: "It was black and slick then."

He told how he married this girl when he was mustered out of the service. "You can see the results." JOHN then held down his head to the audience, much to their glee and laughter. He was virtually bald.

JOHN MASON BAER

One of the subjects of the Reunion pertained to "temperance," and a paper by Charles B. Riley of Kansas City, Kansas, was delivered on what temperance meant to the Riley descendants. It said, in part:

> The cause of temperance has never suffered at the hands of the Riley family, neither because of the use of intoxicating liquor, nor the intemperate abuse of the unfortunate whose footsteps are leading to the drunkard's grave,with no one to extend a hand of rescue.
>
> ....No place in our family do we find the unfortunate, deformed or dwarfed in body or intellect as the inheritance of parental dissipation. Perfect in mind and body, with proper conceptions of right and wrong; no greater or more desirable blessings have fallen in the lines of any family.
>
> ....We believe that our family, American in its instincts, liberty-loving, broad-gauged and experienced as it is in the affairs of men, and observant as it has been of the influence of temperance as a moral, physical and social question, will continue to exemplify the virtues thereof in their conduct and teachings, and that their unimpaired bodies and minds may be lasting examples of practical temperance; and when a monument marks the resting place of the last of our family, may it be inscribed--Temperance for the sake of Temperance.

Later, the Riley Reunion closed on a lighter note, and JOHN and LIBBIE BAER, with their four children, returned

to Appleton. Daughter Attie was 24 and unmarried; Otho was 20; EDDIE 15; and John Miller 7.

By 1895 EDDIE BAER and his brother John Miller Baer were beginning to attract attention as bicycle riders in the Appleton area. John Miller, at nine years and only 67 pounds was considered by many to be the best juvenile trick cyclist in the state. His ability to crawl all over the handlebars and wheels while in motion was loudly applauded by those watching his act. He could perform many of the standard tricks of the professional, plus a number of his own invention.

EDDIE, at age 16, had already developed a reputation as one of the best juvenile speed riders in the county. Two years earlier, he won his first race in organized competition when only 14. It was the annual Kaukauna-Appleton Race.

A reporter for the *Appleton Post* wrote "....A crowd began to gather at the finish line at the opera house corner as early as 9 o'clock and when the first man came in sight at 10:21, Appleton Street was lined on both sides with spectators as far up as the Northwestern House. At the College Avenue crossing, it was wedged full.

"When the winner came in sight about at the railroad, a cheer went up that swelled higher and higher until he crossed the finish. As he came nearer it was seen to be EDDIE BAER, a five minute man. He was riding strongly and finished a creditable performance for a young lad in good condition...." EDDIE was awarded a gold medal.

A year later the newspaper reporter wrote: "EDDIE BAER, aged 14 years, showed Monday that he is a bicycle rider. He is not a talker. However, from his father was learned some particulars of his plucky race.

"He started at the pistol shot, determined to make Pete Schlafer's in the five minutes of his handicap. He soon passed H. E. Tanner of Kaukauna (who had a 5:30 minute handicap), the only man in front of him. After that he was out of sight of everybody, and set his own pace.

"EDDIE had experimented with the Little Chute hills Sunday, and he knew how to get the best of them, by riding hard down them, while most of the others could not do it and keep their pedals. The momentum thus gained saved him half the work on the subsequent climb....(At

BAER, A WINNER.

THE APPLETON BOY WINS DIAMONDS.

The Bicycle Tournament at Marinette a Great Success.—Baer takes Two Races.—Julius Homan Rides a Fast Mile.

Eddie Baer won the honors for Appleton Tuesday at the Marinette bicycle tournament. Quite a number from this city witnessed the races and were enthusiatic in their praises of Eddie's successful efforts.

Fourteen hundred people paid admission to the races and then the gates were closed as all the seats were filled.

In the two mile handicap Ed. Baer, with 275 yards, set the pace all the way and was never caught. He finished in 4:44, very good time. There were over thirty starters and it was a fine race. A. D. Herriman, of Chicago finished 2d and Adolph Homan 3d. The latter had 225 yards handicap, nearly as much as Baer.

Baer also won the one mile handicap. He had 150 yards yards and five men passed him up to the half mile post, then at the ¾ mile post with a great burst of speed he pushed himself around the whole field, crossing the tape 4 feet ahead of A. D. Herriman. Adolph Homan was 3d with 125 yards handicap, not 6 inches behind Herriman. Time 2:19½. It was an exciting finish, and the audience loudly cheered the winners.

In the boy's race Baer could easily have won had he not had the bad luck to get in a pocket. He was sixth man from the pole and followed the field but could not get by, being shut off by the riders in front of him. He finished 3d. The winner was Tassy called the "boy wonder of Texas." Baer can beat him with hands off the handle bars in an open field.

NEWSPAPER ARTICLE OF 1894 describing EDDIE BAER'S bicycle riding prowess. It was one of dozens that appeared in northern Wisconsin papers during the middle 1890's.

Appleton Street) for the first time he saw the three men coming closest to him....but he spurted to the tape with a rush, and with plenty left up his sleeve....He is sure to be heard from later. It was a great performance for a boy."

Within a year "EDDIE BAER won the honors for Appleton Tuesday at the Marinette bicycle tournament. Quite a number from Appleton witnessed the races and were enthusiastic in their praises of EDDIE'S successful efforts.

"Fourteen hundred people paid admission to the races and then the gates were closed as all the seats were filled. In the two mile handicap, ED. BAER, with 275 yards, set the pace all the way and was never caught ....There were 30 starters....A. D. Herriman of Chicago was second."

"The riding of EDDIE BAER, a 16 year old boy of Appleton, was one of the surprises (of the race). He rode like a fiend and carried off two firsts and a third. His earnings amounted to ninety dollars. He is a little fellow, but evidently he has the stuff in his legs. The handicappers will see that he is placed his proper distance (in races to come)."

EDDIE did in fact prove himself. He set state records. At various meets the main events were often duals between EDDIE and other well-known cyclists from Chicago to Marinette. Spectators often numbered in excess of 3000 for any one event. Little EDDIE, as his followers called him, was a crowd pleaser as well as a fine racer, but it was his sportsmanship that often brought the crowds to their feet.

Said the *Menasha Breeze*, a newspaper published nearby: "That it pays to be gentlemanly is well illustrated by the manner in which EDDIE BAER, the plucky little bicycle rider from Appleton, has won favor with Menasha and Neenah people. Mr. BAER is gentlemanly at all times and under all circumstances, and the public is quick to see it. He can put up a strong kick at the judge's stand when occasion demands, but his language or demeanor is never rude."

Bicycling was so important to EDDIE that he went into business for himself in 1896, making, selling and repairing bicycles. This he did to provide funds for his planned education at the University of Wisconsin at Madison. He sold his business after nearly two and a half years, and entered the University in the fall of 1898.

Just weeks before EDDIE left for the University, tragedy struck the JOHN MASON BAER family. Their oldest

son, Charles Otho, had enlisted in the Apanish-American War. Congress had declared war on Spain on 25 April 1898. Otho was a budding lawyer in Appleton, and volunteered for service in response to President McKinley's call.

The war issue was the independence of Cuba from Spain. The United States Government and its people supported American intervention in order to free the Cubans from the shackles of Spanish rule.

CHARLES OTHO BAER

Otho Baer was 25 when he enlisted, and he was sent to Fortress Monroe, Virginia, for training. He became a corporal. The war was short-lived, Spain being completely incapable of matching U.S. Naval power. An armistice was declared on 12 August. Six days prior to that announcement of peace, Otho, still at Fortress Monroe, died of a fever attributed to meat poisoning.

His mother, LIBBIE BAER, expressed her sorrow through poetry. She composed:

OUR BOY -- OUR HERO

I

OUR BOY

On the threshold of his manhood, with his clear
and earnest eye,
Doth he scan the purple distance where his
aspirations lie;
With no blight upon the budding of his youth
so pure and fair,
With a mind whose high attainments are in one
so young, so rare;
With his health of mind and body, why may he
not attain
All that honest, brave endeavor in recompense
may gain?
O, dear eyes with steadfast purpose gazing where
the shadows rest,
Is not wealth and honor waiting, love to nestle
in thy breast?
There is need of thy strong manhood in the world of
struggling men,
For thy counsel is worth having, if by word or
if by pen.
There is need of thy true friendship and full
many know its worth,

There is need, God knows, of more like thee, the
flower of all the earth.

II

OUR HERO

Was it God that sent the message with its meaning sealed in fate?
Would no hand stretch forth to bring him back before it was too late?
Question not His plan and purpose -- but the instruments we are
In His hands to serve the ages; life is price of liberty;
God doth heal the heart that's broken, and the rain of bitter tears
Bringeth forth the grain that's golden garnered for the future years.
Life is not in living longest, and the heights which some attain
Are not reached by great endeavor, but by one swift span of pain.
Lived "Our Hero" in the moments more than some may live in years,
In the glory of that living we find balm for all our tears.
And remembrance brings us ever not a word or deed that mars
All the glory of his living in the life beyond the stars!

For many years prior to Otho's death both LIBBIE and JOHN BAER had been active in organizations dedicated to helping war veterans. LIBBIE was president of the Wisconsin Woman's Relief Corps of the G. A. R. at the time of Otho's demise.[43] JOHN, in 1887, had been a member of a county commission for the relief of indigent soldiers. He was a member of the G. A. R. and served on the staffs of several commanders during their terms of office.

LIBBIE had for years been writing poetry, and by 1900 had accumulated a large number of verses. Her friends in Appleton were urging her to publish her poems, and, in 1901, a New York City publisher was attracted to her works.

Comprised of some 200 pages of poetry, *In the Land of Fancy*, by LIBBIE C. BAER, appeared during the latter part of 1902, dedicated "To the Memory of Her Son Whose Affectionate Sympathy, and Appreciative Interest, Are Inseparably Connected with Many of These Stanzas." The publisher was F. Tennyson Neely of New York and London.

[43] LIBBIE became National Senior Vice President of the Woman's Relief Corps in 1900. She had joined the Corps in 1888.

In the "Introduction" to the volume, the publisher pictures LIBBIE'S background and ancestry in some detail. Writes the reviewer "...The gifted authoress comes from poetic lineage. Her ancestors on the paternal side were from the two families Riley and Swing; from the former descended the eminent poet and humorist James Whitcomb Riley; from the latter the distinguished philosopher and divine, Professor David Swing of Chicago...."[44]

LIBBIE CAROLINE BAER

The Milwaukee Sentinel, in a lengthy review of *In the Land of Fancy*, on 2 October 1902, discussed the roles of great poets and "minor" poets. Among the former the reviewer listed Poe, Shakespeare, Shelly and Keats. About minors, he wrote:

> Minor poets alone are serviceable to humanity because they reach the masses of men, and a good poet when once appreciated is to the soul what rain is to the parched earth. Among minor poets we would include Goldsmith, Gray, Burns, Moore, Longfellow and Whittier who have written one or two poems that so strongly appeal to the human heart that they can never die....
>
> The appearance of a new poet, especially of one who has something to say and says it rightly, is always a matter of supreme interest to the readers of poetry; and this is just exactly what has happened at this time.

---

[44]The relationship between LIBBIE RILEY BAER and David Swing is well documented. LIBBIE was a second cousin, twice removed, of the Rev. David Swing. Their common ancestor was JEAN MARTIN SCHWING, whose son MICHAEL was the first Swing immigrant to America. Another son of JEAN MARTIN SCHWING was Samuel Swing who also immigrated to America. Rev. David Swing was a descendant of this latter line. Rev. Swing, after preaching in southern Ohio, was called to the Westminster Presbyterian Church of Chicago in 1868. The church building was destroyed in the Chicago Fire, and Rev. Swing continued his services at McVickers Theater. His sermons attracted national attention, and were both lauded and criticized. However, on 13 April 1874, high councils of the Presbyterian Church ruled that his utterings were heresy, and filed charges against him. He was ruled innocent, but Rev. Swing resigned from the church, organizing the Central Church of Chicago. Best known of his sermons was "Truth for Today," delivered in 1876. His liberalism along theological lines brought him national acclaim. --From A. N. Waterman, *Historical Review of Chicago and Cook County, Vol. I* (Lewis Publishing Co., 1908), pp. 189, 190.

(Footnote continued on next page)

> A new volume of verse, bearing the imprint of F. Tennyson Neely Company, the author of which is LIBBIE C. BAER of Appleton, Wis., is fresh from the press. At the very outset we do not hesitate to say that MRS. BAER is entitled to a place among the minor poets we have mentioned. We do not say that she is superior to the best of them; neither do we say that she is superior to the least of them, but what we do say is that she is entitled to a seat at the table occupied by them since she has along with them contributed her share to betterment of men and women....

One of LIBBIE'S poems "Mad Marguerite; or 'Zib' the Mountain Guide," which consumed 12 pages in the total volume, was used with considerable success by Sadie Sherman, daughter of LIBBIE'S sister, Attie Riley of Marion, Indiana. Sadie, the same girl who nine years earlier appeared on the same stage with former presidents William Henry Harrison and William McKinley, was developing a widespread reputation as a platform reader.

Dozens of the poems in LIBBIE'S book relate to the military efforts of American men, and not a few to the memories of her son Otho Baer who died just four years earlier in the Spanish-American War. One of her best known was "The Flag."

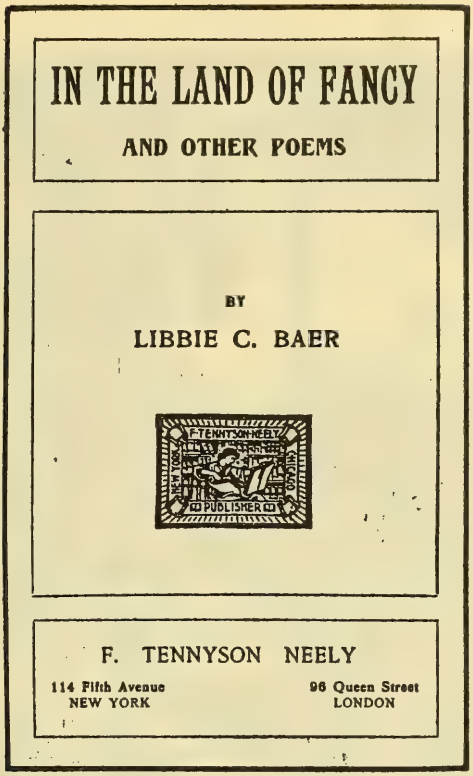
> O flag, from out thy folds I see
> The face of one who died for thee;
> Lest I might hate thee, tenderly
> I fold thee to my heart--ah! me!
> With anguished cry, "It must not be."
> Thank God! though home and heart's bereft,
> I still have love of country left.

---

44 cont'd.

LIBBIE'S relationship to James Whitcomb Riley has never been documented although several generations of Baers have claimed the kinship. It has been said that GARRARD RILEY, LIBBIE'S father, was a first cousin of James Whitcomb Riley (b. 1849). If this were so, it would mean that one of GARRARD'S father's (ZACHARIAH'S) brothers was the father of James Whitcomb. This is not true. The early family of James Whitcomb Riley was reared in Pennsylvania and no available writings on the two families make mention of any such relationships. Reuben Riley, James Whitcomb's lawyer father, said that "My grandfather was an Irishman and my grandmother (Sleek) was a German." In 1825 the family moved from Bedford County, Pa., to western Ohio, and a few years later to Randolph County, just across the state line in eastern central Indiana. --From Edmond Henry Eitel, ed., *The Complete Works of James Whitcomb Riley, Vol. One*, (Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merrill Company, 1913), pp. 368-387.

At the 1893 Riley Reunion at which many ancestors were subjects of prepared papers, no mention was ever made of James Whitcomb Riley, even though he had established his international reputation during the 1880's.



IN THE LAND OF FANCY

AND OTHER POEMS

BY

LIBBIE C. BAER

F. TENNYSON NEELY

114 Fifth Avenue
NEW YORK

96 Queen Street
LONDON

With love from Mamma
to
Edw S. Baer

11 14 1902

Libbie C. Baer.

TITLE PAGE of *In the Land of Fancy* by LIBBIE C. RILEY BAER, with greetings that appeared in copy given to her son, EDWARD SHERMAN BAER.

SADIE SHERMAN at age 15 as "Mad Marguerite," enroute to an acting career.

* * * *

Young ED BAER long had been exhibiting a bent for things mechanical. In high school he worked as a rodman with an engineering crew on the Milwaukee and Lake Shore Railroad. Also, he was employed by the Schlafer Hardware Company in their general repair shop.

So he entered the mechanical engineering school in 1898 at the University of Wisconsin, taking such subjects as higher algebra, trigonometry, calculus, physics, mechanical drawing and chemistry. During the next summer he worked on field surveys for water power sights, employed by O'Keefe and Orbison, hydraulic and mill engineers.

Returning to Wisconsin for his second year, EDDIE BAER continued his pursuit of civil and mechanical engineering. He also was a pitcher on the University's baseball team. Connie Mack, manager of the Philadelphia Athletics major league baseball team, heard about EDDIE'S pitching talents, and offered him a tryout with the Athletics.

When ED told his father about the offer, JOHN MASON BAER'S chilling response was: "All professional baseball players and professional actors are bums." That rather broad generalization killed ED BAER'S budding major league career.

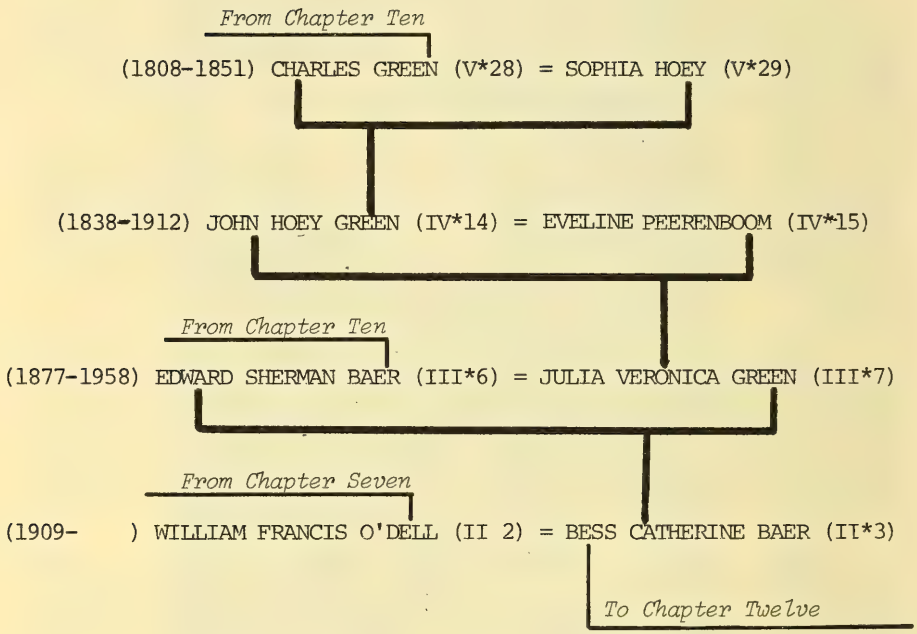
ED did not return to the University for his third year. Instead he took a job as a design engineer for the Manitowoc Steam Boiler Works. In 1901 he moved to his former employer, O'Keefe and Orbison, where he had charge of a pulp grinding mill at Garner's Landing on the nearby Fox River.[45]

During these years in Appleton, ED BAER had become acquainted with the family of JOHN H. GREEN (IV*14), but more especially with a daughter, JULIA VERONICA GREEN (III*7). They lived near each other, and ED and pretty JULIA were attracted to each other.

---

[45] Garner's Landing has been a landmark on the Fox River since the 1830's. The community was incorporated into the town of Combined Locks, Wisconsin, in 1920.

11


From Chapter Ten
(1808-1851) CHARLES GREEN (V*28) = SOPHIA HOEY (V*29)
(1838-1912) JOHN HOEY GREEN (IV*14) = EVELINE PEERENBOOM (IV*15)
From Chapter Ten
(1877-1958) EDWARD SHERMAN BAER (III*6) = JULIA VERONICA GREEN (III*7)
From Chapter Seven
(1909-) WILLIAM FRANCIS O'DELL (II 2) = BESS CATHERINE BAER (II*3)
To Chapter Twelve

CHAPTER ELEVEN — Peerenboom, Green

When CHARLES GREEN (V*28) and his father crossed the Ohio River from Pennsylvania into Ohio early in the 1800's they found what many friends had been telling them for months: they would find many of their Scotch-Irish compatriots waiting for them.

They were ferried across the river to East Liverpool, a river town settled in 1798 in Ohio's Columbiana County, formed in 1803 when Ohio was admitted to the Union. Slowly climbing up the hills west of the river they located Wayne Township where CHARLES' father had made arrangements to buy land.

Other Scotch-Irish and other Greens had preceded them. A Presbyterian Church had been built in 1814, a "large, plain, uncomfortable, one-story building in which seats were high and the aisles paved with brick." Virtually all of the Scotch-Irish in Columbiana County were of the Presbyterian faith, there having been a Presbyterian Church organized there as early as 1806.

But Wayne Township, ten miles up the Ohio River bank, was wilderness. To farm and earn a living the Greens had to clear the land of the tree forest. It was grossly dissimilar from Ulster, Ireland, where CHARLES was born.[1]

CHARLES' father was well aware of the problems he and his ancestors had faced during their lives in Northern Ireland. Famines were not uncommon. Emigration to America had begun more than 100 years earlier when, by 1740, more than 250,000 Scotch-Irish Presbyterians had left Belfast or Londonderry for the New World.

---

[1]While CHARLES GREEN is known to have lived in Columbiana County, his arriving in Ohio with his father is sheer conjecture. However, several Green families were early settlers in the county, including one William Green who died in 1814, according to probate records of Columbiana County dated 8 June 1814. One Charles Green died in 1816 in Columbiana County, leaving a minor child named Robert, according to Guardian Bond #438 appointing George Clarke the guardian of Robert. The ancestor CHARLES GREEN born in Ireland in 1808 could have been the son of either William or Charles, but no evidence has been found to document such a relationship. Flimsy evidence that CHARLES was the son of either William or Charles Green, deceased in 1814 and 1816, is the similarity of the names given the sons of CHARLES: William, Charles and Robert. In the 1830 U. S. Census of Columbiana County one John Green, born between 1780 and 1790, had nine children, including a male born between 1800 and 1810. This latter male could be CHARLES GREEN, but no documentation can be located.

Actually, CHARLES' father was surprised to learn that he and his countrymen in America were called "Scotch-Irish." It was an American term that originated in about 1750. He knew that the term was a misrepresentation. The Scotch-Irish were actually Scotch Presbyterians who had emigrated from Scotland across the North Channel, settling in the Province of Ulster during the 1600's. They could not stomach the treatment brought upon them by the Church of England as well as the British government.

The Scots of Ireland rarely inter-married with other races, and when they emigrated to America during the 1700's and 1800's they were in no way a mixture of Scotch and Irish. They were, instead, Scots whose ancestors had lived in Ireland.

Many of their English colonial neighbors in America referred to them as "Irish," something the Greens and their Scotch-Irish compatriots found particularly irksome. They knew that great numbers of the "Irish" in Pennsylvania and Ohio were not at all Gaelic, but true Scotsmen instead.

There was one characteristic these Columbiana Scotch-Irish had in common. They were a hardy lot. They had endured the stormy voyages across the Atlantic, in ships that often were less that 150 tons. They had slept in huddled masses below deck on straw mattresses or in hammocks while their square-rigger beat its way at eight or ten knots across the more than 3000 miles of sea to Philadelphia.

Arriving at the Port of Philadelphia they discovered to their surprise that they and the Germans outnumbered the English in this exciting city teeming with immigrants seeking religious freedom and promised economic opportunities. But they would have to pay a price: hard work and great physical risk.

These "Ulster Scots," as they preferred to be called, settled first along the Delaware River as well as in Philadelphia. Gradually, they pushed west along the Great Philadelphia Wagon Road, alongside the Germans who also were moving on to new frontiers.

The Greens found that by the early 1800's cheap land in Pennsylvania had long since disappeared, and when news of Ohio's formation spread they, along with other Presbyterians, decided to head for the river bank west of the Ohio River and start life anew in Columbiana County.

CHARLES GREEN was born in Ireland in 1808.[2] He ac-

[2]According to the U. S. Census of 1850 for Columbiana County, Ohio, CHARLES is listed as being 42, born in Ireland, having property worth $800.

quired an 80 acre farm in Wayne Township, being the east half of the southeast quarter of Section 21, in range number three. When 27, in 1835, he married a Columbiana County girl named SOPHIA HOEY (V*29). She was 18.[3]

SOPHIA'S family also were early settlers in the county and, like CHARLES' parents, farmed in Wayne Town-

PUBLIC SQUARE, NEW LISBON, OHIO, including Old Market House during the days of CHARLES and SOPHIA GREEN. (From an original print)

ship. They had arrived before 1819 and were active in the Methodist Church.[4]

CHARLES and SOPHIA GREEN began raising a family, and by 1840 had two children: Mary, born in 1837, and JOHN HOEY GREEN (IV*14), born on 1 January 1838. By 1850 five more children were born on their Wayne Township farm: four sons and one daughter. The family now totaled nine.

SOPHIA was stricken one day in 1851 when CHARLES

[3]"Marriage Records of Columbiana County, Ohio -- 1835-1848," Book III, p. 86.

[4]The Hoey family is known to have been in Columbiana County as early as 1819 when Mrs. Mary S. Hoey "became a member of the Methodist class in 1819 in Wayne Township," -- *History of Columbiana County, Ohio* (Philadelphia: D. W. Ensign & Co., 1879), p. 163. In the same history on page 168 is a record of an Alexander and John Hoey being on the Wayne Township 1829 voters' list. The Alexander Hoey family, in the 1820 U. S. Census for Columbiana County, shows one female born between 1811 and 1820. This could be SOPHIA HOEY GREEN, born in 1814. It seems highly probable that Alexander Hoey is SOPHIA'S father, based on circumstantial evidence.

died.[5] Suddenly she was faced with the appalling task of raising seven children, ranging in age from 14 to 2. JOHN HOEY GREEN, the oldest son, was 13.

She placed her four youngest children James, Robert, Margaret and Charles in a guardianship under Milton Maple and Joseph Hoey. CHARLES' estate was administered by George McGilvery.

SOPHIA attempted to run the farm in Wayne Township for about three years, but finally succumbed and decided to move to Outagamie County, Wisconsin in 1854, the state having been formed only six years prior. Outagamie County itself was only three years old. She had been corresponding with a Gardner family who had moved from Columbiana County to Outagamie and they stressed the cheap land that was available. Moreover, they added, Wisconsin was a frontier land that was fast being settled. SOPHIA'S Wayne Township farm in Columbiana would be worth much more than a similar farm in Outagamie.

So SOPHIA packed up her children and took a train to east central Wisconsin, a trip that took many days and several train changes. JOHN, her oldest son, was now 16 and fully capable of managing their Wisconsin farm.[6]

They bought property in Freedom Township, about 12 miles from Appleton on the Fox River, first settled about 20 years earlier. JOHN took over the responsibilities of the farm. But it was a frugal life. By 1857 the Columbiana farm had not yet been sold, and the Probate Court of the county ordered it sold to the highest bidder in order to take care of debts not yet satisfied, along with payments to Milton Maple, guardian of SOPHIA'S children.[7]

---

[5]The precise date of CHARLES GREEN'S demise is not known. However, the 1851 death date seems reasonable inasmuch as George McGilvery, Thomas Hoey and John McElhane were appointed administrators of CHARLES' estate on 24 March 1852 and were bonded accordingly (Case #3436; recorded 6 April 1852, Columbiana County, Ohio).

[6]The number of children accompanying SOPHIA to Wisconsin is not known. A Guardian Bond in Columbiana County dated 16 October 1855 named Milton Maple and Joseph Hoey as guardians for James, Robert, Margaret Jane, and Charles Green. A separate bond for the same date was issued for JOHN H. and William, the two older sons but still minors. JOHN H. GREEN in later years states that he moved to Outagamie County in 1854. This appears to be somewhat in conflict with the guardian bonds issued in 1855. By 1860 all of SOPHIA'S children are known to be in Outagamie County, based on U. S. Census data for that year.

[7]Probate Court Case #4667, Columbiana County, Ohio, "George McGilvery vs. SOPHIA GREEN, widow, *et al*" 1 February 1859. It was from

SOPHIA'S lot in life was not enhanced when her son JOHN HOEY GREEN announced one day during the summer of 1859 that he and EVELINE PEERENBOOM (IV*15) were planning to be married.

EVELINE was a pretty 19-year-old Dutch girl who, only a year earlier, had arrived in the United States from Holland with her family. Her father, GERHARDT PEERENBOOM (V*30), was born in Prussia in 1813 and moved to Holland where he met and married LYDIA JANSEN (V*31).

GERHARDT'S brother, Julius, had emigrated to Outagamie County ten years before GERHARDT'S family, as a result of the efforts of Father Theodore J. Van den Broek, a Catholic missionary from Holland who, in 1836, had founded a mission serving the Menominee Indians in Wisconsin's Fox River Valley.

In 1847 the Fox River Development Company was building canals on the nearby Fox River. Desperately in need of workers, the company offered free transportation to all foreigners who would emigrate to the Fox River Valley and help with the building of the canals.

Father Van den Broek heard of the appeal and saw in it an opportunity for aiding his own countrymen in migrating to this "Land of Promise," as he described it. The Catholic priest returned to his home community of Hertogenbosh in the province of Noorbrabant of South Netherlands. Here he recruited three boatloads of Dutch families for the voyage to America.

One of the ships was bound for New York, another for Boston, and the third for Philadelphia. Julius Peerenboom, the brother of GERHARDT, was on one of the ships. The year was 1848.[8]

---

7 cont'd.
the records of this case that the description of CHARLES GREEN'S Wayne Township farm was obtained.

[8]Julius Peerenboom is listed as one of the 1848 immigrants to Little Chute, Wisconsin, in the 1936 *Centennial Book* of the St. John's Catholic Church of Little Chute. This Julius Peerenboom could not be GERHARDT PEERENBOOM'S son Julius, who was eleven years old in 1848. Later, in *Commemorative Biographical Record of the Fox River Valley* (Chicago: J. H. Beers & Co., 1895), p. 900, the younger Julius states that he arrived in Little Chute in 1858, ten years after the initial group of immigrants. No other Julius Peerenboom can be located for 1848, and it is assumed that this latter Julius was a brother of GERHARDT although no such record has been located by this author.

The ocean voyages were rough, much worse than the expectations of any of the Dutch passengers. On Easter Sunday Father Van den Broek celebrated mass at an altar erected by the priest in the middle of the baggage area. On Monday and Tuesday, a storm broke upon them and grew in intensity. The Captain and his crew lashed themselves to the deck for purposes of safety.

As the storm became more and more violent the Captain issued an order to take an axe to the mast and cut it away in order to save the ship. When Father Van den Broek heard of this questionable decision he walked onto the deck and commanded the Captain to desist in any such action. Struck speechless by the Father's assumption of command, he dropped his plan to cut off the mast whereupon, to the Captain's amazement, the storm at once began to abate![9]

The Dutch immigrants landed in New York in May 1848. They boarded a small boat that took them up the Hudson River to Albany. There, on the Erie Canal, aboard a packet boat, they traveled to Buffalo. From there Father Van den Broek made arrangements to place them on a steamboat that took them as far as Green Bay. Flatboats carried them down the Fox River, to Little Chute, Wisconsin, where they settled.

Their new homeland in Little Chute was nothing more than a few log huts, plus a little frame church near the river. But they soon established a prosperous community.

Julius Peerenboom, a few years later, wrote to his brother, GERHARDT, in Hervell, Holland, about life in Little Chute. He urged GERHARDT and his family to break away from Holland and come to Little Chute where life was good to most of the families who emigrated several years earlier. True, adjusting to the wilderness life at first was difficult for most of them, but Father Van den Broek was a great priest and he kept the group together. Too, they were planning to build a new church, and everyone was working toward that goal. It would be a beautiful edifice, with a high steeple.

Other friends of the original group that emigrated in 1848 had since left Holland for Outagamie County, many in the early 1850's. But it was not until 1858 that GERHARDT made the decision to leave for America. The family spoke no English, but Julius assured them that Dutch was spoken in Little Chute and that the habits and

---

[9]This anecdote was drawn from a letter said to have been written by one of the passengers on the *Maria Magdalena*. The letter appeared on page 41 in "The Land of the Fox," a brief history of the area, published in 1948.

lifestyles of Holland were prevalent in this small community on the Fox River.

LITTLE CHUTE, WISCONSIN, near Appleton, when the Peerenboom family arrived from Holland in the 1850's.

GERHARDT'S oldest son, Julius, was 21 when they made the trip. EVELINE was the oldest daughter. In addition, there were four more sons and two daughters: a family of ten.[10]

When GERHARDT and LYDIA and their eight children arrived in Little Chute they were an exhausted lot, but greeting their many friends and relatives whom they had not seen in ten years gave them a new spirit. They soon found this strange life an enjoyable one.

EVELINE PEERENBOOM, aften called "BURDINE" by her father, was an extremely attractive young lady who wore wooden shoes all the way from Holland to Wisconsin. She was becoming the object of considerable attention from JOHN GREEN who lived in Freedom Township, five miles up the road from the Peerenbooms. He lived with his widowed mother who had moved from Columbiana County, Ohio, four years prior, in 1854.

EVELINE and JOHN had little in common except a great respect and attraction to each other. JOHN, 21, was a mature man who had for more than seven years been running his mother's farms, first in Ohio and then in Outagamie County. It was a struggle, and on JOHN'S shoulders fell the role of supporting the household.

JOHN had been fatherless since 1851. Although his

[10]More complete information of the GERHARD PEERENBOOM family appears in Appendix A, p. 474. Over the years the spelling of GERHARDT'S name went through a transition from GERANDUS (in Holland) to GERHARDT, and finally shortened to GERHARD.

early life was one of Presbyterianism, he found that earning a living consumed too much of his time and his religious life in Outagamie County was virtually non-existent.

ST. JOHN'S CATHOLIC CHURCH of Little Chute, built during the 1860's.

EVELINE, in contrast, came to Outagamie County as part of a strong Catholic family, each member being devoted to all others. Her Dutch background, coupled with an inability to speak English upon her arrival in Wisconsin, narrowed her life. The St. John's Catholic Church of Little Chute played a vital role in her day-to-day activities. Like the rest of her family, she was a devout Catholic and held to her beliefs in a rigorous fashion.

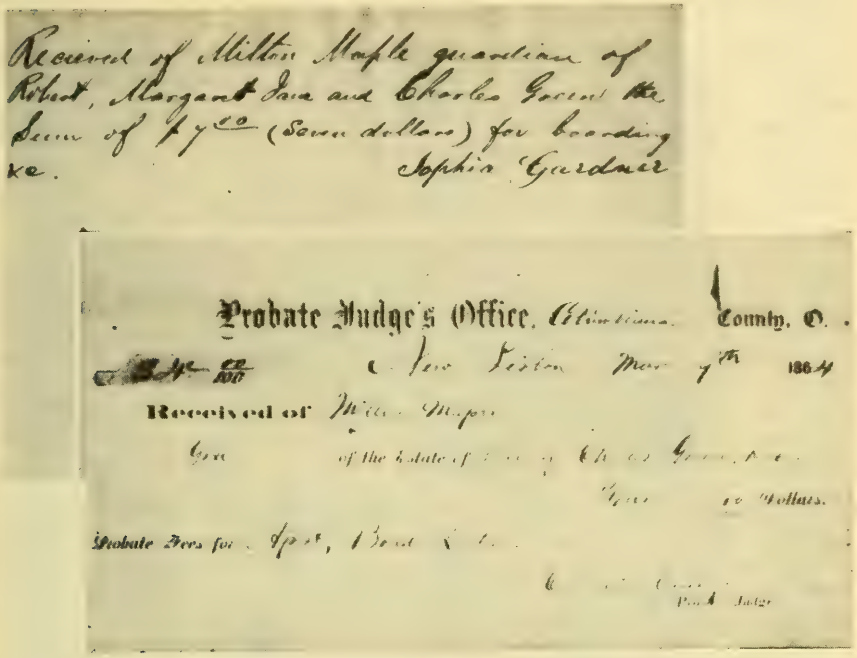
So, when she and JOHN GREEN planned their marriage, it was agreed that JOHN would become a Catholic. They were married on 26 September 1860 in the St. John's Church, a frame structure built by Father Van den Broek and the Indians. JOHN'S mother, SOPHIA, gave them some farmland on 18 October 1860.[11]

SOPHIA GREEN, facing new responsibilities without JOHN, turned to William, her second oldest son, now 18. She was still struggling to settle her affairs in Columbiana County where, in 1864, she finalized financial matters with Milton Maple for his guardian services during the 1850's.[12]

[11]The marriage date of JOHN and EVELINE PEERENBOOM GREEN has been reported in the Green Family Bible as being 1860 as well as 1859. The former appears to be the more likely date inasmuch as the 1860 U. S. Census for Outagamie County shows EVELINE still in the home of her father, GERHARDT PEERENBOOM. Also, the farmland acquired by JOHN from SOPHIA was recorded three weeks after the 1860 wedding date (Outagamie County Reception Index -- 1856-1862, Vol. 2).

[12]Columbiana County, Ohio, Probate Judge's Office, 9 March 1864, showing "Final account of Milton Maple, guardian of the heirs of Charles Green, deceased."

Early in the 1860's SOPHIA GREEN married Solomon Gardner Sr., formerly of Columbiana County, Ohio. He and his family had moved to Outagamie County during the middle 1850's, and it was Solomon who had urged SOPHIA to


Received of Milton Maple guardian of Robert, Margaret Jane and Charles Green the sum of $7.00 (Seven dollars) for boarding &c.
Sophia Gardner

Probate Judge's Office, Columbiana County, O.
New Lisbon Mar 7th 1864
Received of Milton Maple
of the Estate of
Dollars.
Probate Fees for Apr, Bond &c.
Probate Judge

SOPHIA HOEY GREEN GARDNER'S receipt given to guardian as evidence of payment made toward probate fees in Columbiana County, Ohio, in 1864, ten years after SOPHIA'S move to Wisconsin.

locate in Outagamie County's Freedom Township where a settlement of Scotch-Irish was developing.[13]

JOHN GREEN, with EVELINE, moved to Appleton in 1860 after their marriage. Their first son, Charles Andrew Green, was born on 25 June 1861. By the end of the year 1870 there were six children. JOHN began his career as a brickmaker.

Most of JOHN'S early life was spent out of doors, on the farms, in the woods, at the brickyard. By 1880 he entered the logging business in northern Wisconsin,

[13] The 1864 Probate Court papers of Columbiana County (see Footnote 12) show SOPHIA'S married name now to be "Gardner." It is assumed that she married Solomon Gardner who preceded her to Outagamie County. Solomon was in Columbiana County as early as the 1840 U. S. Census, and in Outagamie County by 1860. He is not listed in the U. S. Census of 1870 in Outagamie County. Born in 1805, he was nine years older than SOPHIA.

and in 1886 he and three of his sons, William J., 23, James A., 19, and Robert H., 17, set up business cutting pulp wood. They ran several camps simultaneously and developed a reputation that resulted in their being very well known in that section of the state.

JOHN'S business and family life were working out well. He was living during exciting times. During the latter part of the 1860's, the country was experiencing a tremendous reconstruction program, a need brought about by the disruption caused by the Civil War. General Ulysses S. Grant was elected President of the United States in 1869 and re-elected in 1873.

But the financial Panic of 1873 reached into Wisconsin and slowed JOHN GREEN'S progress. Still, nationwide news was stimulating. Thomas Edison invented the phonograph and the incandescent lamp. Alexander Graham Bell aroused the country with a gadget he called the telephone. It was a period of great growth: the population of the United States was just under 40 million in 1870, and grew to 50 million by 1880, an increase of some 26 per cent.

JOHN GREEN capitalized on these growth opportunities and was fast becoming an important figure in Appleton and Outagamie County. His family was now comprised of four sons and four daughters, including JULIA VERONICA GREEN (III*7) born on 18 December 1876.[14]

JOHN took a major step forward when he organized J. H. Green & Sons in 1895. They added the cedar block paving business to their activities, concentrating on this effort during the summer months while continuing the pulp wood cutting during the winters.

The early life of JOHN GREEN was one of devotion to hard work and complete integrity. His sons with whom he was associated in business were similarly imbued. Known as Green and Sons by 1900 the firm grew in the diversity of its work. Son Charles was now with the company.

In 1892 Green and Sons entered the manufacturing of sewer pipe, flue linings and wall coping when the Streator Clay Manufacturing Company began business in Streator, Illinois.[15] JOHN'S son, Robert, was moved to the Streator firm, although he lived in nearby Ottawa.

Green and Sons abandoned the wood pulp cutting operation in 1902 and embarked into the sewer and water

[14]The JOHN GREEN Family Bible lists JULIA'S full name as JULIA ANN VERONICA GREEN. More complete information on the JOHN GREEN family appears in Appendix A, p. 475.

[15]Paula Angle, *Biography in Black -- A History of Streator, Illinois* (Streator: Weber Company, 1962), p. 65.

JOHN AND EVELINE GREEN FAMILY of Appleton, Wisc., in 1895: (left to right) JOHN H. GREEN, James, Bessie, William, JULIA, Lyda, Robert, Sophie, Charles, EVELINE.

works contracting business. By 1910 the firm was well-known throughout the Middle West and several of its contracts were many miles from Appleton. The company constructed the first tunnel under the Chicago River in Chicago, and later built the locks at Lockport, Illinois on the Illinois River.[16]

JOHN GREEN was not a "joiner," but he was a long-time, prominent member of the Elks' Lodge of Appleton. It was the only society he ever joined.

* * * *

ED BAER'S decision not to return to the University of Wisconsin for his third year back in 1900 was influenced by a desire to earn money but also by an attraction to JULIA VERONICA GREEN, the young daughter of JOHN and EVELINE GREEN.

EDWARD SHERMAN BAER-1902

ED'S job with O'Keefe and Orbison had run its course, the construction of the pulp grinding mill at Garner's Landing being completed by June 1902. It was at this point in time that ED and JULIA were planning to wed, but ED was momentarily out of a job.

He had been corresponding with W. C. Smith, a division engineer for the Northern Pacific Railway Company at Livingston, Montana, about a job as a civil engineer for that road, but the opening had not materialized by the time O'Keefe and Orbison construction ended.

[16] Some of the activities of JOHN GREEN'S business career were drawn from the obituary story appearing in the 4 November 1912 issue of the *Appleton Crescent*.

Recognizing the minimum financial reserve that ED had been able to accumulate, his father JOHN MASON BAER, gave him the assignment of constructing a low dam for diverting waste water on the Green Bay and Mississippi Canal of which the Senior BAER was General Manager. The contract, assumed by ED, would last for several months, permitting ED and JULIA to get married and at the same time await the Northern Pacific job.

ST. MARY'S CATHOLIC CHURCH, Appleton, Wisc., in which JULIA GREEN AND EDWARD BAER were married in 1902.

The wedding took place in the St. Mary's Catholic Church of Appleton on 18 June 1902. ED'S long ancestry of Evangelicals, Baptists and Methodists yielded to the strength of EVELINE PEERENBOOM GREEN'S deep-rooted Catholicism -- through her daughter JULIA.

That fall brought news that the job with the Northern Pacific had materialized, and ED and JULIA BAER took the brave step of moving out west, much further west than any member of either family had ever lived. ED became a maintenance engineer at Dickinson, North Dakota, 60 miles east of the Montana line.

ED of course had a railroad pass, and when JULIA neared the end of her first pregnancy it was decided they would return to Appleton where JULIA could be under the care of the family physician. She and ED would stay with JULIA'S parents in their big house on Third Street.

JULIA GREEN BAER with first son, John Green Baer.

On 1 July the doctor was called in to aid in the birth of their first child, John Green Baer. It was a hot and humid July day, and JULIA'S father, JOHN GREEN, spent the afternoon hosing water on the roof of their house in an attempt to cool the interior. All went well and baby Jackwas born with all the fanfare of a first child.

Not too many months after ED'S family of three returned from Appleton to Dickinson he was transferred to the Northern Pacific's division point at Glendive, Montana, 90 miles to the west. The Northern Pacific and the Great Northern Railroads were competing aggressively for traffic from the Middle West to the Pacific Coast. James J. Hill, long-time railroad tycoon from Minnesota, had already pushed his Great Northern road through northern Montana, through Havre and into Great Falls.

The Northern Pacific chose the more southerly route through Montana, from Dickinson and Beach, North Dakota, through Glendive and Billings. Hill thought the southern route followed by the Northern Pacific was poorly located and failed to take advantage of the terrain, resulting in excessive construction costs. However, the Northern Pacific was enjoying the hefty land grants from the Federal Government and had for ten years before ED BAER'S arrival in Montana engaged in aggressive expansion.[17]

GLENDIVE, DAWSON COUNTY, MONTANA

ED'S job as maintenance engineer was to keep the track open between Beach, N. D. and points west into central Montana.[18] During 1903 many slides occurred along the Yellowstone River west of Glendive. The ice break-up during the spring resulted in large sections of track sliding toward the river. ED'S department was responsible for the construction of numerous dykes aimed at preventing these slides. ED BAER was 26 years old.

---

[17] James J. Hill's assessment of this area of the Northern Pacific proved to be somewhat correct. The Hill interests obtained control of the Northern Pacific but his Northern Securities Company was later declared to be in violation of the Sherman Anti-Trust Act.

[18] The details of ED BAER'S business career are taken from a letter he wrote on 19 December 1933 to R. E. Keck, general claim agent of The Northern Pacific Railway Company in St. Paul, Minn., spelling out his activities from 1895 through 1934. The Northern Pacific was engaged in a law suit relating to a flood at Wibaux, Montana, 25 miles north of Glendive, and ED was being called in as an expert witness.

He gained valuable experience during his work with the Northern Pacific. He learned how to observe and measure abnormal flood waters occurring on this main line of the railroad. As a member of the engineering department he participated in the making of channel changes that could eliminate bridges along the line within the Glendive Division.

ED BAER - Glendive, Montana

In 1904 ED BAER left the employ of the Northern Pacific and set up his own engineering and contracting office in Glendive. By 1905 ED and JULIA had their second child, Charles Edward Baer, born on 24 September. The family of four lived on Cherry Street.

Soon ED'S activities led him into work for the City of Glendive and he was named City Engineer and Surveyor for Dawson County, Montana. The task facing him for Glendive was an imposing one inasmuch as there was no water, no sewers, drainage or improved streets. Glendive was an isolated small western town. Life was primitive for the Baer family as well as all inhabitants in that part of the West.

ED'S job was to design water, sewage and drainage projects. Roads, bridges and culverts had to be built or installed in the county.

ELIZABETH CATHERINE BAER

Three years after son Charles was born, their first daughter, ELIZABETH CATHERINE BAER (II*3), arrived on 24 April 1908. JULIA was 32. ED, at 34, became Glendive's Commissioner of Sewers and Plumbing Inspector. He continued his own engineering firm for several years, but his work for the City of Glendive consumed most of his efforts.

A letter from ED'S parents back in Appleton told of ED'S sister, Attie, and her interest in a 47-year-old man named Charles Clarence Groff. Attie was 43 and unmarried until 1911, when she and Clarence Groff, a long-time railroader, were married. They soon moved to Ontario, California, where their only child, Catharine Elizabeth, was born on

8 August 1913. Attie often told stories about her grandparents, GERRARD and SARAH RILEY, and how she visited and took care of them during their nineties in Marion, Indiana.

Other news from Appleton was saddening. JULIA'S mother, EVELINE GREEN, wrote that her husband JOHN was not well. During recent years he had developed a heart problem, having been to Chicago on several occasions for treatment. The situation took a turn for the worse in October 1912 and the family was urged to return to Appleton. JOHN HOEY GREEN died on 3 November.

JOHN HOEY GREEN

The *Appleton Evening Crescent* headlined on its front page: "Well Known Pioneer of Appleton and Outagamie Dies on Sunday -- was Self-Made Man -- Came to Freedom from Ohio in 1854, Oldest Child of Widowed Mother and Became Head of One of the Leading Firms in Middle West." The funeral was held at the St. Mary's Catholic Church in Appleton.

Woodrow Wilson, the day before, had been elected to his first term as President of the United States.

In 1913 ED BAER received an offer from the Great Northern Railway to survey all the townsites on its new branch being built from the "Big Bend in the Missouri River" to Lewiston, the latter being in the central part of Montana. This job took ED away from home for several days at a time, and JULIA was left in Glendive with her small children: Jack, 11, Charles, 9, and BESSIE, as she was called -- after JULIA'S younger sister -- was 6.

Life was often lonely for JULIA, and after the trip back to Appleton in 1912 she realized more and more how far away she really was from her family. Once, when ED was out of town, she and her children huddled through a tornado. More than once, she would be called upon to shoot intruding snakes. It was not a life she enjoyed. Moreover, she realized that Glendive did not offer as much to her and her family as did the more developed communities with which she was familiar back in the Middle West.

The Great Northern job came to an abrupt ending in 1914 with the outbreak of World War I in Europe. The railroad management immediately curtailed all new construction and any notions of expansion were dropped. ED

was out of a job, and JULIA encouraged their returning to the Middle West.

So the Baers packed the family and some belongings into a car and headed east. ED had a brief brush with an oil drilling venture in Fargo, N. D. enroute, but it was short-lived and to no avail. More promising was the expansion program of Green and Sons into several sanitary canal and deep waterway projects in Illinois.

JULIA GREEN BAER in Glendive, with Jack, Charles and BESSIE

ED'S education and experience lent themselves well to Green and Sons, and he became their consulting engineer. The Baer family moved to Streator, Illinois, a community on the main line of the Santa Fe 100 miles southwest of Chicago.

Green and Sons contracts were now in the millions of dollars. The locks at Marseilles and Lockport, Illinois, were two of the largest. ED was engaged in estimating, planning plant layouts and equipment.

The Baers were not long in Streator when letters from Appleton told of JULIA'S mother, EVELINE GREEN, falling down stairs in February 1915 in their home at 943 Eighth Street, breaking her hip. She had been suffering from asthma for months, and the fall complicated her breathing.

EVELINE PEERENBOOM GREEN

The family was notified early in June that her asthma attacks were becoming more serious, and she died on 10 June at the age of 77. JULIA, with her brothers and sisters, returned for the funeral: Captain Charles A. Green, Sophia Douglas, and Bessie Long, all of Appleton; Lyda Schreiter from Manitowoc, Wisc., Robert Green from Ottawa, Ill., and James Green of Chicago.

EVELINE'S two brothers, Julius and Arnold Peerenboom of Appleton, joined their

STREATOR CLAY MANUFACTURING COMPANY as it appeared in 1913 when EDWARD BAER arrived from Glendive, Montana, with his family of five. He was superintendent of all production facilities.

nieces and nephews at the St. Mary's Catholic Church for services, and EVELINE PEERENBOOM GREEN was buried in the St. Mary's Cemetery alongside her husband, JOHN HOEY GREEN, who died three years earlier. It had been 58 years since she had journeyed across the Atlantic from Holland to Little Chute.[19]

A second daughter was born to ED and JULIA on 17 September 1917. She was named Margaret Estelle Baer, after Stella Gertrude Kennedy Baer, wife of ED'S brother, John Miller Baer. John had graduated from Lawrence College of Appleton in 1909 where he was Editor-in-Chief of *The Lawrentian*, a school publication. After a few years

JOHN MILLER BAER as he appeared at his drawing board in 1966 in Washington, D. C.

he became secretary of the Beach Improvement Company of Beach, N. D., Stella's home, but his true interest lay in cartooning.

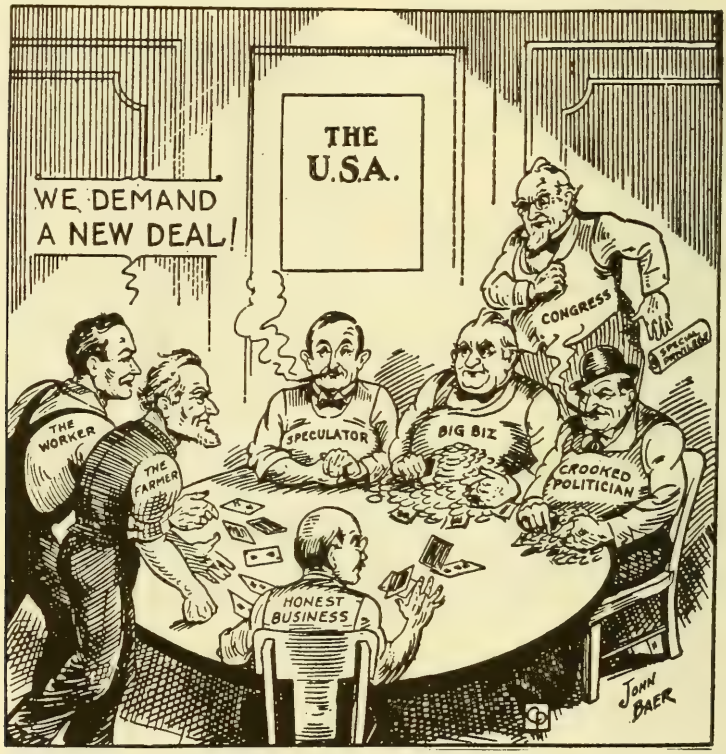
His cartoons were well known in North Dakota for their political overtones, and he moved to Fargo where he was the cartoonist for the *Courier-News*, a nonpartisan farmer's weekly. In 1917 he was drafted as a candidate from the First District of North Dakota for the U. S. House of Representatives.

He ran with the support of the Farmers' Nonpartisan League, organized in 1915 in North Dakota. His campaign

---

[19]EVELINE PEERENBOOM GREEN'S mother had died many years prior, in 1864. Her father, GERHARDT, remarried to Hendrina Aarts. He died in Little Chute on 25 May 1872.

was based almost entirely on his cartooning in which he depicted the farmer as a dignified person -- "not as a Rube," he mentioned to a friend. At 31 he was elected to office as the youngest member of the U. S. Congress. He served two terms, failing in his third bid.[20]



THIS 1931 CARTOON BY JOHN BAER is credited with coining the term "New Deal," which was later used by Franklin Delano Roosevelt in his campaign for president.

While John was in Washington, ED was working in Illinois. World War I, growing in intensity in Europe, finally engulfed the United States, and much of the work activities of Green and Sons were stopped. However,

[20]John Miller Baer remained in Washington, D. C. for the rest of his life. He was strongly identified with the labor movement. He joined the staff of *Labor*, a publication of the national railroad unions as its cartoonist, and continued with the newspaper until shortly before his death. At the age of 11, with his parents, young John Miller Baer shook hands with President William McKinley, and he later claimed that he had shaken the hand of every subsequent President of the United States. He devoted a portion of his time to industrial design, preparing the first United Nations emblem, the original Pan American Airways symbol, and the first package cover for Cream of Wheat. John Miller Baer died in 1972. His son, John Mason Baer, has long been engaged in free lance work as an architectural delineator.

EXTENSION OF REMARKS
OF
HON. JOHN M. BAER,
OF NORTH DAKOTA,
IN THE HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES,

Friday, May 30, 1919.

Mr. BAER. Mr. Speaker, Memorial Day has always been a sacred and significant day for me. The patriotic exercises and stirring addresses I have heard on this day of dedication have left a deep impression in my mind which time can never erase. I am glad that in these busy days that Congress can set aside a day for eulogies to our noble dead.

On this day, I am proud to say, I could decorate the graves of direct ancestors, each of whom has died in some war for American liberty. I count as my choicest inheritance the spirit of patriotism and loyalty bequeathed to me through a long line of ancestors in America. That we should enjoy the blessings that we have to-day hosts have toiled, suffered, and died. Our heritage of religious, intellectual, and political liberty was made possible only by their self sacrifice. The greater freedom that we desire to give to all the people of the world and bequeath to future generations can be made possible only by our taking up the burdens of self-sacrifice of former generations. In doing so we will have richly earned the blessings of posterity, as those who struggled for us have merited our undying gratitude.

There are superior advantages in a democracy, but great responsibilities go with them. All will be lost if the dark forces of autocracy should have prevailed. Their idea was that people exist for the government. Our idea is that governments exist for the people. It is for this idea that our soldiers and sailors fought. It is to sustain this idea that our people will go to any length of exertion or suffering. Any American who does not respond to this inspiration will be guilty of faithlessness to all [illegible] for it in bygone years.

[illegible] of years before the establish[illegible] of our Re-

OUR HEROES.

We honor those whose valor made
Them heroes, we say ours;
"Our" living heroes and "our" dead
Whose graves we strew with flowers.

Our veterans come with martial tread,
Each May, ranks thinner grown;
Whilst in the "City of the Dead,"
Flags are more thickly sown.

Between two phantom armies cast,
This remnant of the blue,
How loyal they unto the past,
And each to each how true.

The "last one" shall not shrink with fear,
But bravely close his eyes,
As muffled drums are drawing near,
His escort to the skies.

When through the mist he sees the host,
Then God be glorified!
He there shall find not one is lost
Who for his country died.

—

OUR FLAG.

I care not by whom, or when, or where,
Was designed our glorious flag so fair,
'Twas patriot's heart by brave deeds fired,
A poet's soul by heaven inspired.
And be it night or be it morn,
Our flag, our flag was heaven born!

Methinks he roamed at twilight hour,
When rainbow tinted, bathed with dew,
Bloomed many a fair and fragrant flower,
Whose perfume whispered, "Where may you
Find brighter hues in all the world
To bedeck the flag as yet unfurled?"

But mused he still, with head bowed low,
On many a soul-inspiring scene—
The lofty mountains capped with snow,
The silver lake, the river's sheen;
The golden mist of fair sunrise
In far-famed Italy's azure skies.

Enraptured still, he sees beyond
[illegible] bright and cooling [illegible]

POEMS OF LIBBIE RILEY BAER were read into the United States Congressional Record on 30 May 1919 when the Hon. John Miller Baer rose to address the House of Representatives on the meaning of Memorial Day to Americans.

Green and Sons' Streator Clay Manufacturing Company, in Streator since 1892, was in the process of designing and constructing a new brick plant in Streator and the War did not affect its completion.

ED did the engineering work on the plant and as the War broke out he was named superintendent. The plant employed 100 men and produced 100,000 face brick daily. But the real news of the day was the entrance of the United States into the War.

ED, at 41, was too old for the call to service. His older son, Jack, at 14, was too young. However, Streator with its population of some 10,000 provided well over

TROOP TRAINS STOPPING IN 1917 at the Streator, Illinois, Santa Fe Station during World War I. Jack (14) and Chuck (12) Baer sold sandwiches and popcorn to the soldiers. (From Angle, Biography in Black, p. 103)

500 young men for war duty, more than half of whom had volunteered.[21]

JULIA would make sandwiches and popcorn, wrap them up, and sons Jack and Chuck would meet the troop trains going through Streator on the Santa Fe and sell them to the draftees heading for war. There were no dining cars on the troop trains.

---

[21] *op cit.* Paula Angle, *Biography in Black -- A History of Streator.*

At War's end, ED was made superintendent of the entire Streator Clay operation, including its sewer pipe plant that in itself employed 140 men.

Under the strong guiding hand of JULIA, the Baer family worshipped in Streator's Immaculate Conception Catholic Church. Their attendance was regular, except for ED who at this stage of his life did not attend the church's services. But in no way did he object to JULIA'S insistance on a rigorous Catholic life for the family. To the contrary, he encouraged it.

Come 1921 ED and JULIA found their fifth child on the way. Ann Louise Baer was born on 5 February 1922. JULIA was 44. Their oldest child, Jack, 18, was being readied for college. He was soon sent off to Champaign and the University of Illinois where he studied ceramic engineering.

ED BAER'S father and mother in Appleton were well into their seventies. JOHN MASON BAER had retired from the general managership of the Green Bay and Mississippi Canal Company as well as the treasureship of the Fox River Valley Telephone Company. Like many other parents, they lamented the lack of communication with their children who were so busy with their own families.

ED did write his parents during the fall of 1923, and it brought an immediate response from his father, JOHN MASON BAER, dated 31 October:

Dear EDWARD and JULIA and Kiddies:

Received EDD'S good and interesting letter this morning and you can't imagine how much good and satisfaction it does for me.[22] I have been cooped up here in the house for almost a year, not getting out but twice; that was to the bank.

Now to get such a good interesting letter telling me just what I longed to know, and to read of your having an office building to yourself and recognized as superintendent and increased salary. It makes my hair turn red as of old.

Nothing proves more to your Mother and to myself than to read of the success of our children and know they are appreciated by their employees, and that their plant is not marking time but is operating at full capacity.

---

[22] JOHN MASON BAER always spelled his son's name with an extra "D." Perhaps "EDD" was a carryover from ED'S younger days when he was called "EDDIE."

It is dreadful to be tied up in the house, waiting for letters from our dear ones, after being so active going to the office every morning. We had a fine visit from John, Chas. and their pal, and we enjoyed every minute of their stay, and the many short visits of BESSIE during the early fall.

You and JULIA can be proud of your children -- all so bright and well-behaved. They are a monument to any family, and will make their mark when they go out in the world for themselves.

I so often hear men say what fine children CAPTAIN BAER has -- all workers and educated. If we had all our boys and girls near us to visit them often and have them tell all their ups and downs and see them growing to be men and women such as their mammies and daddies are. Old father time is counting of your dear Mother and dad; all as it should be, we suppose.

We are proud the Green Brothers have treated you kindly and appreciate your worth. We will write Jack, and pleased to know he is successful in college. Charles is a stalwart good-natured man and is the making of a man to be recognized. He has little to say but knows when he talks what to say.

Now, EDD, we are well fixed for the winter with 13 tons of anthracite coal, 4 cord of maple wood, 3 bushels of apples, 2 bushels of potatoes, canned fruit and jellies for our children when they come home, and if we live prudently will have enough to purchase groceries and pay taxes for a year or two.

The U. S. has compelled the Canal Co. to raise the canals they occupy 3½ ft. and it is hard to get material and labor in many places. So don't know when they will cut me off although I had the promise for life, but corporations can easily change hands and then it will be all over for me....Hugs and kisses for all.

Pa[23]

Enclosed with JOHN MASON'S letter was one by LIBBIE. She wrote:

My dear Ones:

Daddy has written such a long letter that I will spare you from repeating same -- in length at least, for I could not write much tonight. In any case I am too tired. Not sick, but tired.

[23]The "Canal Co." did in fact fail to honor its commitment to JOHN MASON BAER when its financial condition deteriorated over time.

THE JOHN MASON AND LIBBIE BAER FAMILY of Appleton, Wisc. in about 1925. From left to right: EDWARD SHERMAN of Streator, Ill., JOHN MASON, Attie Mayette Groff of Ontario, Calif., LIBBIE CAROLINE, and John Miller of Washington, D.C.

We are through housecleaning, storm windows up and all ready for the "shut-in" days that must come. I dread them so.

You may be surprised at Daddys writing so well as he does. It had been months since he gave up writing -- just occasionally he would write a few lines, but for several weeks he has been much better in health....But when ED'S letter came he said: "I will write my boy one last letter if I never write another." (ED'S) letter has put new life into him.

If I can see him in the place he deserves to be I am ready for anything that can happen to me. So, we read and re-read EDS letter and both agree not to worry any more about things....

I told Daddy to "get to bed and sleep good," and he said: "You bet I will. I think of the children every night, but most of all I wanted a letter from ED and now I have it and it is good news."

I know you and JULIA are saying "Mother could not write a short letter to save her life!" That's so, but I can make a long letter shorter -- so, good night to you all, and may health and happiness be with you always.

Lovingly,

Mother

ED BAER had a winning way with people. He was well-liked in the Streator community as well as by the many men who were working for him at Streator Clay. But ED BAER developed a strong anti-labor union attitude during the 1920's when Streator encountered severe labor problems.

The various industries in Streator had long employed labor on both an "open shop" and "closed shop" basis. At Streator Clay ED BAER and others in management insisted on an "open shop," meaning that it was not necessary for a worker to belong to a union in order to work for the company.

However, the city began losing industry in the early 1920's and many business people were blaming the attitude and activities of organized labor. Nineteen manufacturing firms in Streator ran a full page advertisement during the last week of 1921, terming it a "Declaration of Principles of the Employers of Labor in Streator."[24]

[24] *op cit.* Paula Angle, *Biography in Black.*

Among the "principles" were....

- No person will be refused employment on account of membership or non-membership in any labor organization
- Employers must be unmolested and unhampered in the management of their business
- We disapprove absolutely of strikes and lock-outs
- We declare our unalterable opposition to the Closed Shop and insist that the doors of no industry in Streator be closed against any workmen

Signing for the Streator Clay Manufacturing Company was its president, Robert H. Green, one of JULIA'S brothers.

Early in January the labor unions ran a response to the management advertisement, signed by 30 union locals, including barbers, sheet metal and clay workers. Antagonisms grew and as companies failed to renew their labor contracts the firms were closed by strikes.

ED BAER, in direct charge of the men at Streator Clay, was in the middle of a threatening situation. Violence had occureed at other plants, and Streator Clay was no exception. When the workers at ED'S plant followed the dictates of local and state labor leaders the company hired men from southern Illinois, Kentucky and Tennessee in order to break the strike.

These out-of-town men were threatened with physical harm, and ED'S job was to work with both sides as well as with the managements of other companies in the area. A total of 2000 men in Streator were forced out of work. Within the year management and labor sat down together and worked out a compromise. But ED'S anti-labor feeling persisted for years, and he found his brother's pro-labor work in Washington somewhat distasteful.

In 1925 the Baer's second son, Charles Edward, was off for the University of Illinois. The family's finances were being stretched in order to pay for Jack's education, along with Chuck's, and soon BESSIE'S. But JULIA and ED were dedicated to making certain that college educations would be provided for their children.

JULIA had the feeling that the University of Illinois would be too much of a task for BESSIE. A convent would be more appropriate. So, when the fall of 1926

came, BESSIE boarded a train for Winona, Minnesota, where she was to enter the College of St. Teresa.

First BESSIE was to take the Santa Fe to Chicago where it was necessary to change trains. JULIA stressed to BESSIE that at no time and under no circumstances was she to talk to anyone except a bell cap on the trip -- until she had met with a representative of St. Teresa.

In Chicago's Santa Fe station BESSIE'S bell cap took her to a nearby Parmelee Coach, a small bus-like vehicle engaged by various railroads to transport passengers from one station to another. At the Northwestern Station BESSIE met the social directress of St. Teresa. Other girls, like BESSIE, were assembling for the trip to Minona, a small community 100 miles southeast of Minneapolis on the Mississippi River.

BESSIE, like the other St. Teresa-bound girls, was dressed in highly suitable attire, including white gloves and hat. The dress requirement was a tip-off regarding the life at the College of St. Teresa. Smoking was cause for expulsion from the school. When a student was entertaining a boy, a nun always had to be in the room. This, BESSIE mentioned to her roommate in a gross understatement, resulted in rather stilted conversations.

In balance the year at St. Teresa was a pleasant one, but BESSIE took a firm stand against returning for a second year. The family agreed that she could go to the University of Illinois, where Chuck was a member of the University's national championship football team. He played tackle. Jack was now working for Streator Clay, his education in ceramic engineering behind him.

JOHN MASON BAER, ED'S father in Appleton, in his early eighties, still sought letters from his children. On 19 April 1927 he wrote:

> Dear EDD, JULIA and all the children:
>
> Have been waiting for one of EDD'S good letters telling me about the children and the plant. We get anxious to get one of your old-time letters telling about all your prospects and especially about John, Charles, BESSIE, Margaret and Louise Ann. How I would love to see them and hug them all up and have some music.
>
> We get lonesome and (you) can't imagine how much good it does to get letters telling us all about how you are prospering....

LIBBIE BAER, in sending her husband's letter to ED, wrote a note at the bottom of the letter: "This is a

letter that Daddy commenced to write, but says he can't finish it. I send it as it is."

LIBBIE'S own health took a turn for the worse within months. She fell and broke a hip during the latter part of 1928 in their home at 443 State Street and never fully recovered her physical being. But LIBBIE never lost her interest in her family, writing to JULIA shortly after "getting out of bed" (from the fall) that she was "sending a hurried note of congratulations to 'Mr. and Mrs. John Green Baer'" who had married only two weeks earlier on 23 September 1928. Jack's bride was the former Ann Margaretha Wegforth.

Shortly before LIBBIE died on 27 February 1929 she wrote what she termed "Original Thought." It read:

> My highest ambition is to leave to those who love me best some helpful thought or deed; a sincere unselfish service; work well done; a guide-post set up in some difficult road-way, pointing to a better and shorter path to contentment, happiness and victory over self.

ELIZABETH CAROLINE RILEY BAER was buried in Appleton's Riverside Cemetery. At 82, she had lived for 61 years in Outagamie County.

* * * *

The Great Depression of the 1930's, triggered by the stock market crash of September 1929, ushered in troubled days for the Baer family of Streator.

Dependent to a great extent on new construction by both government and private industry, Streator Clay began to feel the effects of the Depression by late 1930. Then, in early summer 1931, the company experienced a devastating fire that gutted the plant.

Both ED and his older son Jack were working in the production end of the company, and the fire plus the es-

calating Depression brought anxiety into their homes. By 1932 business had virtually dried up, and new orders were a rarity.

GUTTED PLANT OF STREATOR CLAY Manufacturing Co. after fire during summer of 1931.

Like most firms during this economic crisis, salaries were reduced and ED and Jack were no exception. Charles, three years out of the University of Illinois with a degree in physical education, was head football coach at the Lew Wallace High School in Gary, Indiana. He married Anne Lichliter on 23 December 1931.

BESSIE had graduated from Illinois in June of 1930. Few were the university graduates of that Depression year who secured employment. However, BESSIE landed a job as a teacher at the Streator Township High School. Her subject was biology. But public schools were paying pitifully low salaries, if in fact they could meet their payrolls.

BESS BAER (right) standing in Streator Clay culvert with JULIA and Ann Baer (left), sister-in-law. Sisters Peg and Lou sit on top.

Streator Clay developed a brick veneer product labeled "Muralite." The company had hoped it would replace regular brick siding on houses and other structures, but the Depression was not the time to embark on the marketing of a new product.

ED BAER was active in promoting the product and he traveled extensively, including several trips to the Pacific Coast. But to no avail. Muralite failed to take hold, and Streator Clay withdrew its promotional efforts. With no letup in the Depression Streator Clay seemed heading for bankruptcy. Finally bankruptcy proceedings

were initiated, and ED and Jack were without work, although if the proceedings were successful some back pay would be forthcoming.

During one of his trips to California, when explaining Muralite, ED met Gus Larson, a well-to-do "self-made" business man who was president of Los Angeles Brick and Clay Company. Gus was seeking a graduate ceramic engineer who could run a test kiln and who had experience in operating a clay plant. ED, as it turned out, knew just the man: his son Jack who, in fact, was highly qualified for the assignment.

Late in 1935 Jack headed for Alberhill, California, some 65 miles southwest of Los Angeles. Within three months his wife Ann and their two sons, John Edward, five, and Alan Lawrence, two, were on their way to a new life in California. When the Streator Clay bankruptcy proceedings were completed Jack received his back pay, and the family made plans to build their home in Elsinore, a few miles from the brick plant at Alberhill.

ED and JULIA followed Jack and Ann to the West Coast, with daughters Peg, 19, and Lou, 14. Streator Clay was no more. ED had worked for the firm for nearly 25 years. He became employed by the Federal Government's Public Works Administration, supervising construction projects, from Oregon to Arizona.

* * * *

Armed with a degree in education from the University of Illinois, BESSIE began her teaching career at Streator Township High School in September 1930. She was soon honored by the Class of 1933 which elected her as their Class Advisor. Certainly BESSIE was well equipped to teach, and she took her role seriously.

One rather distracting note was WILLIAM F. O'DELL, whom she had met two years earlier at the University in a chemistry class. BILL was attempting to keep his economic head above water by first selling direct mail to

ice and coal dealers, and then with the Powers Division of Remington Rand, makers of punched card accounting equipment. Neither of the jobs brought me much money. Moreover, neither job lasted very long.

BESSIE and I had agreed to get married while at Champaign, but now that the Depression was booming along in full swing such thoughts became subservient in the light of reality. No one -- not myself, not BESSIE, and most certainly not our parents could or would be willing to finance our married life.

Added to that complication was a difference in religions. BESSIE was raised a Catholic while I was a Congregationalist. This obstacle began to lose its leverage as time went by and we agreed that rather than embarrass both families we would solve the entire issue by eloping.

After waiting two more years we decided that Depression days were a way of life, and that we should go ahead and set a day for the elopement: 10 June 1933. BESSIE was in the process of completing her third year of teaching at Streator High. Along with making secret plans to marry she had the responsibility as Advisor to her Class of '33 which was preparing to graduate on the night before our planned elopement date.

BESSIE'S Senior Class had already published the school's 15th volume of *Hardscrabble - 1933*, Streator High's yearbook. To express their recognition and appreciation of how much BESSIE had accomplished for them the class dedicated the volume to her. The first page of the book contained the Dedication, with her picture opposite.

The elopement intrigue called for some friends of BESSIE'S to drive her to Kankakee, Illinois, some 50 miles east, where she was to board a train for Lafayette, Indiana, where I was engaged in alumni promotion and fund raising at Purdue University -- an interesting assignment during the depths of the Depression.

In the midst of all this secret planning was the Senior Class' Commencement the night before. When they presented BESSIE with a silver tray it was too much. BESSIE'S voice cracked a bit, due perhaps to the strain of secrecy surrounding her every move at home, not to mention the culmination of three years of working with her students -- a life she was about to terminate the very next day.

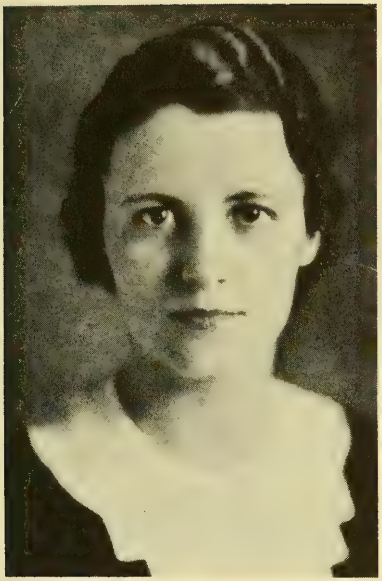
BESSIE survived, and the following morning the plan began to take shape. Her friends, the Winslow Painters, were on time and the trip to Kankakee was without inci-

dent. They saw her off on the Lafayette-bound train, and as the scenery floated by surely she had some second thoughts about the entire bit of maneuvering. But she never turned back.

DEDICATION

To

MISS BESS C. BAER



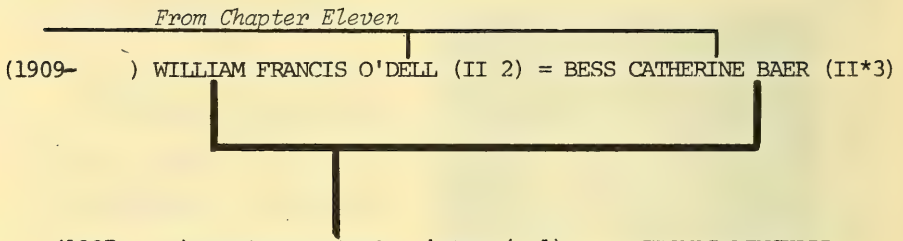
whose sympathetic understanding and close companionship throughout the past three years have taught us the true meaning of class spirit and loyalty, we, the Class of 1933, do dedicate this, the fifteenth volume of Hardscrabble.

I met her at the station in Lafayette, although I was just a bit late in my arrival. When I showed up BESSIE was there, and we headed straight for the parsonage of the First Methodist Church of Lafayette where the Rev. Thomas Fred Williams was waiting for us.[25]

[25]Forty-seven years after our marriage I encountered this poem that appeared in the 26 November 1980 issue of the *Wall Street Journal*:

I'm glad we married when we did,
I'd like to here record it;
For had we waited until now,
We still could not afford it!

12


From Chapter Eleven
(1909-) WILLIAM FRANCIS O'DELL (II 2) = BESS CATHERINE BAER (II*3)
(1937-) MARGARET LOUISE O'DELL (I 1) = J. THOMAS PINCKARD
(1942-1942) WILLIAM GHENT O'DELL (I 1)
(1944-) DAVID TREVOR O'DELL (I 1) = VIRGINIA ANN FINDLAY

CHAPTER TWELVE — Baer, O'Dell

Our best man was Harry Schilling, a Lafayette druggist. His pharmacy was at the corner of Main and Third Streets, a highly desirable location because all streetcars, regardless of their route, passed that corner.

Harry was a member of the Purdue Chapter of Delta Upsilon, the college fraternity of which I was a member at Illinois. Because he and I were interested in alumni affairs, we became good friends although he was at least 15 years older.

It was Harry who arranged to have the Rev. Williams preside at our marriage ceremony. Rev. Williams was also a Delta U. The ceremony was simple enough, in the parsonage living room, with two witnesses, Harry and Mrs. Williams.

BESSIE and I left on a ten-day trip into North and South Carolina in my second-hand Plymouth -- the car that had secretly transported BESSIE'S goods from Streator to Lafayette during the months preceding our elopement.

Returning to Lafayette we found several wires and letters of congratulations. A letter from my father, FRANK O'DELL, did not arrive until the middle of July, five weeks after our marriage. On a trip East, he wrote from Buffalo, with his usual dry wit:

Dear Bessie and Bill:

You no doubt have wondered why I have not written before this; so have I. It is just a pure case of neglect and not a case of lack of interest at all. In fact I was much interested, for when I hears the news I was elated as I knew that the situation had been thoroughly looked into and a decision had been arrived at which was certainly evidence

BESSIE BAER BECOMES BRIDE OF WM. O'DELL

Popular Streator High School Instructor Married At Lafayette, Indiana.

In a ceremony which was revealed to friends a few hours later in the form of a telegram to the bride's mother, Miss Bessie Baer, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. E. Sherman Baer, 401 South Monroe street, and for the past three years instructor in Biology at the Streator Township High School, was married Saturday afternoon at Lafayette, Indiana, to William F. O'Dell, of La Grange. Immediately after the ceremony, the young couple left on a honeymoon trip by auto.

The marriage of Miss Baer and Mr. O'Dell marks the course of a romance which commenced several years ago when both were students at the University of Illinois, from which both were graduated. Mr. O'Dell has been a frequent visitor in Streator and is known to a host of people here.

S. H. S. Graduate.

Mrs. O'Dell was graduated from the Streator Township High School as one of the honor students of the class of 1925. The following fall she entered the College of St. Teresa, Winona, Minnesota. She then matriculated at the University of Illinois and was awarded her B. S. degree with the graduating class of 1931.

She was immediately tendered a position on the local high school faculty, and in the fall of 1931 commenced three years of work which made her one of the outstanding instructors at the local institution. Her popularity among the students is marked by the fact that for three years she was class advisor to the Class of 1933 and last week was one of the sponsors of the Class in its graduation exercises.

Mrs. O'Dell is a member of the Alpha Chi Omega National Social Sorority. Her brilliant intellectual attainments and personality aid in revealing the charms of one of Streator's most popular young women.

Mr. O'Dell is a graduate of the La Grange high school and the University of Illinois, Class of 1931. He is a member of Delta Upsilon.

TIMES-PRESS

that the Depression was entirely over. The recent increase in business, of course, proves you were right.

Naturally I want to extend my congratulations to both of you, but I find it easier to congratulate BILL than BESSIE. I hope you get what I mean for I feel he is getting the better of the bargain.

Had a letter from Mother saying she and Agnes had been down to see you. I'll be home some time next week and will get a full report on you. In the meantime I'll assume you both are happy and I sincerely hope you continue so for the rest of your lives....

Yours,

Dad

BESS AND BILL O'DELL IN 1933

FRANK'S reference to the Depression was timely in that only three months prior to our marriage the country's banks had closed and a bank holiday had been declared. There were wild runs on banks, and many closed

their doors for good. BESSIE and I had no money -- or at least I had none -- so our losses due to the bank closings were non-existent.

That fall we visited our parents. The few days in Streator were most reassuring in that we realized BESSIE'S mother's initial objection to our marriage had softened considerably. Apparently JULIA'S sister, Bessie Long in Appleton, got through to JULIA, pointing out that the end of the world was not at hand simply because a daughter had made a decision on her own.

Bessie and I were so imbued with being married we were hardly aware of my grandmother, MINNIE GHENT AIKMAN Booth, passing away in California. She had re-married in 1906, to Mr. A. E. Booth. I remember my grandmother as a gentle and kind person who literally relied on the Bible for her guidance in life.

MINNIE GHENT AIKMAN

Mr. Booth was an evangelist, and while all of us children loved our grandmother we seemed to resist Mr. Booth. One reason was his long white whiskers, but in addition, his visits to our home back in Minneapolis during the early 1920's meant that all playing cards had to be hidden and none of us could go to the movies during his visits.

But our Grandmother was understanding and tolerant of us, and I feel that my own mother's wonderful disposition was due largely to the influence of her own mother. She kept a diary for many years, and each day's entry was preceded by some philosophical statement:

Jan. 1: "I do not want to forget all the Lord's loving kindness to me all my life."

Jan. 3: "I do feel this morning that my lines have fallen unto me in pleasant places. Every one is so kind."

Jan. 7: "It is a faithful saying -- For if we be dead with Him we shall also live with Him. This is a bright beautiful day."

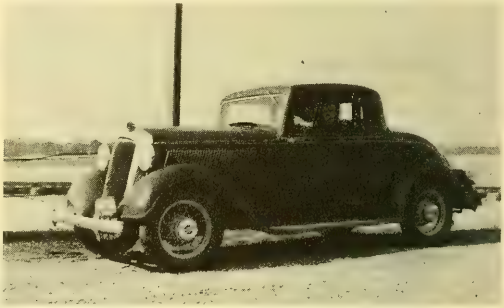
Jan. 8: "If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him."

Shortly prior to her passing, MINNIE closed a letter to a friend with this poem -- perhaps of her own creation, perhaps not:

When peace like a river attendeth my way,
Or sorrow like sea billows roll,
Whatever my lot, Thou has taught me to say:
It is well; It is well with my soul.

MARY CATHERINE GHENT AIKMAN died on 14 October 1933 in Pasadena, California. She was 78.

BESSIE and I moved to Columbus, Ohio, that same fall where I continued my alumni promotion work at Ohio State University. My desire, however, was to locate some job which would pay more and perhaps be somewhat more secure, a rather ambitious goal during a Depression that kept the country's economic condition at a low ebb.



THE EARLY THIRTIES PLYMOUTH

BESSIE contributed to our family income by clerking at Lazarus Bros., a downtown Columbus department store. Our family revenue was so meager that income taxes for us were non-existent, and BESSIE'S financial aid was all in the form of net gain.

I had become interested in a publishing company in Cleveland, and decided to approach them for a job. The Penton Publishing Company published magazines in the metal-working field, and I wrote George Hays, the company's business manager about a job. In some way I convinced him I would be of benefit to the company.

We moved to Cleveland where I was placed in the magazine *Steel's* circulation department writing letters, hoping to attract new subscribers. One day I received a note from George Hays that I had been given a raise, probably the most exciting letter I had ever received.

And BESSIE, with all her talent, had a job at Higbee's, a leading upper-class department store in Cleveland. She started as a clerk, but soon was promoted to head of all "island counters" on the store's first floor. An "island" was a preferred spot for the store in that it represented the top items for the day. And there were many "islands." BESSIE was important to Higbee's -- and to me.

A few months after our arrival in Cleveland, in 1934, my mother wrote us that my father's mother, EMMA ROOKS O'DELL, had passed away in Port Huron where she had lived for 58 years, excepting the brief period in Valparaiso, Indiana, where my father was born.

EMMA O'DELL wrote a card to BESSIE and me a few weeks after our marriage, while we were still living in Lafayette. Despite the basic intent of the postcard, EMMA longed for letters from her own children:

Dear B & B:

I was very pleased to receive both your letters and hope you both are well and busy as ever. I hope your folks are all well. I am anxious because they do not answer my letters. I guess your Father is home from N. Y. I wish they would write to me. I am getting better in every way, with love to you both.

Grandmother O'Dell

My Grandmother O'Dell had written me a letter a couple of years earlier, on 9 September 1932, which my mother saved for me over the years:

My dear Bill:

I am giving you some clippings I have treasured many years. You will not take much notice of them now, but the longer you have them you will know what they mean to us.

I wish you to put them away with the watch. It seems like the history of his (her husband, HENRY JAMES O'DELL) life as long as I knew him. They mean nothing to strangers, but I did not like to destroy them. You are a good boy and I hope you will grow old and be as good a man as he was, and your own father too.

This is between you and your loving

Grandmother O'Dell

The watch my grandmother referred to was a railroad watch my grandfather used for many years when a locomotive engineer on the Grand Trunk Railway. Her comment that the items she handed down to me would mean more and more as the years roll by was one of true foresight. EMMA LEONORA ROOKS O'DELL was buried in Port Huron's Lakeside Cemetery alongside her husband who had died 14 years prior.

Evidence that I was making great progress within Penton Publishing occurred one day when I was named Cir-

DAILY EXPENSE

Date	RECEIPTS Salary	RECEIPTS Miscel.	Miscellaneous Items	Miscel.	Rent and Board	Groceries	Meat	Dry Goods and Clothing	Fuel and Light
1						1 75			
2			B.H.'s haircut + P.O.	53		5 81			
3						22			
4			P.O.	31		20			
5			P.O.	03		21			
6			P.O.	03		15			
7					34 —	20		12 —	
8		3 —		03		20			
9				44		7 05			
10			Lay. (32.8)	32					
11				47		21			
12			P.D.	28					
13			"	03		45			
14			"	03		27			
15	75 —		Var. Store, Temple	28		61			
16		4 —		13		3 —			3 95
17									
18				41		80			
19				03		98			
20			[illegible]	10		4 91			
21				68		78			
22				19		1 —			
23			Bill Haircut, Store (52) bulbs, trip	225		09			
24									
25			P.D.	31		30			
26			Fuller Brushes	3 38		5 36			
27				03		40			
28	75 —					90			2 35
29									
30									
31									
TOTAL	150 —	7 —		10 50	34 —	35 [illegible]		12 —	6 30
[illegible]	150 —	10 —		12 —	34 —	31 —		250	5 —

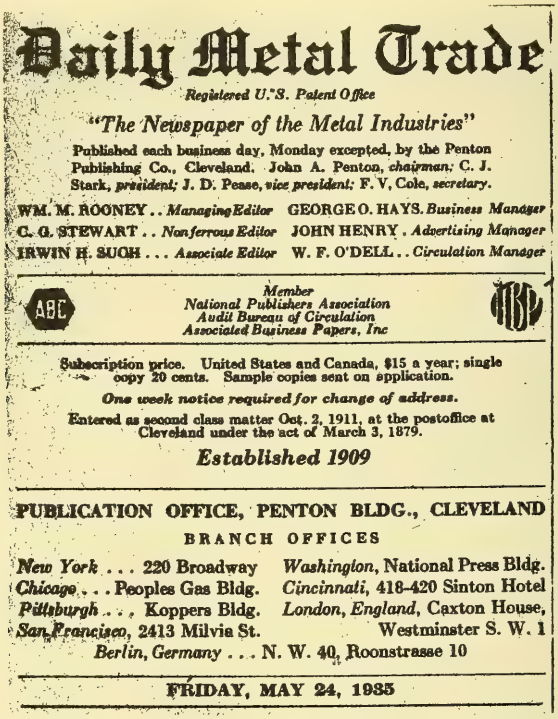
TWO PAGES FROM BUDGET BOOK MAINTAINED BY BESS AND BILL O'DELL during their early married life. On the 23rd of the month BILL had a haircut, bought some (light?) bulbs, took a trip of some sort, and

Month of Febvary 1935

ysician and edicine	Household and Kitchen Furniture	Laundry	Amusement Contingent Expenses	Insurance Interest and Taxes	Cigars and Tobacco	R. R. Fare and Bus Expenses	Auto and Garage	Repairs Tires Oils, Etc.	Savings	DAILY TOTAL EXPENSE
					12	52				
					25			89		
					17			2 09		
	10 -				15					
					15					
					15					
	6 -	5 95			28	53				
					24					
			76		17					
			70		15			1 03		
					17	53				
					17					
					15			88		
					30					
		25	1 45		15					
			40		40					
					17	53				
			36		32			78		
					15			3 25		
					15					
					15					
					15					
					15					
		25		75(c)	15	55	4 - ✓			
) -	18 -	6 45	3 37	75	4 56	2 37	4 -	9 01		
-	20 -	1 -	5 50	10 -	4 -	3 -	4 -	17 -		

absorbed a 52¢ "loss" from the prior week -- all for $2.25. The budget for cigarettes was almost as much as that set aside for medical expenses. Electricity? $6.30! Five trips to the movies or something for $3.37.

culation Manager of *Daily Metal Trade*, a publication having some 2200 subscribers, obviously not the most widely read paper in the country. But the new job meant an increase of ten dollars a month, and I had my name on the publication's masthead, a real measure of status. BESSIE and I were elated with my success.



Daily Metal Trade

Registered U.S. Patent Office

"The Newspaper of the Metal Industries"

Published each business day, Monday excepted, by the Penton Publishing Co., Cleveland. John A. Penton, *chairman;* C. J. Stark, *president;* J. D. Pease, *vice president;* F. V. Cole, *secretary.*

WM. M. ROONEY . . *Managing Editor* GEORGE O. HAYS. *Business Manager*
C. G. STEWART . . *Nonferrous Editor* JOHN HENRY . *Advertising Manager*
IRWIN H. SUCH . . . *Associate Editor* W. F. O'DELL . . *Circulation Manager*

ABC *Member* *National Publishers Association* *Audit Bureau of Circulation* *Associated Business Papers, Inc* ABP

Subscription price. United States and Canada, $15 a year; single copy 20 cents. Sample copies sent on application.

One week notice required for change of address.

Entered as second class matter Oct. 2, 1911, at the postoffice at Cleveland under the act of March 3, 1879.

Established 1909

PUBLICATION OFFICE, PENTON BLDG., CLEVELAND

BRANCH OFFICES

New York . . . 220 Broadway — *Washington*, National Press Bldg.
Chicago . . . Peoples Gas Bldg. — *Cincinnati*, 418-420 Sinton Hotel
Pittsburgh . . . Koppers Bldg. — *London, England*, Caxton House, Westminster S. W. 1
San Francisco, 2413 Milvia St.
Berlin, Germany . . . N. W. 40, Roonstrasse 10

FRIDAY, MAY 24, 1935

The promotion did not have the immediate effect of our living on easy street. My monthly income had reached $150, but any thought of setting up a reserve seemed well beyond us.

However, the $150 took care of us. A week's transportation on the streetcar to downtown and back amounted to only 53¢. Cleveland's morning newspaper, the *Plain Dealer*, cost 3¢. Our monthly food bill, including my lunches, ran in the neighborhood of $30 to $40. Our apartment on West Clifton Boulevard in Lakewood was a few dollars over $400 -- for the year!

That summer, shortly after my promotion, we took an automobile trip to the East, and while in New York we stopped in to see my Aunt Edna Maule, my father's sister. Her husband was editorial vice president of Doubleday Doran Company, one of the country's largest book publishers.

Standard Weekly Guide
to the World's
Greatest
City
THIS WEEK
IN NEW YORK
WEEK OF JULY 28 to AUG. 3, 1935
• WHERE TO GO AND WHAT TO DO

During our conversation with Aunt Edna in the lovely sitting room of their home in Long Island City BESSIE, eager to make my success known to our eastern relatives, casually mentioned that I had been recently named circulation manager of *Daily Metal Trade*, a newspaper published by Penton. Edna's response was "Well, it's a job anyway!" BESSIE and I were aghast, but it demonstrated how difficult it must be for some people to adjust to the level of others. But we still enjoyed the rest of our trip.

Of our eight grandparents, only one remained: JOHN MASON BAER, father of ED BAER. BESSIE'S grandfather had moved to Ontario, California, after his wife, LIBBIE RILEY BAER, died in 1929. He lived with his daughter, Attie Riley Groff, who took care of him until his death on 1 February 1936. He was 91. His body was shipped to Appleton for burial in the Riverside Cemetery.

JOHN M. BAER AT 90

I had met JOHN MASON BAER a couple of times during my visits to Streator to see BESSIE, prior to our marriage. To my regret I failed to know the man. I realize now that he had a great store of knowledge about his early life that could have been obtained only if I had been astute enough to seek it. In retrospect, he was a great man, with tremendous courage, devoted to his family. It would be difficult to improve on his record.

By 1936 Penton decided that it would be well for me to move to the Chicago office where I would be selling advertising space in *Steel* magazine, Penton's chief money-maker. We viewed this with much favor in that we would be returning to LaGrange, the Chicago suburb where I went to high school, and where my parents lived.

Our first child, MARGARET LOUISE O'DELL (I-1) was born on 29 May 1937, at the Berwyn Hospital, a few miles east of LaGrange. PEG was the first granddaughter for both BESSIE's and my parents.

Telegrams and letters seemed to pour into the Berwyn Hospital congratulating us on our first-born. Although we had been married four years, letters from BESSIE'S parents in California were especially meaningful for her. Wrote her mother:

Dear Bess and Bill:

Everyone is so happy. We're congratulating ourselves, but we also want to wish you both oceans of joy

over the coming of your baby girl. We could hardly believe it was all over because you said June, so we were taken by surprise when the message came. It was so nice of you to name the baby after Peg and Lou, and are they proud!

I sent you a letter yesterday, BESSIE, because you hadn't written for sometime. We'll all enclose notes with this and send it to you by air; you may get it before the other letter reaches you.

You will both be so happy that it's all over, and I know you will be model parents.

Dad and I are going into the city some day next week. He must go in on business and the girls want us to get something there for their namesake.

Just oceans of love for the whole family.

Mother

BESSIE'S father, ED BAER, was more succinct, but no less sincere:

My Dear Son and Daughter:

Congratulations to you and our darling granddaughter. You have two fine and happy grandparents in California, and some happy aunties, an uncle, and some cousins who wish you health, wealth and happiness, and are longing for the day when we can all be together again.

Is she a blond or a brunette and does she look like her grandpa?

Ever your loving,

Dad

Steel, even though a money-maker for Penton Publishing, was always second to *Iron Age*, a competing publication considered by most impartial observers to be the leading weekly magazine in the metalworking field. Penton would supply its advertising space salesmen like me with promotional material of all types in an effort to convince space buyers that *Steel* was actually a better advertising buy than *Iron Age*.

I always had the unnerving feeling that we at Penton needed better sales data, and that if *Steel* were as superior a publication as we claimed we should have some convincing evidence that the readership of *Steel* was, in fact, better than *Iron Age*.

I worked nights and weekends over a period of a couple of years devising a readership survey aimed at

measuring differences in readership between the two publications. However, after showing it to several of my advertising friends, they suggested I broaden the program to include a wide variety of magazines in the metalworking field. Moreover, they suggested that I approach a marketing research firm with the thought that such a service could be sold to advertisers.

Ross Federal Research Corporation of New York City was willing to give it a try and I joined the company, being charged with the responsibility of selling it to advertisers in various metalworking publications. I worked out of Chicago.

It was a tough life, and the anxiety surrounding its acceptance was virtually unbearable. BESSIE and I were still living from hand to mouth, and the readership studies were only somewhat successful. However, Ross Federal suggested I broaden the base and attempt to become an account man for their general line of marketing research.

BESS O'DELL IN 1940

This I did, learning more about the marketing research field. I developed a rather loyal following of clients in the Middle West. The company named me a vice president in 1942. It was during this year that our first son, WILLIAM GHENT O'DELL (I 1), was born on 4 July. But, tragically, he lived only six months, dying on 24 December of that year. Time mellows, and we were heartened when our second son, DAVID TREVOR O'DELL (I 1) was born on 9 March 1944.

We were living south of LaGrange, on Willow Springs Road where we owned a couple of acres. PEGGY began kintergarten, and then first grade, while we lived on Willow Springs. One Miss Smith was PEGGY'S first-grade teacher, and it was from her, during our first P.T.A. meeting at the Oak Street School in LaGrange, that we heard her express the need for always saying something favorable about the child's schoolwork.

Said Miss Smith: When your daughter brings home a page of her art, and you fully realize that you have no budding artist on your hands, do not say anything negative whatsoever. Instead, say, "Oh, PEGGY, you have filled up the whole page!" BESSIE and I have remembered that counsel for a long, long time.

CHAPTER 12

World War II broke into its full fury with Pearl Harbor on 7 December 1941. My commission in the field artillery as a second lieutenant in the Army Reserves had expired in June 1940, and I was later declared ineligible for military service because of high blood pressure.

However, while at Ross Federal we conducted many studies for various government agencies involved in some phase of the war effort. In 1945 I was in the process of being assigned to the Army Air Forces for a survey of all Air Operations in the Southwest Pacific, but fortunately the War came to an end and the need evaporated.

BILL O'DELL IN 1941

Returning to peacetime marketing research efforts, several of my clients suggested that I start my own firm, and they promised to place some business with me if I would take the brave step.

This I did, and BESSIE and I had to look for some funds with which to initiate the operation. We took what little savings we had accumulated, and added to that the nickels and dimes that had been gathering in the piggy banks of our daughter PEGGY and son DAVE.

The company was named Market Facts, Inc., with offices in a sub-let space at 39 South LaSalle Street, Chicago. We started in 1946 with four people, including myself, and one typewriter. With no air-conditioning, the windows on our fourth floor office were often wide open for air while the streetcar noise on LaSalle Street boomed in.

BESSIE and I went without a paycheck more than once during the first year of the company's life, when the needs for meeting the company's payroll exceeded available cash. As a family, for a couple of years, we were close to the edge financially, but Market Facts, Inc. enjoyed a gradual and pleasant growth to a point where it was, perhaps, one of the top two or three marketing research firms in the Middle West by the mid-1950's. At least the company was well beyond the initial four employees.

ED BAER, out on the West Coast, had retired from business and he and JULIA moved in with their son Jack and his wife Ann Baer in Elsinore, just a few miles from Alberhill. JULIA'S health had taken a turn for the worse when she suffered a stroke, and while she experienced somewhat of a recovery for a period of time, she succumbed on 30 November 1948.

EDWARD S. AND JULIA BAER

BESSIE flew to California to join her family. JULIA was a strong woman, forceful in motivating the family over the years. Her religion carried her through many disappointments, but she lived to see her children grown and all in their own ways successful. Certainly JULIA could look back over the years and take pride in her own achievements. JULIA VERONICA GREEN BAER was interred in Elsinore Valley Cemetery.

JOHN GREEN BAER

Our daughter, PEGGY, had long exhibited an interest in music -- she was about three when we recorded her singing "Silent Night, Holy Night." Her talent in playing the piano appeared to be well above average, even to the point of her giving her own piano recital in 1951 at the age of 14 when a student of Miss Hazel Troeger, a long-time teacher from LaGrange.

When it came time for her to "go away to college," we stipulated that she could go to any school, as long as it was not more than 500 miles away from Clarendon Hills, the Chicago suburb in which we were living. After visiting several colleges and universities PEG opted for the University of Kansas in Lawrence, Kansas precisely 510 miles away from home.

BESSIE and I were certainly not about to debate the 500-mile issue, but it did demonstrate our daughter's very mild but always pleasant assertiveness. PEG was one to rely on her own good judgement, and rarely did she ever make any serious mistakes.

That fall after PEG left for Kansas where she began her studies toward a degree in music Education, BESSIE and I took our first trip to Europe. While at the Hotel Excelsior in Rome we received a letter from PEGGY:

PEGGY O'DELL AT PIANO

Dear Folks:

Got your letter last night. How were the follies? Thanks for the hundred dollars. I have to pay my house bill before the 29th. It's only $97 this time.

School just keeps rolling along. Today I had my piano and voice lesson. I am getting along real well with Miss Jersild. She lets me use her room for practice on Mondays and Wednesdays. I like her a lot better now.

Although I am taking voice lessons my voice is nothing to listen to. In fact I was in the middle of singing an exercise and I started laughing because I sounded so funny.

The weather is so different down here. Saturday night was breezy and balmy, and Sunday night it went down to 25. Ed and I took a walk that night. I wore my parka. It was just loads of fun.

Did Dave tell you about the party he is having for Halloween? Sounds like fun. He went to fort-nightly for the first time the other night. In his letter he drew me a diagram of how to "walce." It was awfully cute.

School is getting a little harder. We're starting stuff in Harmony that I know nothing about now. In Speech we now have to do research.

Saturday night Ed and I went out. We doubled with his sister who is 23. I sure felt old. She is teaching fifth grade art. Our kitty is so frisky. She just plays with everything. It's so much fun to watch her.

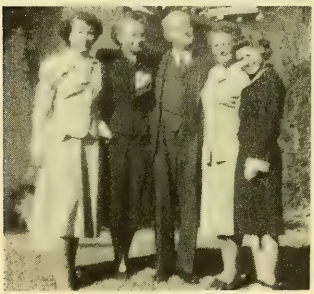
I'm going to write on my English theme now.

Love,

PEGGY

PEG'S interest in music during her years at the University of Kansas continued to grow, and the piano became important to her. She studied under several well-known teachers at Kansas and graduated with her degree in music education.[1]

During the latter months of 1957 word reached us from California that BESSIE'S father was ill, and in a hospital. We arranged a trip to the West Coast, and saw ED, still in the hospital. Although seriously ill, he smiled broadly when we entered his room, saying "Isn't this a silly situation they've got me into?"



ED BAER and his "daughters" - Peg, Ann, Bess and Lou.

Within weeks after our return to Illinois ED BAER died -- the same EDDIE BAER who was the sportsman as teen-age cyclist in Appleton, the ED BAER who ground out a dozen years with his young family in Glendive, the same ED BAER who handled the strikers during the labor disputes in Streator. He had no enemies. ED BAER was a very likeable man.

Before his death, ED joined the Catholic Church, much to the delight of his family. It was appropriate. He had lived with Catholicism from the day of his marriage, in 1902, to JULIA GREEN in St. Mary's Catholic Church in Appleton. EDWARD SHERMAN BAER died on 16 January 1958, at the age of 80.

BESSIE and I and family moved to Hinsdale, another Chicago suburb, in 1958. We had been married 25 years, and the event passed somewhat unnoticed except by the two of us. A gift to each other was a grandmother clock. That a clock was an appropriate gift was evidenced by each of us, independently, buying the other a clock. For some reason we kept the more expensive one. It was during this same year that PEG married J. Thomas Pinckard.[2]

My own father, FRANK T. O'DELL, passed away during the fall of 1958. Until just a few years before his death, FRANK had continued to represent Mueller Company, the firm he first joined in 1914.

The *Mueller Record*, the company publication, in its 1958 Christmas issue devoted a full page to the memory of FRANK, with this testimonial:

---

[1] PEG obtained a master's in music theory and composition from California State University at Hayward in 1978.

[2] PEG and Thomas Pinckard were divorced in 1976.

It is with a deep sense of loss that we here record the passing of Mr. FRANK T. O'DELL, creator of the famed Mueller Hot Water Heat Control System, and an employee of Mueller Co. for more than 35 years.[3] Mr. O'DELL passed away in Naperville, Illinois, on September 15, 1958.

Mr. O'DELL joined this firm as a sales representative in the Minnesota territory. It was during the early 1920's that he developed his famous heat control system; and, after securing a patent, the product entered the market.

For many years he traveled the entire North American continent promoting the sale of his invention and serving Mueller Co. as a special representative. It was during these years that he became well known and well loved in his field.

Mr. O'DELL retired from active participation in business in 1954 at the age of 76. He was a resident of Downers Grove, Illinois at the time of his death.

FRANK TREVOR O'DELL

Market Facts, Inc. continued its growth, and we were well pleased with our nice home in Hinsdale. In 1959 the company became part of an international chain of marketing research firms -- throughout Europe, Australia, and Japan -- called ROC International. With BESSIE, I made a trip to Munich, Germany, to cement the relationship.

Our son DAVE was fast growing up, and athletics in high school seemed to be his long suit. During the spring of 1960, when he was a sophomore and I was president of the American Marketing Association, the two of us took a trip to the Soviet Union.

BESSIE was willing to stay home alone, and to her goes all credit for our being able to enjoy six weeks abroad. DAVE and I got to know each other well. The weeks in Russia were most exciting, where we had the advantage of being entertained by Soviet government people who had visited us the year prior when exchanging views on marketing within the two countries.

Market Facts' expansion continued. The company moved to Chicago's Hartford Building in 1961. During

[3] The actual number of years was 37. FRANK joined Mueller in 1914, but left the firm for three years from 1920 to 1923 when in Duluth, Minnesota.

that year a New York office was opened and a Canadian Company, Market Facts of Canada, under the affable John Robertson, was formed. By the early 1960's Market Facts, Inc. had established itself as one of the leading international marketing research firms.

DAVE'S high school career continued to center around athletics, with his participation in football, baseball and basketball. He was a starting end during his junior and senior years when the Hinsdale Township High School was twice named the state's number one ranking football team.

DAVE O'DELL IN HIGH SCHOOL

During his junior year BESSIE, DAVE and I took several trips around the country scrutinizing colleges and universities he might attend. These were helpful trips in that they demonstrated to DAVE that getting in a good school was not easy, and competition was keen. He buckled down and ended up being admitted to Princeton University in 1962.

That same fall BESSIE and I took a six-week trip around South America: some business for Market Facts, some for ROC International, and some for our own pleasure. Both DAVE and PEG had our itinerary, but mail from DAVE seemed late in arriving and one evening in Bogota we received a message to phone him at Princeton. Obviously some emergency.

It took a couple of days to locate him, and the urgency centered around his desire to join the Princeton Flying Club. This was all news to us, but DAVE thought it advisable first to secure our permission inasmuch as the complete instructional program would amount to some $500.

We learned, however, that he had already joined the club, so that ended the need for the conversation. Upon our arrival in Mexico City a letter from DAVE, written on 4 October 1962, several days before our phone conversation revealed the rather interesting logic of DAVE'S thinking:

Dear Mom and Dad:

It's now 11:50. It's not all unusual to be up at this hour, as a matter of fact I haven't gotten to bed before 12 any night yet. There just doesn't seem to be enough time in the day to get things done.

Bob is at a real low point tonight.[4] He doesn't have enough time to get his work done. He is thinking about dropping politics and trying to get into a "gut" course. I don't blame him... It just has tons of reading. He's also having "trubs" with his German. Everything will work out all right though if I know Bob....

Dad, you said that you thought it would be good if I got into at least one intellectual outside activity. Before I came to school here I thought this would be a good idea also. You know, sort of furthering my knowledge. Now that I've been here for three weeks I've changed my mind. I find that almost all my time is occupied with studying and obviously I'm learning a lot from this. But I think that if I were to join an intellectual outside activity I would get ground into the ground with this sort of thing.

I feel that what I need is not something along the studious line but something completely different. Something to change the pace of studying. Therefore, I have a couple of things I'd like to get into.

One of these was to join an outing club here. They have different trips that go canoeing, or sailing, or skiing, or even mountain climbing. The latter sounds like fun, doesn't it Mom?

The other activity that interests me is the flying club. Actually, I want to learn to fly with an avid passion (a lot) and seeing how I dropped A. F. R. O. T. C. this would give me the chance. I think learning how to fly would be very rewarding even if I never fly after college. The training and responsibility would be beneficial. The one serious drawback is the cost of obtaining a pilot's liscence (sic).... $450, of which you get $75 back. If I were to do this outside the club it would cost about $650.

The club also has financial advantages. When I get my liscence I can fly home for my vacations. I'm not sure on the cost of doing this but I think it is a little more than flying jet. I could take three other guys and we could split the cost four ways. In the long run this could just about pay for the cost of getting the liscence. Another advantage would be that I could come home more often because it would cost less.

The way I see it, this would be a real challenge to me and is something I really want to do. Therefore I'm going to talk to the head of the flying club and see if I can still get in. If so I'm going to tenta-

[4] Bob Haarlow, a close friend of DAVE'S from Hinsdale, Ill.

tively join. I won't agree to put down any money until I hear from you. Please write to me soon and let me know if you have any objections to my joining this club.

By the way, I got a job parking cars before football games. It pays six dollars. It's a good deal. That's it for now.

Write soon,

DAVE

DAVE spent a year abroad, between his junior and senior years at Princeton, at several schools in Germany, France and Switzerland. Perhaps the most beneficial aspect of the trip was his meeting Virginia Findlay, an attractive and appealing young lady who was working for the United States' Central Intelligence Agency in Frankfort, Germany. DAVE first encountered her enroute to Europe, on the S. S. United States. They were married during DAVE'S senior year at Princeton, in 1966.[5]

BESS AND BILL O'DELL'S FARMINGTON HOME in Charlottesville, Va.

Before Dave left for Europe in 1964 BESSIE and I decided to move to Charlottesville, Virginia, where I was on the faculty of the University of Virginia, in its business school. I had been in marketing research for nearly 30 years, and it struck me that a change of pace would be in order before time ran out. Moreover, BESSIE and I had lived in the Middle West all our lives, and a change on that score also had appeal.

A move such as we planned was feasible in that Market Facts, Inc. had developed well. In addition, although

[5] DAVE obtained a master's in education from Miami University at Oxford, Ohio, in 1975.

I had been Chairman of the Board of the firm for several years, the management of the company was in the hands of the President, David K. Hardin, a highly talented and personable young man whom I hired in 1950, shortly after he had received his M.B.A. from the University of Chicago.

BESSIE and I bought a home in the pleasant area of Farmington, about three miles west of Charlottesville and moved there during January 1965. It was a delightful life, and I found teaching a rewarding experience. Fact was that I enjoyed teaching; I even enjoyed grading papers; I enjoyed working with the students.

In 1968, Frank Kaulback, dean of the McIntire School of Commerce, showed me a letter he had received inquiring about possible candidates for a one-semester professorship at the Chinese University of Hong Kong. After some weeks of correspondence and a few telephone calls between Charlottesville and Hong Kong arrangements were made for me to teach during the second semester in the Chinese University's graduate school of business. BESSIE and I arrived in Hong Kong, ready to go, in January of 1969.

The Chinese University was located in the New Territories about ten miles out of Kowloon. Our apartment on the campus overlooked Tolo Bay leading to the China Sea. My marketing research classes were small, and the Chinese students were dedicated to learning. Competition for admission to the University and the graduate schools was intense, and those accepted were brilliant and industrious.

BESSIE taught English conversation at "Children's Garden," a middle school for Chinese orphans. It was located on an island in Tolo Bay, and every school day BESSIE would travel by boat to the school. After her classes the students would follow her down to the launch dock, seeking to spend more time in conversation with her.

The excitement of our months in Hong Kong stemmed largely from our being able to meet the cultural and political leaders of the British colony -- those in and out of the University. We found our life to be a far cry from the tourists' experiences, restricted as they were to shopping plus a few commercially oriented tours. We developed a tremendous admiration and respect for the Chinese people.

Our return to Charlottesville took us into Cambodia, Thailand, Afghanastan, India, Switzerland and Denmark, thus completing our 'round the world trip.

BESS O'DELL AND HER STUDENTS at the "Childrens Garden" in Hong Kong during 1969-1970.

BILL O'DELL WITH HIS CLASS in marketing research at the Chinese University of Hong Kong.

In 1971 I backed away from full-time teaching at the University of Virginia, BESSIE and I taking the second semester each year to visit our home in Grenada, a small island some 90 miles off the coast of Venezuela. We purchased the home in 1970 and spent anywhere from two to three months a year there during the 1970's.[6]

AGNES O'DELL

My mother and two sisters, Emilie and Agnes, had moved to Florida during the 1960's, locating in the central part of the state. Agnes lived with my mother and the two of them were most compatible.

They took many trips together, across the country and up into Wisconsin's Door County where Agnes owned a summer home. They often played the piano and organ together. My mother enjoyed her closing years, and when in her nineties she said to me: "These years have been the happiest of my life."

Much of the credit for my mother's longevity and happiness goes to Agnes who, in a very real sense, devoted her own life to making our mother comfortable. GARNETT AIKMAN O'DELL was within a few months of 100 when she passed away on 26 August 1978.

BESSIE and I moved to Vero Beach, Florida, during the middle 1970's, carrying out our goal of taking life a bit easier. We extended this plan even further in 1980 when we moved to Shell Point Village in Fort Myers, Florida, where in this retirement village we enjoy many amenities of life with minimum effort.

GARNETT AIKMAN O'DELL
at age 98.

[6] We sold the Grenadian home in 1980 when the Grenadian government's drift toward Communism discouraged our ownership of property there. However, the Grenadian people were kind, comfortable and friendly at all times.

It was during 1980, too, that I severed my relationship with Market Facts, Inc. I had been a member of the Board of Directors since my withdrawal from active management in 1965, and the company by 1980 employed more than 1000 full-time people. It was a good time to settle in at Shell Point Village.

Living here does afford us time to record through this family history our reflections on how wonderful life has been to us. But, at the same time, it provides an opportunity to reflect on the fact that both BESSIE and I have been fortunate in having a hardy stock of ancestors.

DAVID TREVOR O'DELL

MARGARET O'DELL PINCKARD

While we have experienced some difficult periods in our life together, they pale when contrasted to hardships encountered by, say, THOMAS GHENT and his family when, in 1792, they decided to leave their North Carolina home in the newly formed United States and travel hundreds of treacherous miles to a wilderness life in Canada.

Or MICHAEL SWING, when he and his family endured the persecution of the government and tyranny of the clergy in Strausbourg on the Rhine, before their decision to risk their lives by taking the voyage to America during the early 1700's.

Or GERRARD P. RILEY, when he insisted on getting a college education at Granville College in Ohio during

PEG O'DELL PINCKARD and her three children: Julie, Eric and Steve.

DAVE O'DELL WITH HIS WIFE GINI and their two boys: Trevor and Derek.

the 1840's despite the objections of his father, ZACHARIAH RILEY, who discovered his son living over a cobbler's shop repairing shoes so that he could pay for his schooling.

Or ALEXANDER AIKMAN, when during the Revolutionary War he and his family with neighbors huddled in Fort Wheeler in Pennsylvania while Indians plundered the area, burning the family's cabin and possessions.

Or JOHN MASON BAER, when during the Civil War he fought through months and years exposed to great physical danger, only to be injured, resulting in a disability that remained with him for a lifetime.

Or ELIZABETH MICHELL O'DELL who, widowed at an early age, raised her four sons and kept the family together until each was self-supporting, to a point in later life when she was alone and lonely, a tragic state of being.

Or JOHN H. GREEN who, fatherless at the age of 13, took over his mother's farm and for eight years supported the entire family.

Or CHARLES CHRISTOPHER SPRINGER when, in 1678 at the age of 20, was kidnapped off the streets of London, England, made a slave in the Virginia colony, and later became one of the leaders of a community to be known as Wilmington, Delaware.

Or MARY HOWELL GHENT who, during the 1850's in Canada, helped her husband DAVID GHENT hide William Lyon McKenzie, a liberal political figure, from his government pursuers -- at great risk to herself and her family.

These ancestors, and many others, were not nationally known, glorified people who had distinguished themselves in the public spotlight. To the contrary, they were ordinary people in their days. But one thing they seem to have had in common: a willingness to stand firmly for what they believed to be right.

BESSIE and I hope that our efforts, plus the genes of our ancestors, will result in our children, and their children, and others to follow being worthwhile citizens of the communities in which they live.

BILL AND BESS O'DELL

A P P E N D I C E S

			Page
Appendix A -- Family Compositions of Selected Lineages			415
Chapter One	--	Davis	417
		Ghent	418
Chapter Two	--	Horning	421
		Ghent	423
Chapter Three	--	Aikman	428
		Showers	429
Chapter Four	--	Springer	430
		Aikman	433
Chapter Five	--	Odell/O'Dell	438
Chapter Six	--	Carter	444
		Michell	444
		O'Dell	447
Chapter Seven	--	Rooks	451
Chapter Eight	--	Bar/Baer	456
Chapter Nine	--	Wright	463
		Riley	464
Chapter Ten	--	Swing	466
		Riley	471
		Blair	473
		White	473
Chapter Eleven	--	Peerenboom	474
		Green	475
Chapter Twelve	--	Baer	476
		O'Dell	479
Appendix B -- Areas of Further Genealogical Research			481
Appendix C -- Diary of a Genealogical Trip			484
Appendix D -- Universal Relationship Chart			490

Appendix A

Family Compositions of Selected Lineages

The genealogical data on various family lines presented in this Appendix are thought to be accurate, but not all have been documented. The information is offered so that readers may have a base on which to build further research.

Chapter One

The children of WILLIAM DAVIS (VIII 178) and HANNAH PHILLIPS DAVIS (VIII 179) were:

A. ELIZABETH DAVIS (VII 89); b. 29 Oct. 1772, Orange Co., N. C.; m. THOMAS GHENT (VII 88); d. 21 June 1841, Brant's Block (Burlington), Ontario.

B. Asahel Davis; b. 4 May 1774, Orange Co., N. C.; d. 24 March 1850, Brant's Block (Burlington), Ontario.

C. William Davis Jr.; b. 12 May 1776, Orange Co., N. C.; d. 27 Oct. 1830; bur. Stoney Creek, Ontario.

D. Mary Davis; b. 22 Oct. 1777, Orange Co., N. C.; d. 18 Oct. 1853; bur. Stoney Creek, Ontario.

E. Jonathan Davis; b. 25 Jan. 1883, Virginia; d. Mt. Albion, Ontario.

F. Kezia Davis; 27 April 1785, Orange Co., N. C.; d. 1855, Wentworth Co., Ontario.

G. Sarah Davis; b. 2 Nov. 1889, Orange Co., N. C.; d. 20 Aug. East Flamboro, Ontario.

* * * *

Children and other descendants of THOMAS GHENT (VII 88) and ELIZABETH DAVIS GHENT (VII 89):

A. Mary Ghent; b. 19 Oct. 1794; m. Thomas Barnes.

B. William Ghent; b. 23 Oct. 1796; m. _____ Fonger.

C. Sarah Ghent; b. 1 Aug. 1798; m. James Davis; d. 22 Aug. 1841, Toronto, Ontario.

D. Katherine (Katie) Ghent; b. 15 June 1800; m. Thomas Herrold.

E. James Ghent; b. 13 Feb. 1802; m. _____ Hopkins; to Indiana in 1836.

F. DAVID GHENT (VI 44); b. 9 June 1804; m. MARY GREEN HOWELL (VI 45); d. 20 Dec. 1875, Nelson Township, Halton Co., Ont.

G. George Ghent; b. 17 March 1806; m. (1) Catherine Bates who was born 12 Feb. 1812, and died 4 Feb. 1844, and (2) Annie Bray; d. 31 May 1883, Nelson Township, Halton Co., Ont.

Children by Catherine Bates:

1. Walter J. Ghent; b. 4 Oct. 1832; d. 28 March 1842.

2. John G. Ghent; b. 26 Dec. 1837; m. Rachael Gage; d. 9 April 1879.

3. Thaddeus Ghent; b. 6 Aug. 1840; m. Hannah Davis who was born in 1852 and died in 1920; d. 1920. Their children:

   a. Maude A. Ghent; b. 1872; m. William J. Cannon. Their children: Thadia and Sybelle Cannon.
   b. Fred David Ghent; b. 1875; m. (1) Mabel Dalton, and (2) Margaret Dalton.

   c. Inakatie Ghent; b. 1877; m. Josia Lamshead.

   d. Lucy Ghent; b. 1887; m. Thomas Odell.

George Ghent's children by Annie Bray:

4. William Ghent; b. 1853; m. Christina Fothergill; d.1929. Their children:

   a. Edgar Ghent; b. 1881; m. (1) Hannah Wright, and (2) Annabella Colton. Children: William and Donald Ghent.

   b. George M. Ghent; b. 1882; m. Rosa Howard. Their children: Harray (b. 1913; d. in infancy), Gordon (b. 1915), and John Ghent (b. 1920)

FAMILY GROUP OF WILLIAM (b. 1863) AND CHRISTINA GHENT in 1924 picture taken at home on Brant Street, Burlington, Ont. Left to right, front row: Jack, Gordon and Donald Ghent; second row: Richard Mitchell, Mrs. Jane Pettit, Mrs. Richard Mitchell, Mrs. Charlotte Pettit, Christina Ghent, William R. Ghent (in lap); third row: William Ghent, Mrs. George Ghent, Jennie Pettit, Andrew Ghent, Mrs. Wallace Brazier, Wallace Brazier, and George Ghent (extreme right).

c. Frances E. Ghent; m. Wallace Brazier.

d. Charlotte Ghent; b. 1887; d. 1890.

e. Andrew Ghent; b. 1888; m. Olive Gertrude Moggridge who was born 27 Oct. 1891 and died 1871; d. 1972. Their child:

(1) William R. Ghent; b. 25 April 1922; longtime general surgeon, Hotel Dieu Hospital, Queen's University, Kingston, Ont.; m. R. Alison Armstrong; their children:

(a) Marianne Ghent; b. 11 Dec. 1955.
(b) William Ghent; b. 7 March 1957.
(c) Robert A. Ghent; b. 14 April 1961; d. 23 June 1978.
(d) Michael Ghent; b. 1964.

WILLIAM R. GHENT

5. Mary Ghent; b. 1847; m. Joshua Kearns; d. 1904.

6. Catherine Ghent; b. 1849; d. 1900.

7. Harry Ghent; b. 1856; m. Agnes Blogden; d. 1918.

8. Emma Ghent; b. 1859; m. Joseph Freeman; d. 1953.

9. Rachael Ghent; b. 1861; d. 1953.

H. Nancy Ghent; b. 3 Oct. 1807; m. (1) Jacob Triller, and (2) Anson Dean, and (3) Jacob Trot.

I. Jane Ghent; b. 11 June 1808; m. Jacob Fisher.

* * * *

Children of DAVID GHENT (VI 44) and MARY GREEN HOWELL GHENT (VI 45):

A. WILLIAM BOYD GHENT (V 22); b. 26 Dec. 1828; m. RACHAEL HORNING (V 23); d. 31 July 1891.

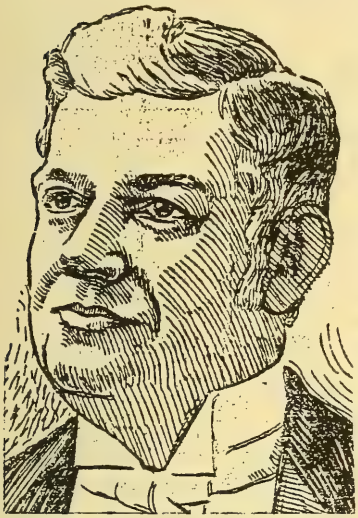
B. Byron E. Ghent; Physician in Toronto, practicing for many years at 298 King East. He died in Helena, Montana, of heart failure during a visit to his son who was then living in that state.

C. David Albert Ghent; resided in Toronto.

D. Emily K. Ghent; b. 1832, in Nelson Township, Halton Co., Ont.; m. William P. Moore; lived in Hamilton, Ont., from 1850 until

two months before her death.

E. Sampson H. Ghent; b. 9 Sept. 1834; m. Ruth Annie Lovejoy 1861, daughter of John Lovejoy of Brantford, proprietor of the old Hamilton-Brantford (toll) Road; Sampson H. Ghent attended Regan's Academy in Dundas; then, in 1847 and 1848 attended academies of design in New York City and Philadelphia; later studied law at University of Toronto, receiving his LL.B.; joined the firm of Freeman, Cragie and Proud _____ in 1885; d. 1 Nov. 1902. In a letter dated 19 Jan. 1903, Emily Ghent Moore, sister of Sampson Ghent,wrote that Sampson's "trouble was his heart. He was sick only a few (five) days (and) not wholly confined to bed. He shaved himself the day before he died. About midnight his wife and Isabel had left his bedside quietly sleeping. About fifteen minutes (later) they went to him again — he was dead, lying as if asleep. He went without a struggle, and I think fully prepared for the change." (from letter to MARY CATHERINE GHENT.) Seven of the Sampson Ghent's nine children were living at the time of Sampson's death: Harry A. Ghent, W. C. Ghent, Mrs. H. J. Tinling, Lillian Ghent, Mrs. George Feast, Isabel Ghent, and Mrs. G. H. Pettit.



SAMPSON H. GHENT

Chapter Two

The following information is available on the children of LUDWIG HORNUNG (VIII 184) and KATHERINE KEYSER HORNUNG (VIII 185):

A. PETER HORNING (VII 92); b. *ca.* 1736; m. (Mary?) ISABELLA _____ *ca.* 1754; d. 1823, Wentworth Co., Ont. Their children:

1. Catherine Horning; b. 26 Nov. 1763; m. Conrad Filman; d. 5 Aug. 1846, Ancaster Township, Wentworth Co., Ont.

2. Abraham Horning; b. 1765, Montgomery Co., Pa.; d. Wentworth Co., Ont.

3. Isaac Horning; b. 1766, Montgomery Co., Pa.; d. Wentworth Co., Ont.

4. LEWIS HORNING (VI 46); b. 1767 Montgomery Co., Pa.; m. (1) Mary Gage, 19 April 1798, and (2) ELINORE BLAARE BATES (VI 47) about 1818; d. 5 Nov. 1857, Burlington, Ont.

5. Magdalena Horning; b. 1769, Montgomery Co., Pa.; m. Lt. John Depew (Depue); d. 18 Dec. 1839.

6. Rebecca Horning; b. 1771, Montgomery Co., Pa.; m.Joseph House, 7 June 1790; d. 25 Oct. 1813, Ancaster Township, Wentworth Co., Ont.

7. Elizabeth Horning; b. 1773, Montgomery Co., Pa.;m. Jacob Hess; d. 22 Nov. 1852.

8. Hannah Horning; b. 24 May 1777, Montgomery Co., Pa.; m. Lt. Robert Land Jr.; d. 7 June 1870.

9. Deborah Horning; b. *ca.* 1779; m. Andrew Gage, 1 May 1800; d. prior to 1823. Andrew Gage's second marriage was to Mary Huffman.

B. Michael Horning; m. Hannah Roberts.

C. Eli (Elias) Horning; lived in Juniata Co., Pa.; children:Lewis, John, Henry and William Horning.

D. John Horning; b. 5 Sept. 1755; m. Elizabeth Hall who was born 16 Aug. 1761, and died 16 Oct. 1824; remained on Montgomery Co., Pa. homestead; d. 8 Dec. 1803. Their children:

1. Jacob Horning.

2. Lewis Horning; b. 24 Sept. 1793; d. 1848.

3. Catharine Horning; m. Michael Sterley.

4. John Horning.

5. Mary Horning; m. Abraham Detmiller.

6. Ann Horning.

7. Nancy Horning; m. Samuel Derstine.

8. William Horning; b. 16 Feb. 1801; m. Hannah Price;d. 23 Dec. 1881.

9. Henry Horning.

10. Isaac Horning.

E. Jacob Horning; b. 1762; d. 3 Jan. 1824. Children: Jesse,Nathan, Catharine and John Horning.

F. Elizabeth Horning; m. Jacob Hoffelfinger; lived in Chester Co. Pa.

G. Barbara Horning; m. John Cater; remained in Montgomery Co., Pa.

H. Margaret Horning.

* * * *

LEWIS HORNING (VI 46) and Mary Gage Horning, his first wife, had eight children:

A. Joseph Horning; b. 22 March 1799.

B. Susannah Horning; b. 24 March 1801; m. Thomas Lotteridge.

C. Sarah Horning; b. 1 Aug. 1803; m. David Reynolds Springer.

D. Isabella Horning; b. 1 March 1805.

E. Elizabeth Horning; b. 3 Jan. 1808.

F. William Horning; b. 27 Aug. 1810.

G. Deborah Horning; b. 18 Aug. 1812; m. Oliver Tiffany Springer.

H. Andrew Horning; b. 20 June 1814.

LEWIS HORNING had seven more children by his second wife, ELEANOR BLAARE BATES (VI 47):

I. Peter Horning; b. 15 Jan. 1819.

J. Robert Horning; b. 25 Sept. 1820.

K. Lewis Horning Jr.; b. 3 Oct. 1823.

L. Mary Catherine Horning; b. 8 June 1825.

M. Frances Charlotte Horning; b. 28 Aug. 1827 (mother of Lewis Horning Taylor, author of the Horning's Mills history as presented in *The Backwoods Life*).

N. Charles Henry Horning; b. 16 Aug. 1829.

O. RACHAEL BEVORT HORNING (V 23); b. 3 April 1833; m. WILLIAM BOYD GHENT (V 22); d. 8 March 1908.

* * * *

Children and other descendants of WILLIAM BOYD GHENT (V 22) and RACHAEL HORNING GHENT (V 23) were:

A. Emily Ghent; b. 1854, Norfolk Co., Ont.; m. Wallace Smith;lived

in Croswell, Mich., London and Burford, Ont.; active in Burford Trinity Church, first Worthy Matron of Eastern Star chapter; bur. Old Pioneer Cemetery, Burford, Brant Co., Ont. No issue.

B. MARY CATHERINE (MINNIE) GHENT (IV 11); b. 9 Nov. 1855, Norfolk Co., Ont.; m. (1) WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN (IV 10), 27 Dec. 1871, and (2) Albert E. Booth, 1906; d. 14 Oct. 1933, Pasadena, Calif.

C. Alice Eleanor (Nellie) Ghent; b. 9 July 1856, Norfolk Co., Ont.; m. Dr. Henry Arthur Wilson who was born 18 March 1860 and died 30 Jan. 1931; d. 8 March 1932, Toronto, Ont. Her husband was an honor graduate of the Royal College of Dental Surgeons in 1880 and the College Gold Medalist. In 1904 he and Nellie were chosen by the Ontario Sunday School Association to be delegates to the World S. S. Convention held in Jerusalem. They lived in Wardsville, Ont. Their children:

1. William Frederick Ghent Wilson; b. 4 June 1886; m. Eileen O. Byrne; d. 4 July 1942. No issue.

2. Elizabeth Winnifred Wilson; b. 22 April 1888; m. John Edmond McLarty; d. 17 June 1927. Their children:

   a. Mary Eleanor McLarty; b. 17 Oct. 1921; m. Charles H. Henning; d. 1975. Their children:

      (1) John Charles Henning; b. 13 June 1952.
      (2) Donald Bruce Henning; b. 29 May 1955.
      (3) Mark Edmond Henning; b. 8 July 1957.

   b. Lilian Isabel McLarty; b. 9 June 1924; m. Dr. William E. Sullivan. Their children:

      (1) William Paul Sullivan; b. 23 May 1956.
      (2) John Patrick Sullivan; b. 8 Nov. 1958.

3. Henry Andrew Wilson; b. 3 Dec. 1889; m. Madelyn Graham Lee. Their children:

   a. Henry Lee Wilson; b. 27 Dec. 1916.
   b. John Andrew Wilson; b.23 Oct. 1918.

4. Florence Eleanor Wilson; b. 29 April 1891; m. James K. Benner; d. 20 Nov. 1953. No issue.

5. Lilian Mary Wilson; b. 25 Jan. 1893; m. James Roy Porter; d. 24 Sept. 1962. No issue.

6. Dr. Charles Beresford Wilson; b. 10 Dec. 1895; m. Mary Agnes O'Malley; practiced dentistry; d. 1 Sept. 1957. No issue.

7. Rachael Jeanette Wilson; b. 26 Oct. 1897; d. 15 Feb. 1898.

8. Pauline Bevort Wilson; b. 13 April 1899; m. David Harvey Cromer; d. 15 April 1936. Their children:

   a. Pauline Eleanor Cromer; b. 15 Feb. 1927; m. Allan Russell. Their children: Nancy, Paul, and Lynn Russell.

   b. Elizabeth Joan Cromer; b. 26 Oct. 1929; m. P. Keith Lewis. Their children: David, Sally, and Cindy Lewis.

D. Caroline Beaubort (Carrie) Ghent; b. 1857, Norfolk Co., Ont.; m. Charles William Carroll; d. 1913. Her husband was elected reeve (mayor) of North Norwich, Oxford Co. in 1899, defeating Mr. Sneath by a vote of 276 to 232. Reported the newspaper of Norwich: "Mr. Carroll's friends rallied around him in a manner which must be gratifying to him. He undoubtedly will do credit to the position...." Their children:

CHARLES WILLIAM CARROLL

   1. Eleanor H. Carroll; b. 1881; m. Thomas M. Cayley; d. 1963. Her husband was a member of Parliament, in the Liberal Party until his death in 1933. Their children:

      a. Harry C. Cayley; b. 1907; m. (1) Jean Wood, and (2) Grace Kennedy. Child by first wife: William H. Cayley, b. 1942.

      b. Lorne E. Cayley; b. 1910; m. Ivan J. Leitch. Their children:

ELEANOR H. CARROLL

(1) Eleanor Leitch; b. 1933; m. R. Van Parys. Their children: Brent Van Parys, b. 1957, and Karen Van Parys, b. 1958.

(2) Janet Leitch; b. 1937. m. Robert Spek. Their children: Jane Spek, b. 1962, and Brian Spek, b. 1968.

(3) John C. Leitch; b. 1939; m. Donna Ferguson. Their children: Thomas Leitch, b. 1963, Michael Leitch, b. 1965, and Alison Leitch, b. 1972.

(4) Scott C. Leitch; b. 1944; m. Margaret Boyd. Their children: Darrin Leitch, b. 1965, Jason Leitch, b. 1970, and Sandra Leitch, b. 1975

WILLIAM BOYD GHENT'S FOUR DAUGHTERS, in picture taken in 1908. Left to right: MINNIE GHENT AIKMAN, Nellie Ghent Wilson, Carrie Ghent Carroll, and Emily Ghent Smith.

c. Thomas Ghent Cayley; b. 1915; m. Phyllis Grant; d. 1975. Their children:

(1) Joanne Cayley; b. 1938; m. L. Shellenberg. Their child: Blair Shellenberg, b. 1970.

(2) Lorna J. Cayley; b. 1946. m. Robert Watson. Their children: Lisa Ann Watson, b. 1977, and Stephanie Watson, b. 1978.

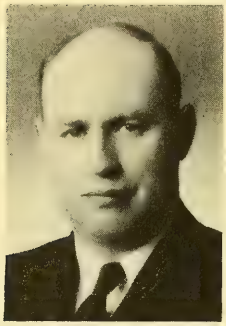
(3) Susan Cayley; b. 1954; m. Ed LePage. Their children: Erin LePage, b. 1972, and Jeremy LePage, b. 1974.

2.Sarah Ethel Carroll; b. 1884; m. Alfred Charles Bishop, in Norwich, Ont. d. 1962. Reported the Norwich newspaper covering the wedding:".... The ceremony was performed by Rev. J. H. Robinson in the presence of over

ALFRED CHARLES BISHOP AND SARAH ETHEL CARROLL BISHOP

60 guests. At 1 P. M. to the strains of Mendellssohn's Wedding March, played by Mrs. T. Cayley, the bridal couple entered the drawing room and took their place before the mantel which was very tastefully decorated with ferns and goldenrod. The bride looked lovely in a gown of chiffon voile trimmed with embroidered Chiffon and wearing the customary veil and orange blossoms .... (Among the gifts was) an oak rocker, a gift from the teachers and officers of the Norwich Methodist Sunday School in which the groom had been secretary for a long time .... The groom's gift to the bride was a pearl crescent, and to the pianist a handsome broach." Their children:

a. Charles Frederick Bishop; b. 1908; m. Mary Muriel Lester; d. 1962. Their children:



CHARLES FREDERICK BISHOP

(1) Frederick Lester Bishop; b. 1948.

(2) Carroll Anne Bishop; b. 1950; m. George Jenkins Jr. Their children: Melissa Nicole Jenkins, b. 1973, and Ryan Christopher Lee Jenkins, b. 1975.

(3) Mary Elizabeth Bishop; b. 1951; m. Douglas Robertson. Their child: Abbey Bishop Robertson, b. 1979.

b. Gordon Freel Bishop; b. 1921; m. Madeline Frost; d. 1967. Their children:

(1) Mark Francis Bishop; b. 1948.
(2) Elizabeth Gail Bishop; b. 1954.
(3) Gordon Paul Bishop; b. 1958.

Chapter Three

ALEXANDER AIKMAN (VIII 160) and MARY ELIZABETH (LEWIS) AIKMAN (VIII 161) had four sons and three daughters, about whom the following is known:

A. JOHN AIKMAN (VII 80); b. 30 Aug. 1764; m. HANNAH SHOWERS (VII 81); d. 1 Nov. 1841.

B. Levi Aikman Sr.; b. 1766; m. Margaret Hutchinson, *ca.* 1796; d. 1846. Lived on the Aikman farm in Columbia County, Pa. Their children:

1. Sarah Aikman; m. George Hidlay.

2. Esther Aikman; m. Abraham Willet.

3. Elizabeth Aikman; d. at age three or four.

4. Mary Aikman; m. James Dewitt.

5. John Wilson Aikman.

6. Margaret Aikman.

7. Levi Aikman Jr.; b. 4 March 1816; m. Elizabeth Ohl; d. after 1887. Their children:

a. John Hervey Aikman; graduate of State Normal School, Bloomsburg, Pa.

b. Lena Margaret Aikman; m. Arthur C. Creasy.

c. Clara Elizabeth Aikman; m. H. V. White, attorney in Bloomsburg, Pa.

d. Mary Alvernon Aikman.

8. James Emmett Aikman; b. 28 April 1819; d. after 1887. After father's death he and Levi Aikman Jr. bought the ALEXANDER AIKMAN family farm.

C. Jane Aikman; b. *ca.* 1767. m. _____ Emmitt.

D. (James?) Alexander Aikman; b. 1770; m. (1) Nellie Adams, and (2) Ester Hutchinson.

E. William Aikman; m. Mary Abbott.

* * * *

MICHAEL SHOWERS (SCHUERS) (VIII 162) was born in 1733 in Pennsylvania and married HANNAH VAN TOCK (VIII 163), daughter of ABRAHAM VAN TOCK (IX 326), a Swedish settler in New Jersey. MICHAEL and HANNAH had these children:

A. Sarah Showers; b. 1761; m. David Van Every, 1782.

B. Elizabeth Showers; b. 27 Feb. 1764; m. Lt. Peter M. Ball of Niagara.

C. Magdelene Showers; b. 1765; m. Captain William Depew; bur. in Burlington Height, Ont.

D. HANNAH SHOWERS (VII 81); b. 30 Sept. 1769; m. CAPTAIN JOHN AIKMAN (VII 80), 13 Aug. 1787; d. 1863.

E. Michael Showers Jr.; b. 1771; m. Eleanor Thorne, 1792; d. 19 Aug. 1853.

F. Ann Showers; b. 1774; m. Isaac Smith, 1794.

G. John Showers; b. 1776; m. Isabella Adeline Clark (?). Lived near Paris, Ont.

H. Mary Showers; b. 1781; m. William Lottridge of Saltfleet, 1804.

I. Katy (Catherine) Showers; b. 1784; m. Charles Stewart of Saltfleet, 1805.

J. Daniel Showers; b. 1787; m. Elizabeth Lawrason of London, Ont.; d. 1858; bur. St. John's Cemetery, Ancaster Township, Wentworth Co., Ont.

* * * *

The children of JOHN AIKMAN (VII 80) and HANNAH SHOWERS AIKMAN (VII 81) were:

A. ALEXANDER AIKMAN (VI 40); b. 26 Jan. 1790; m. MARY MARGARET SPRINGER (VI 41), 1813; d. 11 Sept. 1876.

B. John Aikman Jr.; b. 1791; m. Sarah Hammill who was born 1798 and died 1882.

C. Mary Aikman; b. 1795; m. Thomas Hammill; d. 1888.

D. Michael Aikman; b. *ca.* 1796; m. Anna Wilson.

E. Nancy (Catherine) Elizabeth Aikman; b. *ca.* 1800; m. Justice Wright Williams; d. 13 Sept. 1837.

F. Hannah Aikman; b. 1804; m. Dr. Edgerton Ryerson, 10 Sept. 1828; d. 1832.

G. Richard Aikman; died young.

Chapter Four

CHARLES (CARL) CHRISTOPHER SPRINGER (X 656) and MARIA HENDRICKSON (X 657) had eleven children. MARIA died in March 1727 and was buried in the Christina churchyard. On 15 June 1727, CHARLES CHRISTOPHER SPRINGER married (by governor's license) Annika Walraven, the daughter of John and Brita Justis, and widow of (1) Mathias Morton and (2) Jonas Walraven Sr. CHARLES' and MARIA'S children were:

A. Anna Elizabeth Springer; b. 1686; m. Samuel Hall of Kennett Township, Bucks Co., Pa., son of James and Hannah Hall, *ca.* 1706.

B. Maria Springer; b. 1688; m. William Cleneay, 31 July 1716.

C. Magdelene Springer; b. 1690; m.(1) Jesper Robinson, son of Edward Robinson and his first wife, 11 Nov. 1725, and (2) Paul Paulson, son of Peter and Geizie Paulson, 19 Nov. 1728, and (3) Morton Justis, son of Justa and Anna Justis of Philadelphia, 5 Dec. 1747.

D. Rebecca Springer; b. 1692; m. Jacob Stilley, before 1713.

E. CHARLES SPRINGER (IX 328); b. 1694; m. MARGARETTA ROBINSON (IX 329) daughter of EDWARD ROBINSON and his first wife; d. 1759 in Delaware. CHARLES and MARGARETTA had at least four children:

1. DAVID SPRINGER (VIII 164); m. MARGARET OLIVER (VIII 165), *ca.* 1757; d. 1777.

2. Edward Springer; went to Pennsylvania.

3. Benjamin Springer; died young.

4. Charles Christopher Springer; went to Illinois.

* * * *

DAVID SPRINGER (VIII 164) and MARGARET OLIVER SPRINGER (VIII 165) had these children:

A. RICHARD SPRINGER (VII 82); b. 1758, Albany, N. Y.; m. SARAH BOICE (VII 83), 20 Nov. 1786; d. 25 May 1828, Hamilton, Ont.

B. John Springer. Lieutenant in West Lincoln First Regiment of the Ontario military forces; located in Barton Township, Wentworth Co., by 1808.

C. Mary (Lucy) Springer; m. _____ Carrol. Lived in U. S.

D. Henrietta Springer; m. Col. Richard Beasley, member of Barton Lodge and large landholder in Barton and Waterloo townships. The rough and tumble "deal at an arm's length" behavior of early land developers is illustrated by an account of Col. Beasley's sale of a large acreage to Mennonites migrating and settling in Waterloo Township (later became Waterloo County). The account was written by Dr. A. Eby, in German in 1871 and published in Daniel K. Cassel's *History of the Mennonites*, 1888. Excerpts from Dr. Eby's "Sketch of the Mennonite Settlement in Canada" follow:

> .... They had heard of a beautiful and fertile country...watered by a magnificent stream...reported to be in a northwesterly direction from Ancaster, at that time (1799) a place of importance...They easily found their way through the woods by following the paths of Indians until they came to the Township of Waterloo, at that time said to be the property of a certain Richard Beasley...All the first settlers bought their land, for which they paid the greater portion of their worldly goods, from the above-named Richard

Beasley. But he did not tell them that the whole of Waterloo was heavily mortgaged, and that he could not give them a good and clear title. They themselves were so absolutely honest...that they could hardly think that any man could be so extremely dishonest. He undoubtedly had intended to sell as much land as possible before it would be found out.... then these poor people could see how they could settle with the mortgage holders.

.... In consequence of this...an association was formed for the purpose of buying enough land to clear the township of the mortgage. Accordingly, they bought 60,000 acres of land in Waterloo from Beasley, sufficient to cover all incumbrances. But Beasley tried another dodge to defraud them. He wrote a deed (but found to be) worthless. He (a Mennonite lawyer) made an effort to bring the matter in proper shape for them and succeeded.

E. Daniel Springer. In Butler's Rangers during Revolutionery War; received grant of land in Barton Township in 1802; was with Gen. Isaac Brock in Detroit in 1812 as Captain in First Middlesex Militia; in 1814 captured by Americans, taken to a prison in Kentucky from which he escaped and returned to Niagara in time to participate in Battle of Lundy's Lane; member Barton Lodge.

F. Margaret (Martha) Springer; m. John Traynor (Treanor).

G. Rachael Springer; m. Col. Caleb Reynolds. Member Barton Lodge.

H. Benjamin Springer; m. Mary Ryckman. Member Barton Lodge.

I. Keziah Springer; m. Benjamin Lockwood of Glanford.

* * * *

The children of RICHARD SPRINGER (VII 82) and SARAH BOICE SPRINGER (VII 83) were:

A. Margaret Springer; b. 26 April 1783; m. Nathaniel Crowell.

B. Elizabeth Springer; b. 21 Sept. 1790; m. John C. Depew.

C. Hannah Springer; b. 1792; m. James Ferris.

D. MARY MARGARET SPRINGER (VI 41); b. 8 April 1793; m. ALEXANDER

AIKMAN (VI 40), 14 April 1813; d. 6 March 1836.

E. Sarah Springer; b. 1797; m. Amos Dey Knight.

F. David Reynolds Springer; b. 1800; m. (1) Sarah Horning (daughter of LEWIS HORNING), 26 Dec. 1821, and (2) Susanna Thompson, 3 April 1835; d. 19 April 1889.

G. Catherine Springer; m. Andrew McIlroy (?); d. 14 Sept. 1830.

H. Oliver Tiffany Springer; b. 5 Dec. 1808; m. Deborah Horning (daughter of LEWIS HORNING); d. 31 July 1841.

I. Lucinda Springer; b. 18 May 1811; m. (1) Daniel Everett, and (2) William Davis.

* * * *

ALEXANDER AIKMAN (VI 40) and MARY MARGARET SPRINGER AIKMAN (VI 41) had nine children:

A. John Alexander Aikman; b. 10 Aug. 1814, Barton Township, Wentworth Co., Ont.; m. Sarah Howell; d. 17 May 1884, Norwich, Oxford Co., Ont.

ALEXANDER AIKMAN (VI 40), front row center, with his five sons. Front: left to right, John Alexander (1814-1899). ALEXANDER, RICHARD S. (V 20)(1816-1898); back row: Daniel Showers (1824-), Oliver Tiffany (1830-1896), David S. (1827-1903). Picture taken about 1875.

B. RICHARD SPRINGER AIKMAN (V 20); b. 30 Sept. 1816; m. MARY ANN HOPKINS (V 21), 29 Dec. 1842; d. 18 Sept. 1898.

C. Sarah Ann Aikman; b. 23 Sept. 1818, Barton Township, Wentworth Co., Ont.; d. 25 April 1832 of cholera.

D. Catherine Elizabeth Aikman; b. 9 Feb. 1822, Barton Township, Wentworth Co., Ont.; d. 13 Sept. 1836.

E. Daniel Showers Aikman; b. 6 Aug. 1824; m. (1) Mary Angelina _____, and (2) Mercy Hammill; d. after 1886, Colchester Township, Essex Co., Ont.

F. David Springer Aikman; b. 26 Jan. 1827; m. Sarah Hammill (sister of Mercy Hammill) who died 1929; d. 1903, Utica, Macomb Co., Mich. David and Sarah Aikman had five children of whom three reached adulthood. They were:

1. Charles Cornwell Aikman; b. 8 Dec. 1863; m. Susie Fogelsanger; d. 1930. Their children:

   a. Harold Charles Aikman; b. 7 Oct. 1896; m. Grace Schmidt. Their children:

      (1) Alma Aikman; m. Earl Leggett. Their child: Kathleen Marie Leggett.

      (2) Charles Edsel Aikman; m. Ann Saul. No children.

   b. Basil Martin Aikman; b. 4 Oct. 1903; m. Clarabelle LeLarge. Their children: Eugene Francis and Phylis Aikman.

2. Charlotte Agnes Aikman; b. 10 Aug. 1866; m. Enoch John Andrus who was born 1866 and died 1955; d. 1928. Their children: Ellen and Sarah Andrus (twins).

3. Francis Hammill Aikman; b. 10 Aug. 1866 (twin of Charlotte Agnes); d. 22 Dec. 1870; bur. Christ Church Cemetery, Colchester, Essex Co., Ont.

4. Miles Stanley Aikman; b. 4 Sept. 1870; d. 28 Dec. 1870; bur. with Francis Hammill Aikman.

5. Clifford Leroy Aikman; b. 10 July 1873; m. Margaret Jans Dunbar ; d. 1951. Their child: Ila Ruth Aikman.

G. Oliver Tiffany Aikman; b. 16 Nov. 1830, Barton Township, Wentworth Co., Ontario; unmarried; d. accidentally 22 Oct. 1896.

H. Mary Margaret Aikman; b. 16 Nov. 1832, Barton Township; m. _____ McMichael ; d. 1915.

I. Hannah Ryerson Aikman; b. 6 March 1836, Barton Township; m. (2) William Warden

HANNAH RYERSON AIKMAN

Woodbridge, 30 Jan. 1872 in Colchester, Essex Co., Ont.; d. 8 Sept. 1912, Colchester. Their children:

1. Nora Amelia Woodbridge; b. 16 Jan. 1873; m. Robert Alexander Laing, 10 Jan. 1906; d. 30 Jan. 1945. Lived in Winnipeg and Windsor, Canada. Their child: Keith Laing, b. 9 Sept. 1907; m. Clara Smith.

2. William Rhea (Ray) Woodbridge; b. 1 June 1874; m. (1) Sarah Elizabeth Coatsworth, 19 June 1901, and (2) Margaret Haggith Cousins, 19 Oct. 1937; d. 9 Feb. 1953. Children by Sarah Elizabeth Coatsworth:

   a. William Mervyn Woodbridge; b. 16 Aug. 1902; m. Ruby Eede. Their child: Edwin Rodd Woodbridge; b. 1 April 1925; m. Edith Jean Walker.

   b. Charles Coatsworth Woodbridge; b. 18 May 1904; m. Golda Beatrice Lypps, 29 Sept. 1929. Their child: Donald Charles Woodbridge; b.26 March 1938.

3. Mary Alexandra Woodbridge; b. 2 May 1876; m. Wilbur Franklin Cudmore. Their children:

   a. George Warden Cudmore; b. 28 May 1907; m. Verna Irene Harrison, 19 Sept. 1931.

   b. Helen Marie Cudmore; b. 26 Feb. 1909.

4. Charles Oliver Woodbridge; b. 21 Oct. 1878; m. Rosie Wright, 11 Sept. 1905; d. 24 Jan. 1937. Their child: Muriel Hannah Wright Woodbridge; b. 16 Sept. 1913; m. Dale Noble, 26 Aug. 1939.

5. Mabel Woodbridge; d. in infancy.

ALEXANDER AIKMAN'S first wife, MARY MARGARET SPRINGER AIKMAN (VI 41) died 6 March 1836. ALEXANDER married Mary Elizabeth Clement on 13 Jan. 1837. They had one child:

J. Peter Augustus Aikman; b. 28 April 1838; m. Lucinda Baldwin, 7 Aug. 1864. Physician; lived in Windsor, Ont.; d. after 1924. Their children:

1. Mary Ellen Aikman; m. Oswell B. Dow. Their children: Clement Birnum, Robert St.Clair, and Alexander Aikman Dow.

2. Harry Aikman; m. (1) Alice Park, and (2) Jessie Ellis.

PETER AIKMAN

The family composition of RICHARD SPRINGER AIKMAN (V 20) and MARY ANN HOPKINS (V 21) was:

A. Sarah Ann Aikman; b. 1843, Wentworth Co., Ont.; m. Samuel Elisha Kelly, 8 April 1864. d. 16 Aug. 1890. Elisha and Sarah Kelly's children included Elsie Kelly who married Frank Cohoe. Their children: Awrey and Welby Cohoe. The brother of Frank Cohoe, Captain J. G. Cohoe, discovered the first open pit iron mine in northern Minnesota in 1892. It became known as the Mis-sa-be Mountain Mine. From Paul DeKruif *Seven Iron Men* (New York: Harcourt, Brace & Co., 1929), p155.

B. David Aikman; b. *ca.* 1845.

C. WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN (IV 10); b. 10 May 1847; m. MARY CATHERINE GHENT (IV 11), 27 Dec. 1871; d. 4 May 1904. Their children:

1. Alexander Aikman (adopted); b. 14 April 1875; m. 15 April 1896.

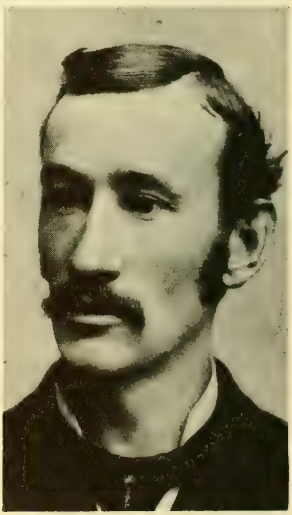
2. Richard Aikman; b. 30 Jan. 1877, Norwich, Oxford Co., Ont.

3. EMILY GARNETT BARKER AIKMAN; b. 9 May 1879, Paris, Ont.; m. FRANCIS TREVOR O'DELL, 27 Dec. 1900, London, Ont.; d. 26 Aug. 1978.

D. Richard Springer Aikman Jr.; b. *ca.* 1849.

E. Peter Aikman; b. *ca.* 1852.

F. Samuel Oliver Aikman; b. 1 April 1854; m. Fannie E. Stockwell Bennett of Lexington, Mich.; d. 18 May 1920, Port Huron, Mich. So popular was "Uncle Sam" Aikman that on the day of his funeral in Port Huron the "Organization of Wholesale and Retail Grocers, Butchers and Bakers" took out a full page advertisement in the *Port Huron Times-Herald* in his memory. All retail food stores closed at noon on that day. Part of the memorial remarks stated that Samuel O.Aikman was "...a man of business (and) eminently successful. Keen, alert, resourceful, and with intensive application he approached and surmounted all difficulties which obstructed his progress, and he built up and maintained a successful business, founded on the principles of honor, integrity and dealing, a lasting credit to himself and the community he served. Samuel and Fannie Aikman had two sons:



SAMUEL OLIVER AIKMAN

1. Earl H. Aikman; b. 15 Aug. 1883, Port Huron, Mich.; m. Ethel M. Welsh. Their children:

    a. Dorothy Aikman; b. 13 Aug. 1906; m. Dale Schaefer. Their children: Barbara Ann, John David, Dorothy Jane, Emil Frederick, and Stephen Aikman Schaefer.

    b. Marjorie Aikman; b. 23 March 1909; m. Elgin Parker. Their child: Richard Franklin Parker.

    c. Earl H. Aikman Jr.; b. 1914; d. 1916.

    d. Earl A. Aikman; b. 1 March 1916; m. Pauline Ogden. Their children: Michael and Patti Lynn Aikman.

2. Harry Stockwell Aikman; b. 6 Feb. 1887, Port Huron, Mich.; m. Minnie Marengo; d. 17 Sept. 1963. Their children:

    a. Eleanor Aikman; b. 26 Sept. 1907; m. W. A. Armstrong. Their children: Walter Jr. and Jerry Armstrong. Moved to California.

    b. Clarence F. Aikman; b. 20 Jan. 1912 (?); m. Hazel Gould.

    c. Elizabeth Aikman; b. 12 Dec. 1916; m. Delbert Washburn. Their children: Denise and Larry Washburn. Moved to California.

STEVE PINCKARD IN 1970 with Aikman Bread Company promotional cap, 91 years after company's founding. Steve Pinckard is a great, great grandson of WILLIAM ALEXANDER AIKMAN, who, with Samuel, organized the bakery.

The family of JOSEPH ODELL (X 512) and ELIZABETH ODELL (X 513), not fully documented, consisted of at least five children. The following is known about four of the sons:

A. AUGUSTINE/AUSTIN ODELL (IX 256); b. before 1711 in Westerly, R. I.; d. after 1764, probably in Beekman Township, Dutchess Co., N. Y. Children (not completely documented):

1. David Odell/Odle; b. *ca.* 1731, Beekman Township, Dutchess Co., N. Y.; d. after 1790, probably in St.Albans, Vt.

2. Daniel Odell; b. 1733, Beekman Township, Dutchess Co.; m. Mary Valentine (?); d. 6 Dec. 1816, Smith's Cove, Digby, Nova Scotia. During Revolutionary War, Daniel became an active and well-known British Empire Loyalist. After close of the War he and his family left United States for Nova Scotia.

3. Lional Odell/Udell; b. *ca.* 1735, Beekman Township; m. Jane Burch; d. before 1790, Stephentown, Albany Co., N. Y.

4. Captain Jacob Odell/Odle; b. 1737, Beekman Township; m. (1) Mary Milton, and (2) Rebecca _____; d. 10 Oct. 1823, Manchester, Bennington Co., Vt.; bur. Factory Point Cemetery.

5. Samuel Odell/Udell; b. 17 April 1739, Beekman Township; m. Lydia Chapman; d. 11 Dec. 1805, Arlington, Bennington Co., Vt.

6. CAPTAIN AUGUSTINE ODELL/ODEL/ODLE (VIII 128); b. *ca.* 1740, Beekman Township; m. MOLLY _____ (VIII 129); d. before 1810, Chenango Co., N. Y.

7. Jonas Odell; b. 1742, Beekman Township; m. Mary _____ 1762 in Dutches Co., N. Y.; d. after 1797. In 5th Reg., Dutchess Co. Militia. Later lived in Albany and Rensselaer counties, N. Y.

8. John Odell/Udall; b. *ca.* 1744, Beekman Township; m. Anna Stevens.

B. Joseph Odell; b. 14 Aug. 1718, Westerly, R. I.; d. after 1790, probably in Hopkinton, R. I. (Frederick C. Haacker, longtime Odell genealogist, suggests that this Joseph Odell was the father of AUGUSTINE ODELL (IX 256) as listed in Haacker's *Odell Bulletin*, Vol. 11, p. 2211.)

C. Levi Odell; b. R. I.; d. before 1810, probably in Providence, Saratoga Co., N. Y.

D. Simeon Odell; b. R. I.; m. Mary Morey of Dover; d. between 1810-1820, Petersburgh, Renssalaer Co., N. Y.

* * * *

The children of CAPTAIN AUGUSTINE ODELL (VIII 128) and MOLLY ODELL (VIII 129) are said to have numbered eleven -- seven males and four females. Information is available on seven of these children:

A. Jacob Odell; b. 15 May 1764; m. Margaret Butler, 27 March 1784; d. 30 Nov. 1831. Remained in Washington (Warren) County entire life. Their children:

1. Cynthia Odell; b. 5 March 1785, Queensbury, Washington Co., N. Y.; m. Reuben Seelye, 1801; d. 16 Nov. 1866.

2. Jacob Odell Jr.; b. 28 Jan. 1786, Queensbury; m. (1) Phoebe Brown, 12 Sept. 1807, and (2) Rebecca Vaughn, before 1820; d. 23 March 1847 in Michigan. Jacob and Phoebe Brown had five children about whom little is known. Jabob and Rebecca Vaughn had seven children:

   a. Joseph Odell; b. 1821, Hartland, Niagara Co., N. Y.; m. (1) _____, and (2) Polly Wilson; d. 29 July 1899 in Michigan.

   b. Phebe Narcissis Ann Odell; b. Hartland, Niagara Co., N. Y.; m. William Brown Jr.; d. 1 March 1852 in Salt Lake City, Utah.

   c. Rachel Odell; b. 1825, Hartland; m. Philip Kershner; d. 5 April 1874 in Michigan.

   d. Jacob Odell Jr.; b. 18 Oct. 1828, Hartland; m. Amelia Smith; d. 27 Jan. 1909 in Michigan.

   e. Cynthia Ann Odell; b. 1 Oct. 1830; m. (1) James O. Foster, (2) _____ Barnes, and (3) William Morgan; d. 1 Oct. 1883 in Michigan.

   f. Asa Odell; b. 14 Feb. 1831, Hartland; m. (1) Martha Wickham, 4 May 1867, and (2) Jane Thornton, 1894; d. 12 Jan. 1899 in Michigan.

   g. Elezer Odell; b. Hartland.

3. Sylvia Odell; b. 1789, Queensbury, Washington Co., N.Y.; m. John Harris.

4. James Odell; b. 1791, Queensbury; d. before 14 Aug.1827.

5. Elizabeth Odell; b. 1793, Queensbury; m. Asa Pettiplace; d. 4 Feb. 1815; bur. Sunnyside Cemetery, Queensbury.

6. Benajah Odell; b. 20 Nov. 1795, Queensbury; d. 26 Aug. 1795, Queensbury.

7. Augustine M. Odell; b. 1799, Queensbury; m. Lydia ____; d. 1880, Iosco Township, Livingston Co., Mich. Their children:

   a. George L. Odell; b. *ca.* 1821, Queensbury; m. Mary _____.

   b. Charles Odell; b. 1823, Queensbury; m. Mariet(?) Lamb.

   c. Sarah Odell; b. *ca.* 1828, Queensbury.

   d. James B. Odell; b. *ca.* 1827, Queensbury; m. Harriet _____.

   e. Augustus/Augustine M. Odell Jr.; b. *ca.* 1831, Queensbury; m. Esther _____.

   f. Jacob Odell; b. 4 Oct. 1832, Queensbury; d. 20 May 1925 in Michigan. One son: Austin Odell, b. 1867.

   h. Mary Odell; b. 1835, Michigan.

   i. Lemuel Odell; b. between 1835 and 1838, Michigan; m. Susan _____.

   j. Reuben Odell; b. *ca.* 1841, Michigan.

8. Reuben Odell; b. 1800, Queensbury; d. after 1831.

9. Benjamin Odell; b. 1803, Queensbury; m. Mary Ann Winchip; d. 4 March 1876, Queensbury; bur. Sunnyside Cemetery, Sunnyside Road, near Glens Falls, N. Y. Benjamin Odell lived on French Mountain tract, near Lake George, N. Y. Their children, all born and died in Queensbury, now Warren Co., N. Y.

   a. Jacob Odell; b. 1823; d. 1824.

   b. Sylvia Odell; b. 26 Nov. 1824; m. George Brown; d. 16 June 1910.

   c. Betsey Francelia Odell; b. March 1829; d. 1 Nov. 1833.

   d. Benjamin Odell Jr.; b. 9 Jan. 1831; m. Abigail Dickenson, 14 Dec. 1853; d. 16 Feb. 1911.

e. Mary Ann Odell; b. 30 June 1833; m. George Fish; d. 23 March 1912.

f. Thankful Odell; b. 8. March 1837; m. Harlan Mosher; d. 17 Nov. 1907.

g. Eliza Jane Odell; b. 27 Oct. 1844; m. Julius Burt; d. 11 July 1927. Three daughters.

B. Nathaniel Odell; b. *ca.* 1765; m. Mary (Polly) _____; d. between 1 Feb. 1823 and 22 March 1825, Wayne Co., N. Y.

C. Benajah Odell; b. *ca.* 1766; m. Sarah Wells; d. *ca.* 1855, Hartland Township, Huron Co., Ohio. Their children:

1. David Odell; b. 25 Dec. 1793 (?), Queensbury; m. (1) Caroline Woodworth, 1816, and (2) Phoebe Fatt, 1871; d. 1 July 1878, Seneca Co., N. Y.

2. Mary Odell; b. *ca.* 1795, Queensbury; m. John Hopkins.

3. Allen Odell; b. 1797, Queensbury; m. Mitta Southern; d. Allegan Co., Mich.

4. Sarah Odell.

5. Olive Odell; b. 1801, Queensbury; m. Jabez Dolbee. Had son Daniel Dolbee who married Nancy P. Humphrey.

6. Benajah Wells Odell; b. *ca.* 1803, Queensbury; m. (1) Caroline Smith who died 1846, and (2) Wealthy Odell; d. 1877, Allegan Co., Mich.

7. Samuel Odell; b. *ca.* 1805, Queensbury; m. (1) Sally Ann _____, and (2) Sarah _____, and (3) Margaret _____; d. 1881, Huron Co., Ohio.

8. Amasa Odell; b. 1807, Cayuga Co., N. Y.; m. (1) Maria Coon, and (2) Elizabeth Coon; d. 1874, Van Buren Co., Mich.

9. Female.

10. Caroline Odell; b. *ca.* 1816, Seneca Co., N. Y.; d. 1849, Huron Co., Ohio; bur. Olena Cemetery, Hartland Township, Huron Co.

D. Lucy Odell; b. *ca.* 1768; m. Elijah Lewis; d. 1850.

E. SAMUEL ODELL (VII 64); b. 14 Jan. 1770; m. ELIZABETH WELLS (VII 65); d. 17 Jan. 1843, Wayne Co., N. Y. Their children:

1. James B. Odell; b. 1 Nov. 1792, Queensbury, Washington Co., N. Y.; d. 1 Nov. 1825.

2. Morris Odell. Moved to Hartland Township, Huron Co., Ohio, by 1850.

3. BENJAMIN ODELL (VI 32); b. 1796, Queensbury; m. (1) EMMA ____ (VI 33), and (2) Mary Jenkins who was born 1803 and died 1881, on 5 June 1850; d. after 1860; bur. on farm two miles east of Palmer Park, in Detroit, Mich.

4. Nathaniel Odell; b. 1801, Queensbury; m. Sally _____; d. Hartland, Huron Co., Ohio.

5. Benejah Odell; b. 15 May 1804, Queensbury; m. Polly Woolsy; d. 19 June 1865, Hartland, Huron Co. Their children: Charles Odell; Elizabeth Odell Wheeler; Arvilla Odell Brown; Levina Odell Patten.

6. Hannah Odell.

7. Polly Odell (midwife).

8. Hiram Odell; b. 2 June 1806, Queensbury; m. (1) Betsey _____, and (2) Fanny _____. d. 1859, Pontiac, Oakland Co., Mich. Hiram and Fanny Odell had four children: Mary Jane Davidson; Charlotte Odell Heeny (Henry?); Rose Odell; Francis E. Odell.

9. Mary Ann Odell; b. 17 Nov. 1812, Queensbury; m. Thomas Hyatt in Galen, Wayne Co., N. Y., 25 April 1830.

10. Mariah Odell; b. 19 Nov. 1812 (according to Haacker's *Odell Bulletin*, Vol. 11, p. 2363); d. 18 Aug. 1828. (Twin of Mary Ann Odell, or same person?)

11. Samuel Odell; b. 15 Sept. 1818, Queensbury; m. Phoebe McCormick; d. 14 Dec. 1890, Wood Co., Ohio.

12. Daniel Odell; b. 4 July 1819, Queensbury; m. Almyra _____; d. 16 March 1891, Hartland Township, Huron Co., Ohio. Haacker states that Daniel Odell went to Eaton Rapids, Mich., but no trace has been found.

F. Austin Odell; b. 8 June 1774; m. Polly Aiken; d. 6 Nov. 1827, Guilford, Chenango Co., N. Y. Austin found in Unadilla River with no water in lungs -- perhaps murdered. Their children:

1. James A. O'Dell; b. 14 May 1801, Oxford, Chenango Co., N. Y.; m. (1) Abigail Steere, (2) Lucy Strickland, and (3) Betsy Louisa James; d. 25 Jan. 1897, Guilford, Chenango Co., N. Y.

2. Robert C. Odell; b. 28 Oct. 1803, Oxford; m. (1) Mary _____, and (2) Sarah E. Spencer; d. 27 Dec. 1891.

3. David L. Odell; b. 7 April 1806, Oxford.

4. William Odell; 25 Dec. 1808, Oxford.

5. Susan Odell; b. 6 June 1811; m. Levi Terwilliger, 21 Oct. 1830; d. 1883.

6. George C. Odell; b. 7 Feb. 1813, Guilford, Chenango Co., N. Y.; m. Lydensia St. John, 4 March 1843; d. 10 Aug. 1894, Guilford.

7. Austin C. Odell Jr.; b. 23 Aug. 1815, Guilford; m. Lucretia Aylesworth; d. 8 June 1889, Guilford.

8. Lucy Odell; b. 23 Sept. 1818, Guilford; m. Samuel Ives; d. 6 April 1885. Their children: Henry U., Flora, and Nettie Ives.

9. Richard Odell; b. 25 March 1820, Guilford; m. Harriet Ostrum; d. 3 June 1868, Guilford.

10. Marcellus Odell; b. 23 Sept. 1823, Guilford.

11. Thomas Odell; b. 23 May 1827, Guilford.

G. Augustus Odell Jr.; b. *ca.* 1776. Lived in Chenango Co., N. Y. before 1800, in Queensbury by 1810, and then to Seneca Co., N. Y. by 1820 and 1830. Two sons: Nathaniel and Isaac Odell who went to Calhoun Co., Mich. in 1835 and to Kalamazoo Co., Mich. in 1836.

* * * *

BENJAMIN ODELL (VI 32) and EMMA ODELL (VI 33) are known to have had four children, probably five. Three reached adulthood.

A. JEREMIAH ODELL (V 16); b. 1816, Warren Co., N. Y.; m. ELIZABETH LEONORA MICHELL (V 17), 12 April 1836 in Detroit, Mich.; d. 25 Jan. 1857, of gun wound, Royal Oak Township, Oakland Co., Mich.

B. Araminta Odell; b. 1817; unmarried; d. 6 Nov. 1886, Detroit.

C. Rachel Odell; b. 1818, Warren Co., N. Y.; d. *ca.* 1820.

D. Female; b. *ca.* 1820; died young (?).

E. William Odell; b. 1821, Warren Co., N. Y.; m. (1) Mary Sly, 27 Nov. 1837, and (2) Catharine Siebold, 12 May 1855, and (3) Mary Jane Harrington, 24 April 1858; d. 21 Nov. 1889, Detroit.

Chapter Six

MICHAEL CARTER (VII 70) was born 10 July 1745. He married ELIZABETH BOILEAU (VII 71), daughter of SIMEON BOILEAU (VIII 142), on 15 July 1775. MICHAEL CARTER died on 13 Sept. 1821. He and ELIZABETH CARTER had seven children, born in County Kildare, the site of Inch House. Their birthplace is often given as Queens County, later to become County Laoighis, bounding Kildare on the west. Inch, however, is located in County Kildare, so it is assumed the Carter children were born in that county. They were:

A. Magdeline Carter; b. 5 Nov. 1782; unmarried; d. 30 Nov. 1876, Essex Co., N. J.

B. CHARLOTTE GRACE CARTER (VI 35); b. 15 Aug. 1785; m. LT. JAMES MICHELL (VI 34) 3 Oct. 1810; d. 17 Feb. 1850.

C. Mary Julia Carter; b. Sept. 1789; d. 1790.

D. Henrietta (Harriet) Carter; b. 22 Jan. 1791; m. Philip Monckton, third son of the Honorable Edward Monck(h?)ton of Portland Place, London, England, on 12 March 1811, at house of Benjamin Edmonston, Calcutta, East India; d. 1822. Their children:

1. Edward Henry Cradock Monckton; b. 12 Sept. 1812, Cape of Good Hope, Africa, then under British rule.

2. Charlotte Monckton; b. 25 May 1814, Calcutta; m. Col. _____ Whichest, last officer of the Battle of Waterloo. No issue.

3. Elizabeth Leonora Monckton; b. July 1815.

4. George Monckton; b. 5 Oct. 1816, Bengal, East India.

5. John Monckton; b. 1817, Bengal, East India.

E. Henry Carter; b. 29 Sept. 1793.

F. Lizzie Carter; b. 17 March 1796; d. Sept. 1796.

G. Samuel Carter; b. 17 Oct. 1796 (?); d. 1817.

* * * *

JAMES MICHELL (VI 34) died on 25 March 1826 at Inch, Carter Hill. His widow, GRACE CARTER MICHELL (VI 35), remarried on 27 March 1827, to William Connor. The children of JAMES and GRACE CARTER MICHELL were:

A. Mansergh Michell; b. 12 July 1811; d. 14 July 1811.

B. Henry Michell; d. in infancy.

C. Henry James Michell; b. 14 May 1813; d. 11 Nov. 1847, India. Lived in Chandernagor, a French Indian territory on Hooghly River 21 miles north of Calcutta (present-day India).

D. Daniel Philip Michell; b. 31 Aug. 1814; m. Aurora _____; d. after 1882. Emigrated to New York in 1834, then to Boston where he was employed by Hernden & Co., 41 Broad Street, then to Liverpool about 1849, returning again to New York in 1868. He returned to Ireland in 1869.

E. Charlotte Michell; b. Sept. 1815; d. 1828.

F. ELIZABETH LEONORA MICHELL (V 17); b. 1 Oct. 1816; m. JEREMIAH ODELL (V 16) 11 July 1836, Detroit, Mich.; d. 28 March 1899.

G. Samuel Carter Michell; b. 19 Dec. 1817; d. 3 June 1855 of yellow fever, at sea as master of schooner *Anna Maria*. The following lines, pasted in the Michell family Bible, were written "at sea, 4 June 1855, lat. 25.50, long. 69.58, on the burial of Captain S. C. Michell of schooner *Anna Maria*, by his faithful mate, Mr. William L. Fisher":

Sleep on! Sleep on! proud mariner
And rest thy weary head;
Thy winding sheet is the deep blue sea
And the coral rock thy bed.

No stone will ever mark the spot
Where now he lays his head,
No mark's upon the place he lays,
No flowers deck his bed.

The sea-fan doth wave and bend
Around his peaceful brow,
Who once in infants' cradle rocked,
But the breakers rock him now.

H. James Mi(t)chell; b. 20 June 1818; d. 1889. Lived in Lapeer Co., Mich. from 1845. Changed spelling of name to "Mitchell."

I. Lewis Michell; b. 31 July 1820; m. Pamela Johnson, 1856, of Oakland Co., Mich.; d. after 1884. Emigrated to U. S. in 1834, then to Canada for several years, living near Windsor, Ont., in 1845. He sailed the Great Lakes for several years prior to 1850 when he settled in Detroit where he was a house painter for two years. He then became a minister in the Methodist Episcopal Church of the Detroit Conference. He moved to Lapeer Co., Mich., by 1858 where, in addition to his being in charge of the M. E. Church of North Branch, he farmed 80 acres in Arcadia Township. He changed the spelling of his name to "Mitchell" in his later years.

J. Monckton Michell; b. 15 March 1822.

K. George Edmonstone Michell; b. 18 Feb. 1824.

L. Hannah Michell; b. 1 March 1826, 25 days prior to her father's death.

1882. No. 3,968.

IN THE HIGH COURT OF JUSTICE IN IRELAND.

CHANCERY DIVISION.

VICE-CHANCELLOR.

In the Matter of the Estate of JAMES MICHELL, late of Carter Hill, in the Queen's County, Deceased.

BETWEEN—DANIEL PHILIP MICHELL, ... Plaintiff;

AND

MICHAEL BURKE, WILLIAM LAMB, GEORGE EDMONSTONE MICHELL, JAMES MICHELL, JAMES W. A. MICHELL, ALEXANDER WEBSTER, MALVERN GRACE WEBSTER, CORDELIA ANNE MICHELL, ELIZABETH O'DELL, LEWIS MICHELL, and HANNA MICHELL, ... Defendants.

STATEMENT OF CLAIM

DELIVERED ON THE DAY OF APRIL, 1882, BY WM. G. TOOMEY, OF No. 10 HARCOURT-STREET, IN THE CITY OF DUBLIN SOLICITOR FOR PLAINTIFF.

FIRST PAGE OF "STATEMENT OF CLAIM," initiated by Daniel Philip Michell on behalf of various family members, including ELIZABETH MICHELL O'DELL. Some of the Michell family information was obtained from this 1882 case in the High Court of Justice in Ireland.

* * * *

JEREMIAH O'DELL (V 16) and ELIZABETH LEONORA MICHELL (V 17) had eight children, four of whom reached adulthood -- all sons:

A. Emma O'Dell; b. 1839, West Canada; d. 1858.

B. Maria O'Dell; "died young."

C. Benjamin O'Dell; b. 1841, Detroit, Mich.; m. Josephine _____; d. after 1899. This son of JEREMIAH O'DELL is said to have "disappeared." Benjamin and Josephine are known to have had at least one child, a daughter who died at age five in 1886.

D. HENRY JAMES O'DELL (IV 8); b. 20 June 1845, Royal Oak Township, Oakland Co., Mich.; m. EMMA LEONORA ROOKS, 20 April 1871, Detroit; d. 1 Jan. 1921, Port Huron, Mich.; bur. Lakeside Cemetery, Port Huron.

E. Charlotte O'Dell; b. Royal Oak, Oakland Co., Mich.; "died young."

F. Augustus May O'Dell; b. 24 May 1852, Royal Oak; m. Susan Dolan, 21 Dec. 1875; d. 18 June 1904. Their children:

1. Benjamin Lestock O'Dell; b. 19 May 1876, Detroit; m. Margaret A. Minch; d. 10 July 1946. Was an early associate of Henry Ford; became head of B. L. O'Dell Heating Co., Detroit. Their children: sons William, Arthur, Benjamin Jr., and Donald O'Dell, and daughters Mrs. Susan Trondle, Mrs. Catherine Henry, Mrs. Eileen D'Arcey, and Mrs. Virginia Crisp.

2. Augustus O'Dell Jr.; b. 3 Oct. 1877, Detroit; m. Elsie Weicher.

3. Samuel Joseph O'Dell; b. 6 Sept. 1879, Detroit; m. Jennie McGuigan, 30 May 1900; d. 16 April 1950. Their children:

a. Samuel O'Dell Jr.; b. 15 May 1901; d. 13 Jan. 1903.

b. Charlotte Margaret O'Dell; b. 6 Dec. 1902; m. Frank O. Parish, 9 March 1942; d. 29 Nov. 1975. No issue.

c. Helen Marie O'Dell; b. 8 July 1904; m. Roy B. Richter, 21 Nov. 1928; d. 5 March 1974. Their children:

(1) Deitrich Joseph Richter; b. 23 Feb.1935; m. Mary Jean Lentsch, 18 Nov. 1961. Their son: Mark James Richter; b. 21 Jan. 1964.

(2) Samuel John Richter; b. 31 Jan. 1939; m.

Brenda May Bentzel, 22 July 1967. Their children:

(a) Samuel John Richter; b.11 June 1969.

(b) Steven Patrick Richter; b. 25 Sept. 1973.

(c) Sara Ann Richter; b. 7 Sept. 1976.

d. Madeline Gertrude O'Dell; b. 26 March 1906; unmarried; d. 5 March 1968.

e. Francis Xaviour O'Dell; b. 23 March 1908; m. Dora _____, 28 Dec. 1941; d. 6 Feb. 1962.

f. Kathleen Jane O'Dell; b. 21 March 1910; d. 27 May 1911.

g. Valerie Anna O'Dell; b. 26 Oct. 1912; m. Kenneth McLeod, 2 May 1936. Their children:

(1) Jane Phyllis McLeod; b. 30 Sept. 1937; m. Thomas L. Bourke, 9 Aug. 1958. Their children:

(a) Thomas McLeod Bourke; b. 22 Jan. 1960.

(b) Terrance John Bourke; b. 16 July 1962.

(c) Valerie Jane Bourke; b. 29 Oct. 1966.

(d) Lawrence James Bourke; b. 3 Nov. 1968.

(2) Susan Karen McLeod; b. 16 Dec. 1940; m. Scott Price, 3 June 1975.

(3) John Kenneth McLeod; b. 23 Oct. 1942; m. Judith Ann Rau, 20 Sept. 1966. Their children:

(a) Tammy Marie McLeod; b. 2 July 1967.

(b) Jacqueline Ann McLeod; b. 21 Oct. 1968.

(c) Theresa Ann McLeod; b. 11 Jan. 1970.

(d) Kimberly Sue McLeod; b. 5 Feb. 1973.

(4) Margaret Ann McLeod; b. 5 April 1950; m. Dennis Lee Wrobel, 5 April 1969; div.

4. Henry O'Dell; m. Mary _____. Their children: Henry Jr., Martin, Charlotte, Tim, Thomas, Marie, Lewis, and Elizabeth O'Dell.

5. Frank O'Dell; b. 19 March 1884; m. _____. Their children:

a. Lucille O'Dell; m. Fred Dunlap.

b. Bernice O'Dell; m. Howard Beindit.

c. Vincent Donald O'Dell; b. 17 Feb. 1909; m. Helen Cuthbertson; d. 12 March 1961. Their children:

(1) Donald Frank O'Dell; b. 17 Aug. 1935; m. Mary Jane Townsend. Their children: Robin, Shawn, Michelle, Alan, Renee, and Karen O'Dell.

(2) Lawrence Patrick O'Dell; b. 4 May 1937; m. Carol Ann Schultz. Their children: Kevin, Joyce, Ann, Helen, Kathy, Lawrence, and Mark O'Dell.

(3) Ronald Michael O'Dell; b. 8 July 1939; m. Diane _____. Their children: Ronald and Patricia O'Dell.

(4) Robert Daniel O'Dell; b. 20 Jan. 1942; m. Lucille Ann Beckstron, 28 May 1966. Their children: Darren John, Ryan Vincent, Clark Eliot, and Jennifer May O'Dell.

(5) Ilene Marie O'Dell; b. 5 April 1946; m. Michael T. Ruhman, 23 June 1978.

(6) Raymond John O'Dell; b. 2 Aug. 1956; m. Evelyn Sitkiewicz, 6 May 1978.

6. Mabel O'Dell; b. 31 May 1886; m. William Bidinger; d. 9 May 1959. Their children:

a. Albert A. Bidinger; b. 12 Oct. 1909; d. 1 March 1977.

b. Evelyn Bidinger; b. 29 Feb. 1912; m. Gerald Murphy.

c. Dorothy Bidinger; b. 12 Feb. 1915; m. (1) Louis Frost; div.; (2) Fred Lyon. One son: Michael Frost.

7. Elizabeth O'Dell; b. 11 July 1889; m. William Enz; d. 13 Jan. 1967. Their son: Walter William Enz; b. 1915; d. April 1934.

8. William Walter O'Dell; b. 6 Dec. 1891; m. Martha Blanche Brough, 26 June 1928; d. 16 Oct. 1973. Their children:

a. William Walter O'Dell Jr.; b. 21 March 1930.
b. John E. O'Dell; b. 4 Aug. 1931.

9. Louis O'Dell; b. 9 Sept. 1894; m. Grace Hoover; d. 1937. Their son: Warren O'Dell; b. 1925.

10. Charlotte Margaret O'Dell; b. 19 Nov. 1898; m. Clarence C. Wetzel, 16 June 1924. Their son: James Wetzel; b. 11 July 1925; m. Daisy Ann Margaretha, 4 May 1946. Their children:

(1) Susan Dianna Wetzel; b. 7 April 1947; m. Tom Childers; div. Their children: Christopher Scott and Marcie Ann Childers.

(2) Deborah Ann Wetzel; b. 20 Oct. 1952; m. Walter Sakowski. Their daughter: Stacey Ann Sakowski.

(3) John Craig Wetzel; b. 26 March 1955.

(4) James David Wetzel; 15 May 1957.

G. Lewis Mansure O'Dell; b. 1853, Royal Oak Township, Oakland Co., Mich.; m. Nora _____; d. 30 Aug. 1900; bur. Lakeside Cemetery, Port Huron, Mich.

H. William O'Dell; died in infancy.

O'DELL BURIAL PLOT in Lakeside Cemetery, Port Huron, Mich.

APPENDIX A

Chapter Seven

THOMAS ROOKS THE ELDER (VI 36) is known to have lived in Tiverton, Devonshire, England, where he married ANN CARTER (VI 37) during the late 1700's. The following information was obtained from a variety of sources, ranging from the 1851 Population Census of Great Britain to family data submitted by present-day family members. Information on the brothers and sisters of THOMAS ROOKS SR. was provided many years ago by EMMA LEONORA ROOKS O'DELL (IV 9). Descendants of THOMAS ROOKS THE ELDER and his wife ANN CARTER ROOKS are listed here:

A. THOMAS ROOKS SR. (V 18); b. 21 Aug. 1806, Tiverton, Devonshire, England; bap. 24 Jan. 1808; m. ANN COPP (V 19) who was born 1804 and died 17 Aug. 1879; d. 2 Oct. 1885; bur. Elmwood Cemetery, Detroit, Mich.

B. Elizabeth Rooks; m. James Wetherel; lived in Middlesex, London. Their children:

1. Ann Elizabeth Wetherel; b. 1842.
2. James Wetherel; b. 1843.
3. Clara Wetherel; b. 1846.

C. William Rooks; married a singer.

D. Able Rooks; b. 1823; m. Eliza _____; scalded to death. Their children:

1. Ann Rooks; b. 1846.
2. William Rooks; b. 1848.
3. Harriet Rooks; b. 1850.

E. Alex Rooks. Had six or seven children.

F. John Rooks; d. in London, leaving widow.

G. Frank Rooks. Had thirteen children.

H. Walter Rooks; b. 1831. Was a soldier.

* * * *

THOMAS ROOKS SR. (V 18) and ANN COPP ROOKS (V 19) had eight children. These and some of their descendants are listed below:

A. William Rooks; b. 7 May 1831, Tiverton, Devonshire, England. Was a lace maker in 1851.

B. Thomas Rooks Jr.; b. 3 Nov. 1832, Tiverton; m. Elizabeth _____. Emigrated to United States. Their children:

1. Henry A. Rooks; b. 1860, Detroit, Mich. In 1880 he

worked in a railroad car factory.

2. Thomas W. Rooks; b. 1864, Detroit. In 1880 he was an apprentice to a lithographer, Andrew Murtaugh, who lived in the neighborhood.

3. Etta R. Rooks; b. 1874, Detroit; d. after 1931.

4. Arthur A. Rooks; b. 11 July 1880; d. 1968.

C. Frederick Rooks; b. 1838, Tiverton. Emigrated to United States.

D. Anna Eliza Rooks; b. 25 March 1840, Tiverton; m. (1) Charles Kell who was born 1829 and died 1901, and (2) _____ Hack; d. 1908, Detroit. Eliza and Charles Kell had these children:

1. Francis C. Kell; b. 6 May 1864; d. 1876.

2. Alfred Charles Kell; b. 1866.

3. Emma Louise "Lulu" Kell; b. 1870; m. George Harvey, 1 Aug. 1894; d. 6 June 1961. Their daughter:

a. Edith Harvey; b. 29 June 1896; m. Seeley E. Mosher, 16 Sept. 1920. "Mosher's," Port Huron, Mich., jewelers since 1907, was started by Seeley's father, C. W. Mosher. Seeley assumed managership in 1927. Edith's and Seeley's son, George W., and grand son, William A. Mosher, are active in the business. Edith and Seeley Mosher's descendants are:

(1) George W. Mosher; b. 7 Jan. 1923; m. Camilla Carlsen, 1 May 1948. Their children:

(a) William Alfred Mosher; b. 17 March 1949; m. Robyn Saul, 6 Sept. 1974.

(b) Kristine Elizabeth Mosher; b. 22 June 1951.

(c) Julia Ann Mosher; b. 8 Sept.1953; div. 1978. Children: Benjamin Seeley and Jacob Mosher Weston.

(d) Mary Katherine Mosher; b. 10 Nov. 1955.

(e) Emily Louise Mosher; b. 24 Aug. 1959.

(2) William Harvey Mosher; b. 22 Oct. 1924; d. 12 April 1945 in World War II.

4. Clara Bessie Kell; b, 1874; m. Charles Monticello; d. 1908. Their children:

a. Charlotte Monticello; b. 1903; m. Charles Heath; div. Their son:

(1) Charles Heath Jr.; b. 1928; m. Betty Bastuba. Their children:

(a) Susan Heath; b. 1951; m. David Wilhelm. Their daughter: Emily Wilhelm; b. 1977.

(b) Lynn Heath; b. 1953; m. Lawrence Taylor. Their child: Jesse Taylor; b. 1975.

(c) Patti Heath; b. 1954; m. David Parnin.

(d) Joan Heath; b. 1956.

(e) Kay Heath; b. 1958.

b. Louise Monticello; b. 1905; m. Nelson Giles. Their children:

(1) Robert Giles; b. 1927; m. Betty Kolar. Their children:

(a) Nancy Giles; b. 1954; m. Earl Kansier; div.

(b) Linda Giles; b. 1956; m. Kenneth Hillier.

(c) David Giles; b. 1960.

(d) Michael Giles; b. 1965.

(2) Barbara Giles; b. 1930; m. Walter Wilds. Their daughter: Cynthia Wilds; b. 1954.

E. Louisa Rooks; b. 14 Sept. 1842, Tiverton, Devonshire, England; m. James Tomlinson who was born 6 April 1840. Their children:

1. F. W. Tomlinson; b. 16 Oct. 1865.
2. Emma Tomlinson; b. 3 Feb. 1868.
3. Lily Tomlinson; b. 5 April 1870.
4. Annie Tomlinson; b. 17 May 1872.
5. James Tomlinson; b. 1875.

F. EMMA LEONORA ROOKS (IV 9); b. 20 June 1844, Tiverton; m. HENRY

JAMES O'DELL (IV 8), 20 April 1871; d. 1934; bur. Lakeside Cemetery, Port Huron, Mich. Their children:

1. Ellen Louisa O'Dell; b. 2 Feb. 1872; d. 1 Sept. 1872.

2. Henry Augustus O'Dell; b. 17 April 1875, Detroit; m. (1) Agnes Cleaveland, 1903, and (2) Kathleen Belknap; d. 2. Feb. 1965. H. Augustus O'Dell was a well known Detroit architect, with offices first in the Dime Building, and later in Birmingham, a Detroit suburb, when the firm was known as O'Dell, Hewlett and Luchenbach. Among the many Detroit area buildings designed by the firm are the Ford Auditorium, Oakland County Courthouse and County Building, and, later, the Sports Field House in Pontiac. Gus O'Dell was a Fellow of the American Institute of Architects and was bestowed the Gold Honor Award in 1957. He joined the Signal Corps in World War I as a captain, serving in France for 14 months. He returned home with the rank of major and was later promoted to colonel. He was one of the early developers of Bloomfield Hills, a suburb of Detroit a few miles northwest of Birmingham. He first lived in Bloomfield Hills on Tiverton Road, named after Tiverton, England, where EMMA LEONORA ROOKS was born. An adopted daughter Betsey O'Dell married Lloyd Woodburn of Seattle, Wash.

3. FRANCIS TREVOR O'DELL (III 4); b. 3 Dec. 1878, Valparaiso, Ind.; m. GARNETT AIKMAN, 27 Dec. 1900, London, Ont.; d. 15 Sept. 1958.

4. Edna Jessie O'Dell; b. 20 June 1886, Port Huron, Mich.; m. Harry Edward Maule, 12 July 1910, an author and book publisher; d. 1970, Long Island City, N. Y. Edna O'Dell Maule attended the Ypsilanti State Teachers College (later Eastern Michigan University) and became principal of a private secondary school on Long Island. Their daughter:Katherine Maule; m. Clifford Holske.

5. Emma Leonora O'Dell; b. 30 Jan. 1888, Port Huron; unmarried; d. 2 Dec. 1971; bur. Lakeside Cemetery, Port Huron, Mich.

G. Alfred William Rooks; b. 6 Jan. 1847, Tiverton, Devonshire, England; m. Annie (Anna) Emery, 27 Feb. 1871, Detroit; d. 12 April 1898; bur. Elmwood Cemetery, Detroit. Worked for U. S. Post Office. Their children:

1. Edward Horace Rooks; b. 1 Jan. 1872, Detroit; m. Hannah Roach, Oct. 1895; d. 25 Jan. 1931; bur. Elmwood Cemetery, Detroit. Was a tool maker, and owner of The Musique Shop in Detroit. Their children:

   a. Edwin Arthur Rooks; b. 18 May 1896, Detroit; m. (1) Frances Barry, and (2) Margaret Garvey; d.

26 April 1975. Was Fire Chief of Detroit.

b. Ralph James Rooks; b. 25 Nov. 1897, Detroit; m. Vernice Dorion; d. 28 March 1966. Like his older brother, was Fire Chief of Detroit.

THOMAS ROOKS SR. with his four daughters shortly after their arrival in Detroit from England. EMMA LEONORA ROOKS is on right, with her sisters Eliza, Louisa and Hannah.

c. Helen Beulah Rooks; b. 17 Oct. 1900, Detroit; single.

d. Elizabeth Ann Rooks; b. 14 July 1907, Toledo, Ohio; single. Long-time employee of Bendix Corp.

e. Alfred William Rooks; b. 20 March 1912, Toledo; m.Madelyn Drescher

2. Arthur Seymour Rooks; b. 11 July 1880; single; d. 27 March 1968.

3. Ella Rooks; single; died at age 18.

4. Ida Rooks; m. William Fellows.

5. Alice Rooks; m. Edwin Lefevre.

H. Hannah Anne Rooks; b. 13 Sept. 1851, Tiverton, Devonshire, England; m. William Campbell who was born 1846 in Canada. Their children:

1. William A. Campbell; b. 1870, Canada.

2. Horace Walter Campbell; b. 25 May 1872, Detroit; d. 20 July 1884.

3. Gertrude M. Campbell; b. 1875, Detroit.

4. Walter S. Campbell; b. 1878, Detroit.

Chapter Eight

There is confusion among Baer genealogists as to whether Melchior or Johannes Baer was the father of the three Bär immigrants from Zweibrücken, Germany. There appear to have been five sons (including the three immigrants) and two daughters. The following is known about the three immigrants -- most of the information being drawn from county histories and data submitted by present-day Baer genealogists:

A. CHRISTOPHEL BÄR (VIII*192); b. 27 Oct. 1719, Zweibrücken, Germany; m. CATHERINE WINGERT/WENGERT; d. 1786. Settled in Northampton (present-day Lehigh) Co., Pa. Their children:

1. HEINRICH BAER (VII*96); b. *ca.* 1752, Whitehall Township, Northampton Co., Pa.; m. Margaretta _____. Their son: JOHN JACOB BAER (VI*48).

2. Melchior Baer; m. Julianna _____; Their children:

a. Henry Baer.
b. Catherine Baer; m. Isaac Harmony.
c. Susanna Baer; m. Christian Derr.
d. Magdalena Baer; m. Abraham Derr.

3. Johannes Baer; b. *ca.* 1757; m. Susanna Belgert; d. Allegany Co., Md. No issue.

4. Maria Salome Baer; m. William Kern II.

5. Appalonia Baer; single.

6. John Jacob Baer; b. 1761, Whitehall Township, Northampton Co., Pa.; m. (1) Sarah (?) Findlay, and (2) Eliz-

abeth Hersch, 1791; d. 1823. Moved to Allegany Co., Md., 1800. Their children:

a. Nicholas Baer; d. Somerset Co., Pa.

b. Peter Baer; b. Lehigh Co., Pa.; d. 4 Sept. 1875, Somerset Co., Pa.

c. Daniel Baer, Lehigh Co., Pa.; m. Elizabeth _____; d. Feb. 1885, Somerset Co., Pa.

d. John Jacob Baer; b. 1787, Lehigh Co., Pa.; m. Anne _____; d. 1868, Somerset Co., Pa. Their children:

(1) Daniel Baer; b. 1819, Summit Township, Somerset Co., Pa.; m. Susannah Berkey; They had six children: three sons and three daughters.

(2) Barbara Baer; b. Somerset Co.; m. Joseph Rhoads.

(3) Elizabeth Baer; b. Somerset Co.; m. ____ Fike(s).

(4) Solomon J. Baer; b. 31 Dec. 1827, Somerset Co.; m. Agnes Cober; d. 5 March 1885. Preacher, Church of the Brethren.

(5) Jacob Baer.

* *

e. Adam Baer; b. Lehigh Co., Pa.

f. Dianna (Christina?) Baer; b. Lehigh Co., Pa.; d. *ca.* 1851.

g. Solomon Baer; b. 1794, Lehigh Co.; m. Anna Maria Baker, 1820; d. 12 Jan. 1882. Solomon was a cabinet maker, and active in the Pennsylvania Militia, holding various offices from captain to brigade inspector. Solomon and Maria had nine children:

(1) Margaret Baer; m. Rev. William Couren. Lived in Somerset Co., Pa. Their children: Albert, Rufina and Anna Couren.

(2) Elizabeth Baer; m. John H. Benfed. Lived in Somerset Co.

(3) William J. Baer; b. 1826, Somerset Co.; m. Elizabeth Connolly who was born in 1829. William J. Baer was a judge of

the Sixteenth District of Pennsylvania. They had at least four children, including Cora Baer who married John G. Ogle, and Emma Baer who married A. L. G. Hay.

(4) Edna Baer; m. R. G. Furst of Lock Haven, Pa.

(5) Mary Baer; single (?).

(6) Herman Ludwig Baer; b. 20 March 1828, Berlin, Somerset Co., Pa.; m. (1) Lucy E. Schall of Norristown, Pa., Dec. 1856, and (2) Annie C. Schall, his first wife's sister, 1889; d. *ca.* 1918. Herman L. Baer was an attorney in Somerset Co., and with his brother, William J. Baer, formed the law firm of Baer & Baer. Herman and Lucy Baer had these children:

(a) William Schall Baer; died in infancy.

(b) Caroline Trexler Baer; b. 1 April 1859; m. George R. Scull.

(c) Reuben Edward Baer; b. 2 April 1867; m. Helen Markell.

(d) George Baker Baer; b. 30 March 1863; m. Sarah Markell.

(e) Hermanus Ludwig Baer; b. 4 Oct. 1874; m. Mabel McKinley, niece of President William McKinley.

(7) Rufina Baer; b. 1829; single. Was paralyzed in later life.

GEORGE FREDERICK BAER

(8) Harry Baer. Entered U. S. Army and died after discharge, leaving wife and six children.

(9) George Frederick Baer; b. 26 Sept. 1842; m. Emily Kimmel, 1866; d. 26 April 1914. George F. Baer was a well known industrialist, living in Reading, Pa. for much of his business life. He was president of the Reading Railway System, and long considered one of Pennsylvania's most public-spirited men. George and Emily Baer had five daughters.

B. Melchior Baer Jr.; b. 6 Jan. 1726, Zweibrücken, Germany; m.(1) _____ _____, and (2) Eva Elizabeth Christman, *ca.* 1763; d. 28 Feb. 1773; bur. near Zionsville, Upper Milford Township, Lehigh Co., Pa. Melchior Jr. had five children by his first wife; four by his second, Eva Elizabeth. The nine children were:

1. Elizabeth Catherine Baer; m. Lorentz Kern. Moved to York Co., Pa. Their children: Henry Kern; Margareth Kern; Elisabeth Kern who married John Jacoby.

2. Regina Baer; m. Jacob Haman; d. prior to 1821. Their children:

   a. Hannah Haman; m. Jacob Mohr.

   b. Margareth Haman; b. 27 Oct. 1782; m. Henry Dubbs, 1808. Moved to Butler Co., Ohio.

3. Anna Margaret Baer; m. Philip Christman.

4. Barbara Baer; b. 13 March 1760; m. John Nicholas Stahler who was born 1752 and died 24 Sept. 1830; d. 28 June 1845.

5. Susanna Baer; b. 1 Jan. 1762; m. Philip Walter; d. 1 Jan. 1846.

* *

6. Melchior Baer III; b. 19 Feb. 1765; m. Catharine Desch (Desh), 14 June 1789; d. 29 Dec. 1850. Their children:

   a. Daniel Baer; b. 19 Nov. 1790; m. Susan Neumoyer who was born 1791 and died 1871; d. 28 Oct. 1841; bur. Mucungie Reformed Church, Mucungie Township, Lehigh Co., Pa. Twelve children.

   b. Maria (Polly) Baer; b. 30 Dec. 1793; m. Jacob Diefenderfer; d. 30 March 1856.

   c. Jacob Baer; b. 19 Jan. 1795; m. Polly Schneider who was born 1794 and died 1878; d. 8 March 1861; bur. Mucumbie Reformed Church; Lehigh Co., Pa. Their children:

      (1) William Baer; died in infancy.

      (2) Charles Baer; b. 2 July 1818; m. Elisabeth Burger; d. 27 Dec. 1906.

      (3) Solomon Baer; b. 1823; m. Mary Groh; d. 1873. Their children: Henry, Clinton, Ella and Bella Baer.

      (4) Sarah Baer; m. Henry Bortz. No issue.

(5) Lydia Baer; b. 12 Nov. 1826; m. Augustus Romig; d. 28 Sept. 1892.

(6) Jonas Baer; b. 29 June 1828; m. Rebecca Wetzel who was born 17 March and died 19 March 1903; bur. Mucumbie Reformed Church, Lehigh Co., Pa. They had four sons:

(a) George E. Baer; b. 27 Aug. 1851; m. Sallie Y. Riegner. George Baer was active in the Baer Reunions at Kutztown, Pa.

(b) J. Pierce Baer; b. 1853; m. Alvesta Gehris. Eight children, three of whom died in infancy.

(c) J. Augustus Baer; m. Alice Foncannon. Moved to Tiffin, Ohio. Two children: William Baer who married Daisy Wile, and Oliver Baer who married Cerrie Burger.

(d) T. Melchior Baer. Died in infancy.

(7) Susannah Baer; b. 29 June 1830; m. Tilghman Weaver; d. 3 Dec. 1902.

(8) Hannah Baer; b. 19 Dec. 1831; d. 28 March 1858.

(9) Maria Baer; b. 7 Nov. 1833; m. Leon Romig; d. 12 Jan. 1912.

(10) Emma Baer; b. 7 Sept. 1835; d. 23 May 1849.

(11) David Baer; b. 1838; m. Elizabeth Groh.

d. Elizabeth Baer; b. 22 Feb. 1797; m. Daniel Reiss. Moved to Mercer Co., Pa.

e. Charles (Carlus) Baer; b. 5 April 1799; m. Susan Stahler. Their son: William Baer who married Susanna E. Gold.

7. Jacob Baer; m. Maria _____; d. *ca.* 1858. Among their children was Manasses Baer; b. 17 March 1826; d. 1903, York Co., Pa.

8. Eva Elizabeth Baer; b. 5 July 1771; m. Jacob Lindeman; d. 29 June 1857.

9. Henry Baer; b. 3 Sept. 1773.

C. Johannes (John Adam) Baer; b. Germany; d. 1758. Settled in Weisenberg Township, one mile south of Claussville, Lehigh Co., Pa. Blacksmith. Four children:

1. John Baer; Moved to Windsor Co., near Hamburg, Berks Co., Pa.

2. Jacob Baer; b. 1745; m. Elizabeth _____; d. 1810. Their children:

a. John Adam Baer; b. 1772; m. Susanna Knerr, 12 May 1795. Moved to Kutztown, Berks Co., and then to Mercer Co., Pa. Their children:

(1) Jonathan Baer.
(2) John Baer.
(3) Peter Baer. Moved to Michigan.
(4) Charles Baer; b. 13 July 1806;m. Anna Carl.
(5) Solomon Baer. Descendants to Akron, Ohio.
(6) Eva Baer; m. Jacob Schollenberger.
(7) Betsy Baer; m. Solomon Stoyer.
(8) Susanna Baer; m. Samuel Smith.
(9) Lydia Baer; d. Lockport, N. Y.
(10) Polly Baer; d. Lockport, N. Y.

b. Johannes Baer; b. 1 Nov. 1773.

c. Anna Margaretha Baer; m. Frederick Holben, 15 March 1796.

d. Regina Baer; m. Johannes Hartman, 18 Feb. 1800.

e. Elisabeth Baer; b. 20 June 1776.

f. Henry Baer; b. 28 Feb. 1778; m. Elisabeth Hoffman, 9 Aug. 1801. Moved to Luzerne Co., Pa.

g. Maria Baer; m. Jacob Kisler.

h. Jacob Baer. Born and died in Weisenberg Township, Lehigh Co., Pa.

i. Daniel Baer; m. Mariga Zeigler, 8 May 1810.

j. Catherine Elizabeth Baer; b. 23 June 1784.

k. Peter Baer; b. 1786; m. Catharine Merkle, 13 Oct. 1805; d. 1846.

l. Elisabeth Baer; m. _____ Gackenbach.

3. Adam Baer; m. Margaretha _____. Settled in 1773 a few miles north of his father's homestead near Claussville,

Weisenberg Township, Lehigh Co., Pa. Their children:

a. John Peter (Red) Baer; b. 15 Feb. 1779; m. Magdalena Merkel, 9 May 1797; d. 12 May 1853. Their children: Benjamin, Joseph, David, Solomon, Polly, Hannah, and John Paul Baer.

b. Henry Baer; b. 14 Jan. 1786; m. Margretha Hunsiker; d. 13 May 1840.

c. Jacob Baer. To Mercer Co., Pa.

d. Abraham Baer. Settled in Bern Township, Berks Co., Pa.

e. John Adam Baer.

f. Jonathan Baer; b. 6 May 1794; m. Susanna Kreutz; d. 6 Dec. 1841.

(1) Jonas Baer; b. 13 Aug. 1818; m. Lydia Peters. Their children:

(a) Phaon Baer; b. 28 April 1839; m. Mary Buchman. Seven children.

(b) Lewis Baer; b. 16 Oct. 1841; m. Julia Ann Greenwald, 18 Dec. 1864.

(c) John P. Baer; b. 3 May 1850.

(2) John Baer.

(3) Abraham Baer.

g. Magdalena Baer; m. Jacob Heilman, 9 May 1797.

h. Elisabeth Baer; b. 22 March 1776; m. John Wassum.

i. Anna Margretha Baer; m. Jacob Walbert, 5 Feb. 1805.

j. Maria Baer; m. John Schmeck.

k. Catherine Baer; m. Peter Schmeck.

4. Barbara Baer; m. Henry Fetter. Lived in Allentown, Pa.

APPENDIX A

Chapter Nine

The relationship between George Washington and the Riley and Baer descendants stems from the common progenitor, COL. JOHN WASHINGTON (XII*3362), his grandson, George Washington, and his second great grand daughter, FRANCIS WRIGHT (VII*105) who married GERRARD RILEY SR. (VII*104).

The pertinent lineages are portrayed here, starting with COL. JOHN WASHINGTON, the common progenitor, who married ANNE POPE in 1658. They had three children, including ANNE WASHINGTON (XI*1681), the ancestor of the Rileys and Baers:

A. Lawrence Washington; b. 1659; m. Anne Fairfax. Their son:

1. Augustine Washington; m. (1) Jane Butler, and (2) Mary Ball. Augustine (sometimes called Austin) and Mary Washington had a son named:

a. George Washington; b. 1732; m. Martha Dandridge, 6 Jan. 1759. First president of the United States.

B. John Washington; b. 1661.

C. ANNE WASHINGTON (XI*1681); b. *ca.* 1663; m. MAJ. FRANCIS WRIGHT (XI*1680) who re-married in about 1707, to Martha Cox; d. before 1699. ANNE and MAJ. FRANCIS WRIGHT had a son:

1. JOHN WRIGHT, GENT. (X*840); m. DOROTHY AWBREY (X*841), *ca.* 1705. One of their two sons was:

a. JUSTICE (CAPT.) JOHN WRIGHT (IX*420); m. ELIZABETH DARNALL (IX*421). Their son:

(1) CAPT. JOHN WRIGHT (VIII*210); m. ANN WILLIAMS (VIII*211). Their daughter:

(a) FRANCES WRIGHT (VII*105); b. 1769; m. GERRARD RILEY SR. (VII*104), 12 Jan. 1786. One of their children was ZACHARIAH RILEY (VI*52).

FRANCES WRIGHT (VII*105) is a second cousin, two generations removed from President George Washington. Descendants of GERRARD and FRANCIS WRIGHT RILEY are second cousins to George Washington, with the number of generations "removed" being determined by the number of generations the descendants are from GERRARD and FRANCES RILEY, plus two. Thus, BESS BAER O'DELL and her brothers and sisters are five generations from GERRARD and FRANCES RILEY, making them second cousins to George Washington, seven times removed. (See Appendix D)

* * * *

NINIAN RILEY SR. (VIII*208) was born in Montgomery Co., Md. in 1726. He married ELIZABETH TAYLOR (VIII*209), and they are said to have had eight daughters and four sons. Six of the twelve children are known to have traveled with their parents to North Carolina. This information is available on these six children and other descendants:

A. GERRARD RILEY SR. (VII*104); b. 26 May 1766, Montgomery Co., Md.; m. FRANCES WRIGHT (VII*105), 12 Jan. 1786, Surry Co. (present-day Yadkin Co.), N. C.; d. 26 Dec. 1853, Bloomfield, Edgar Co., Ill. GERRARD and FRANCES RILEY are said to have had thirteen children, information being available on some of them:

1. Nancy Riley; b. 6 Dec. 1786, Surry Co., N.C.; m. (1) Houton Clark(e), 6 Dec. 1806, Clermont Co., Ohio, and (2) John Salt, 1846; d. 14 June 1857.

2. John W. Riley Sr.; b. 1788, Surry Co., N. C.; m. _____ Conrey; d. 1863, Ohio. He was a Baptist minister in Edgar Co., Ill. for six years, moving back to Ohio. His son, George W. Riley became the minister at the Edgar County church, and George's son in turn was assigned the church as it preacher.

3. Ninian Riley; b. Dec. 1789; m. Sarah Hinds; d. 1840, Fayette Co., Ky. He was a colonel in the Kentucky State Militia from 1824 to 1840. Ninian and Sarah these children:

a. Samuel Hinds Riley; b. 15 Dec. 1811, Clermont Co., Ohio; m. (1) Margaret Van Deren who died May 1872, and (2) Sarah W. Furnish, widow of Graves Furnish; d. 1898. Samuel Riley was a farmer most of his life, a captain in the state militia, and a justice of the peace before 1850. He and Margaret Riley had ten children, two of whom died in infancy, unnamed:

(1) Ninian Smith Riley; b. 4 Dec. 1834; m. Julia A. Violett, Jan. 1858, who died 10 Dec. 1910. Their children:

(a) Margaret Olivia Riley; m. Guthrie Allnut.
(b) Otis Violett Riley; b. 26 Aug. 1860. Owen Co., Ky.; m. Mary

Allen Jones, 25 Feb. 1890. Four children: Samuel Russel, Julia Violett, Emily Portia, and Ninian S. Riley.

(c) Mary E. Riley; m. William D. Davis.

(d) William Thomas Riley; d. before 1910.

(e) James M. Riley.

(f) Anna S. Riley; m. Ashby A. Stewart.

(g) Samuel Hinds Riley.

(h) Albert T. Riley.

(i) Ninian S. Riley Jr.

(2) James Van Deren Riley. Baptist minister.

(3) Louvenia E. Riley.

(4) Martha Riley.

(5) Madison Riley. Baptist minister.

(6) Samuel Riley.

(7) Nancy Riley; m. James M. Frost, Baptist minister.

(8) Joe S. Riley.

b. Frances Riley.
c. Martha Riley.
d. Clark W. Riley. Debated GERRARD P. RILEY on slavery issue.
e. Nancy E. Riley.
f. Ninian S. Riley.
g. John Marcus Riley.
h. Sarah E. Riley.

4. ZACHARIAH RILEY (VI*52); b. 5 Oct. 1791, Surry Co., N. C.; m. MARY SWING, 9 Feb. 1817, Clermont Co., Ohio; d. 10 March 1875; bur. Swing Family Cemetery, Bethel, Clermont Co., Ohio.

5. James Riley.

6. Frances Riley.

7. Williams W. Riley; b. 29 July 1804, Fayette Co., Ky.; m. Elizabeth Thompson, 1827, Fayette Co.; d. Adams, Decatur Co., Ind.

8. James Riley; b. *ca.* 1805; d. 1882, Tate Township, Clermont Co., Ohio.

9. Mary W. Riley.

10. Sarah Riley.

11. Garrard Riley; m. Sarah Frazier, 24 Jan. 1834.

12. Amelia Riley.

B. Ninian Riley Jr.; m. Sarah Wright, sister of FRANCES WRIGHT RILEY, wife of GERRARD RILEY SR., 14 April 1790.

C. James Riley; m. Martha Cast, 25 Feb. 1789.

D. John Riley; b. 1773; m. Sarah Ellsberry, 12 Aug. 1797.

E. Lucy Riley; m. Robert Cast, 16 Feb. 1790, Surry Co., N. C.

F. Elizabeth Riley; m. James Sanders, 28 July 1786, Surry Co., N. C.

Chapter Ten

JEAN MARTIN SCHWING (IX*424) of Strasbourg, France, and SALOME SCHMIDT SCHWING (IX*425) had ten children, three of whom are known to have emigrated to America. A fourth, Abraham Schwing, is said to have come to America, but no evidence of this has been found. JEAN MARTIN and SALOME SCHWING'S children and other descendants follow:

A. Marie Salome Schwing; b. 1 April 1717; d. 9 Feb. 1719.

B. Judith Schwing; b. 20 April 1718; d. 28 Nov. 1719.

C. Anne Marie Schwing; b. 3 Dec. 1719; d. 12 Oct. 1737.

D. MICHAEL SCHWING (VIII*212); b. 1722, Strasbourg, France; m. ANNA MARGARETTA PARRIS (VIII*213); d. 1781. First Schwing immigrant to America. MICHAEL and MARGARETTA SCHWING had these children:

1. Anna Margaretta Swing; b. 1751, Philadelphia, Pa.; m. Lawrence Etter. Six children.

2. Anna Elizabeth Swing; b. 1755, Philadelphia, Pa.

3. John Peter Swing; b. 26 Aug. 1758, York, Pa.; d. 1761.

4. Johann Jacob Swing; b. 15 June 1763, York, Pa.

5. GEORGE SWING (VII*106); b. 1766, York, Pa.; m. SARAH SWING (VII*107) of Salem Co., N. J., a second cousin;

d. 12 Jan. 1844, Clermont Co., Ohio; bur. Swing Cemetery, Bethel, Ohio. Their children:

a. Michael Swing; b. Feb. 1786, Salem Co., N. J.; m. Ruth Gatch, 19 Dec. 1806. To Clermont Co., Ohio. Their children:

(1) Betsey Swing.
(2) George S. Swing; m. Clarissa Glancy.
(3) Sarah Swing.
(4) Mary Swing.
(5) Ruth G. Swing.
(6) Philip Bergen Swing; m. Mary Hafer. U.S. District Judge in Cincinnati, Ohio.
(7) Aaron H. Swing.
(8) Martha Swing.

b. Samuel Swing; b. 3 July 1788, Salem Co., N. J.; m. (1) Lydia Dial who died in 1827, and (2) Nancy Osborn; d. 21 Feb. 1857; bur. Swing Cemetery, Bethel, Ohio. Samuel and Lydia Swing had seven children, and Samuel and Nancy had two:

(1) Michael W. Swing. To Illinois in 1840 where he was later elected to the state legislature.
(2) Sarah Swing.
(3) Abraham Swing. To Illinois in 1840.
(4) Eleanor Swing.
(5) Jeremiah Swing; b. 1817; d. 12 Feb. 1853.
(6) David Swing.
(7) Shadrach D. Swing. To Illinois in 1840.

* *

(8) Lydia A. Swing; b. 1829; d. 8 Oct. 1852.
(9) Harriet W. Swing; b. 1834; d. 1848.

c. Lawrence Swing; b. 11 Sept. 1790, Salem Co., N.J.; m. Sarah Light; d. 26 Jan. 1872; bur. Swing Cemetery, Bethel, Ohio. Their children:

(1) Ruth Swing.

(2) John S. Swing; b. 1818; d. 1823.

(3) George Light Swing; m. Elizabeth Naylor. Lived in Batavia Township, Clermont Co., Ohio, in 1846 when he was admitted to the Ohio bar. He was a probate judge. George L. Swing and Elizabeth Swing had two sons:

(a) James Black Swing; b. 15 May 1854. Admitted to bat 1877. Was judge of probate court.

(b) Albert Swing; b. May 1856. Clerk of the courts, Hamilton Co., Ohio.

(4) Eliza Swing.

(5) Sarah Swing.

(6) Charles W. Swing; b. 1817; m. Anna _____; d. 1905. Farmer, near Bethel. Their children:

(a) F. Edgar Swing; b. 1854; m. Carrie Riley, daughter of GARRARD P. RILEY (V*26); d. 23 May 1931. Cincinnati educator. Their children: Mrs. Raymond Trasker of Cincinnati, George Swing, and Mary Swing.

(b) C. J. Swing. Farmer, Clermont Co.

(c) Louis J. Swing. Farmer.

(d) William J. Swing.

(e) Albert U. Swing. Eye, ear, nose and throat specialist in Cincinnati.

(7) William L. Swing.

d. Wesley Swing; b. 1793, Salem Co., N. J.; m. Nancy Crane; d. 2 Aug. 1843; bur. Swing Cemetery, Bethel, Ohio. Their children:

(1) George Washington Swing; b. 13 March 1817.
(2) John Collins Swing; m. Larenda _____.
(3) Elizabeth G. Swing.
(4) Merritt J. Swing; m. Marie Caruthers.
(5) Abner Swing; b. 1821.

e. MARY SWING (VI*53); b. 23 April 1797; m. ZACHARIAH RILEY (VI*52); d. 4 Nov. 1865; bur. Swing Cemetery, Bethel.

6. Michael Swing; b. 8 March 1768, York, Pa.; m. (1) Sarah Murphy, 1789, and (2) Susannah Newkirk, 1814; d. 17 Jan. 1834, New Jersey. Preacher in Methodist Episcopal Church, and member of New Jersey legislature. Their children:

a. Charles Swing; b. 4 March 1790; d. 2 Jan. 1860. Physician. Graduated from University of Pennsylvania Medical School.
b. Captain John M. Swing; b. 15 Sept. 1791.
c. Elizabeth Swing; b. 10 Oct. 1794.
d. Polly Swing; b. 1796.
e. Anna Swing; b. 1798.
f. Priscilla Murphy Swing; b. 18 Aug. 1800.
g. George M. Swing; b. 16 Jan. 1803.
h. Simon Sparks Swing; b. 1805.
i Sarah S. Swing; b. 28 March 1808.
j. Michael Coates Swing; b. 15 May 1811.

* *

k. Joseph Swing; b. 28 April 1814.
l. Margaret Swing.
m. Pengan Swing.
n. Rebecca N. Swing; b. 20 Sept. 1820.
o. Benjamin Franklin Swing; b. 10 Oct. 1827.

7. Catharine Swing; b. 27 Nov. 1772.

E. Pierre Schwing; b. 18 Jan. 1726; d. 1761.

F. Marie Magdaleine Schwing; b. 13 Nov. 1727; d. 29 Aug. 1729.

G. Salome Schwing; b. 27 Nov. 1729; m. (1) Jacob Rummel, 8 April 1749, and (2) Johan George Gump, 1770; d. 20 Sept. 1793, York, Pa. Salome and Jacob Rummel had five children, and she and Johan Gump had one.

H. Samuel Schwing; b. 6 June 1732; m. Sarah Diament, 15 March 1760; d. 13 March 1801, Salem Co., N. J. Arrived in America 3 Nov. 1750. Was a farmer at "Swing's Corner" (present-day "Shirley"), Salem Co., N. J. Their children:

1. Jeremiah Swing; b. 31 Dec. 1760.

2. SARAH SWING (VII*107); b. 27 Oct. 1762, Salem Co.; m. GEORGE SWING (VII*106); d. 15 Feb. 1845; bur. Swing Cemetery, Bethel, Ohio.

3. Christiana Swing; b. 27 Oct. 1762.

4. Samuel Swing; b. 4 Nov. 1767; m. Polly Murphy, 25 March 1789. To Kentucky during early 1800's, living on Licking River near present-day Covington and Newport. Engaged in barge building. Their children:

a. Samuel Swing.
b. Betsey Swing.
c. Jeremiah Swing.
d. Mary Ann Swing.
e. David Swing; m. Karenda Gazley, 1825. Steamboat captain. Lived in Cincinnati. Their children:

(1) Alfred J. Swing; b. 12 Aug. 1828; m. Mary A. Norris, 1 May 1851; d. 24 Jan. 1899. Their children:

(a) Lizzie May Swing; b. 8 April 1852.
(b) Leontine Swing; b. 12 Sept. 1854.
(c) Cora Alberta Swing; b. 3 Jan. 1857.
(d) Mamie Swing; b. 8 April 1859.
(e) Stella Swing; b. 16 July 1861.
(f) David Carrick Swing; b. 26 Sept. 1864.
(g) Jennie Carrick Swing; b. 16 Dec. 1866.
(h) Laverna Karenda Swing; b. 1 Dec. 1870.
(i) Alfred J. Swing; b. 2 May 1874.
(j) Sue Zella Swing; b. 24 Feb. 1877.

(2) Rev. David L. Swing; b. 23 Aug. 1830, Cincinnati; m. Elizabeth Porter, 14 July 1854; d. 4 Oct. 1894. Received scholarship from Miami University, Oxford, Ohio, with help from his second cousin, George Light Swing. To Chicago in 1866 where he was preacher at Westminster Church. He lost his church, home and library in the 1871 Chicago fire. He attracted national attention with his thought-provoking sermons. He and Elizabeth Swing had two daughters: Mary Ann and Helen Swing.

f. Phoebe Swing.
g. William Swing. Captain of steamboat *Corsair* that traveled the Ohio and Mississippi Rivers between Cincinnati and New Orleans.
h. Abraham Swing.
i. Julia Swing.

5. Ruth Swing; b.4 Oct. 1769, Salem Co., N. J.; m. _____ Lawrence; d. 8 Sept. 1793. Three children.

6. Abraham Swing; b. 27 Oct. 1771.

I. Abraham Swing; b. 6 Jan. 1735. To America.(?)

J. Daniel Swing; b. 6 May 1737; d. 25 July 1737.

* * * *

ZACHARIAH RILEY (VI*52) and MARY SWING RILEY (VI*53) are said to have had eleven children: nine sons and two daughters. The following information is available on nine of the eleven children as well as other descendants:

A. William Riley; b. Clermont Co., Ohio.

B. GARRARD POLICARP RILEY (V*26); b. 17 Nov. 1821, Clermont Co.; m. SARAH BLAIR (V*27), 1844; d. Marion, Grant Co., Ind. Their children:

1. Mary Melissa (Fannie) Riley; b. 7 Oct. 1844, Clermont Co., Ohio; d. 26 Sept. 1860; bur. Tate Township Cemetery, Bethel, Ohio.

2. Mary Antis (Antice) Riley; b. 1845, Clermont Co.; m. Tom Sherman, said to have been a brother of James S. "Sunny Jim" Sherman, vice president of U. S. from 1909 to 1912 under President Theodore Roosevelt. Their children:

   a. Gedie Sherman; m.(1)_____Eby, and (2) Charles Green, jeweller and engraver.

   b. Sadie Snow Sherman; b. 1886; m. (1) _____ Santell, and (2) Rudy _____; d. in Calif. No issue.

3. ELIZABETH (LIBBIE) CAROLINE RILEY (IV*13); b. 18 Nov. 1846, Clermont Co., Ohio; m. JOHN MASON BAER (IV*12), 8 Nov. 1867; d. 27 Feb. 1929; bur. Riverside Cemetery, Appleton, Wisc. Their children:

   a. Antis (Attie) Mayette Baer; b. 26 Sept. 1868, Black Creek, Outagamie Co., Wisc.; m. Charles Clarence Groff, 22 Nov. 1911; d. March 1946, Pomona, Los Angeles Co., Calif. Their daughter: Catharine Elizabeth Groff; b. 23 Aug. 1913, Ontario, Calif.; m. Donald Newton Colquinn, 5 May 1937.

   b. Charles Otho Baer; b. 22 March 1873, Bethel, Clermont Co., Ohio; d. 2 Aug. 1989, during Spanish-American War at Fortress Monroe, Va.

   c. EDWARD SHERMAN BAER (III*6); b. 28 Oct. 1877, Black Creek, Outagamie Co., Wisc.; m. JULIA ANN VERONICA GREEN (III*7); 18 June 1902,Appleton, Wisc. d. 16 Jan. 1958, Hemet, Calif,; bur. Elsinore Valley Cemetery, Elsinore, Calif.

   d. John Miller Baer; b. 29 March 1886, Black Creek, Outagamie Co., Wisc.; m. Estelle G. Kennedy, 28 Dec. 1909; d. 18 Feb. 1970; bur. Gates of Heaven Cemetery, Washington, D. C. U. S. Rep-

resentative from North Dakota, serving two terms beginning in 1917. Their children:

(1) John Mason Baer; b. 19 Nov. 1911, Minneapolis, Minn.; m. Dorothy Ann _____. Their son: John Mason Baer Jr.; b. 22 June 1955.

(2) Alfred Sherman Baer; b. 28 May 1916, Minneapolis, Minn.; d. Sept. 1971.

(3) Byron Baer; b. 18 June 1919, Minneapolis, Minn.; m. Gabriele Heidenhain, July 1958; div. Their children: Michael, Ann Maria, Joseph, and Teresa Baer.

4. Charles W. Riley; b. 1850, Clermont Co., Ohio.

5. A. E. Riley; b. 1852, Clermont Co., Ohio.

6. Fannie Riley; b. 1855, Clermont Co., Ohio.

7. Carrie P. Riley; b. 17 Oct. 1856, Clermont Co.; m. F. Edgar Swing, 17 Aug. 1882. Their children:

a. Lelah Swing; b. 17 Aug. 1885.
b. Lawrence Lester Swing; b. 8 Feb. 1887.
c. George Blair Swing; 30 Sept. 1895.
d. Mary Antis Swing; b. 29 June 1897.

8. Edward Riley; b. 1858.

C. Sarah Riley; m. John L. McCollum.

D. John Riley; b. 1827; m. Sarah Ellsberry.

E. Smith Riley.

F. James Riley; b. 1830.

G. Michael E. Riley; b. 1832; m. Julia Ann _____. Farmer, Clermont Co. Their children:

1. Mary P. Riley; b. 1852.
2. Catherine Riley; b. 1856.
3. E. L. Riley; b. 1858.
4. E. N. Riley; b. 1859.

H. Rev. Edward S. Riley; b. 1833.

I. Cynthila Riley; b. 1836.

* * * *

APPENDIX A

* * * *

The grand fathers of SARAH BLAIR (V*27), wife of GARRARD POLICARP RILEY (V*26), were ALEXANDER BLAIR and DAVID WHITE. Information on them and their families follows:

ALEXANDER BLAIR (VII*108); b. *ca.* 1764, N. J.; m. _____; d. after 1834, Clermont Co., Ohio. To Clermont Co. by 1802 or earlier. Children:

A. JOHN BLAIR (VI*54); b. 8 Nov. 1788, N. J.; m. ANTIS WHITE (VI*55), 26 Nov. 1812; d. 1 Jan. 1832, Clermont Co., Ohio. Their children:

1. William N. Blair; b. *ca.* 1814, Clermont Co.; m. Mary Gelvin, 24 March 1836.
2. Robert Blair.
3. Elizabeth Ann Blair.
4. SARAH BLAIR (V*27); m. GARRARD POLICARP RILEY (V*26).
5. Alexander Blair; b. 18 March 1820.
6. David M. Blair; b. April 1825.
7. Priscilla Blair; b. 1827; m. Arthur Wyatt, 22 Sept. 1853.
8. Caroline B. Blair; b. 1829; m. Orville Calhoun, 6 Jan. 1850.
9. John Blair; b. 11 Oct. 1831.

B. Robert Blair; b. 1790, N. J.; m. Catherine Iler, 28 Jan. 1817; d. 2 Jan. 1869.

C. Mary Blair; b. 1798; m. John Baird, 27 Nov. 1817.

D. Charles Blair; b. *ca.* 1802, Clermont Co., Ohio; m. Mahola ____.

E. Ananias (?) Blair; b. 1804, Clermont Co.; m. Rebecca Dole, 29 March 1824.

DAVID WHITE (VII*110); b. 1761, N. J.; m. NANCY VAUGHN (VII*111) who died 11 June 1851; d. 3 Sept. 1845. Emigrated to Clermont Co. in 1804. Their children:

A. William N. White; b. *ca.* 1790; m. Martha Clark, 16 June 1814.
B. ANTIS WHITE (VI*55); b. *ca.* 1792; m. JOHN BLAIR (VI*54).
C. David White; m. Jane Shaw, 22 Oct. 1818.
D. Forman White; m. Mary Rogers, 2 April 1817. In War of 1812.

E. Charles White; m. Amanda _____.
F. Elizabeth White.
G. John White; b. 27 Nov. 1807, Bethel, Clermont Co., Ohio; m. Clarissa Rogers, *ca.* 1831; d. Nov. 1903. Their children:

1. Elizabeth White; died in infancy.
2. Orlando White; died at age one.
3. Horace White; died at age eight.
4. Frank White; b. 3 March 1838, Clermont Co.; m.(1) Mary Griffith who was born 1849 and who died Sept. 1885, and (2) Mrs. Henrietta McCaslin, June 1888. Frank White was a member of the 59th Ohio Voluntary Infantry in the Civil War.

Chapter Eleven

GERHARD PEERENBOOM (V*30); b. 1813, Holland; m. (1) LIDEY (LYDIA) JANSEN (JOHNSON) (V*31), 1835, who was born in 1815 in Holland and who died in Outagamie Co., Wisc. in 1864, and (2) Hendrina Aarts; d. 25 May 1872, Little Chute, Outagamie Co. Emigrated to Wisconsin in 1858. Peerenboom family data are inconsistent on the birth dates of the children, all of whom were born in Holland:

A. Julius Peerenboom; b. 25 April 1837, Holland; m. Wilhemina (Minnie) Speel who was born in Holland, daughter of one of the original immigrants to Outagamie Co.; d. 1921; bur. St. Mary's Cemetery, Appleton, Wisc. Owner of dry goods and clothing store in Appleton. Their children, all born in Outagamie Co., Wisc.:

1. Morris S. Peerenboom; b. 1865. Joined his father in the dry goods business.
2. George H. Peerenboom; b. 1867.
3. James A. Peerenboom; b. 1869.
4. Frederick J. Peerenboom; b. 1870.
5. Lydia Peerenboom.
6. Minnie Peerenboom.
7. Isabel Peerenboom.

B. EVELINE PEERENBOOM (IV*15); b. 8 Jan. 1839, Holland; m. JOHN HOEY GREEN (IV*14); d. 10 June 1915; bur. St. Mary's Cemetery, Appleton.

C. Henry Peerenboom; 3 Nov. 1840.

D. Hannah Peerenboom; b. 7 Sept. (?) 1843 (1847?).

E. John Peerenboom; b. 17 Dec. (?) 1847 (1845? 1843?).

F. Arnold Peerenboom; b. 1 Feb. 1849 (1847?); m. Elizabeth Toner, 1875. Worked for his brother in dry goods business in Appleton for five years -- until 1882 at which time he opened his own store known as "The Department Store.: Nine children.

G. Garandus Peerenboom Jr.; b. 13 Jan. 1851.

H. Hendricka (Harriet) Peerenboom; b. 17 March 1855.

* * * *

CHARLES GREEN (V*28); b. 1808, Ireland; m. SOPHIA HOEY (V*29), 27 Dec. 1835, Columbiana Co., Ohio; d. *ca.* 1851, Columbiana Co. All of their children were born in Columbiana Co., Ohio:

A. Mary Green; b. 1837.

B. JOHN HOEY GREEN (IV*14); b. 1 Jan. 1838; m. EVELINE PEERENBOOM (IV*15), 26 Sept. 1860, Outagamie Co.; d. 3 Nov. 1912; bur. St. Mary's Cemetery, Appleton, Wisc. Their children, all born in Appleton:

1. Charles Andrew Green; b. 25 June 1861; m. Hannah Elizabeth Bowan (Bowen); d. Oconto Falls, Wisc.; bur. St. Mary's Cemetery, Appleton. Their children:

   a. Charles Carson Green; b. 25 Nov. 188?; m. Amanda Knuppel. Their children: Beulah Elizabeth Green and Joan Marie Green.

   b. Veronica Josephine Green; b. 1 Feb. 188?; m. Walter A. Johnson, 30 Sept. 1922. Their children:

      (1) Charles M. Johnson; b. 28 Aug. 1924, Appleton.

      (2) Maurine L. Johnson; b. 31 March 1926, Olean, N. Y.; m. James K. Lurquinn, 21 Oct. 1950.

2. William J. Green; b. 28 Aug. 1863; m. Martha Phillips; d. before 1915.

3. Lyda (Lida) Green; b. 25 Aug. 1865; m. Anthony Schreiter. Their daughter: Marian Schreiter.

4. James Arnold Green; b. 25 July 1867; m. Katherine McDermott. Their son: Earl Green; m. Olive Ormsby. Their daughters: Marjorie and Susan Green.

5. Robert H. Green; b. 14 Feb. 1869; m. (1) Alice Phillips, and (2) Vera Gillen. Their children: Robert and Veronica Green.

6. John H. Green; b. 18 Dec. 1870; d. 25 Aug. 1871.

7. Sophie H. Green; b. 28 July 1872; m. Dr. Earl Douglas. No issue.

8. Florabel Green; b. 1 Sept. 1874; d. 1876.

9. JULIA ANN VERONICA GREEN (III*7); b. 18 Dec. 1876; m. EDWARD SHERMAN BAER (III*6), 18 June 1902, Appleton, Wisc.; d. 30 Nov. 1948, Elsinore, Riverside Co., Calif. (See Chapter Twelve of Appendix A for children.)

10. Bessie A. Green; b. 18 July 1881; m. Thomas J. Long, 27 June 1906 who was born 1871 and died in 1945; d. 23 March 1964; bur. St. Mary's Cemetery, Appleton. Their children:

    a. Evelyn M. Long; b. 30 July 1907; m. Graham K. Breck, April 1932.

    b. Howard J. Long; b. 13 Aug. 1909; m. (3) Naomi White.

    c. Harriet Long; b. 13 Aug. 1909; m. Frank Bilek; d. 24 Nov. 1973.

    d. Elizabeth A. Long; b. 2 March 1914; m. Horace L. Davis, 18 April 1933.

    e. Thomas G. Long; b. 7 Aug. 1916; m. 25 April 1940.

C. William Green; b. 1841.

D. James Green; b. 1843.

E. Margaret Green; b. 1848.

F. Charles Green; b. 1850.

Chapter Twelve

EDWARD SHERMAN BAER (III*6) and JULIA ANN VERONICA BAER (III*7) had five children. Data on these five as well as other descendants follow:

APPENDIX A

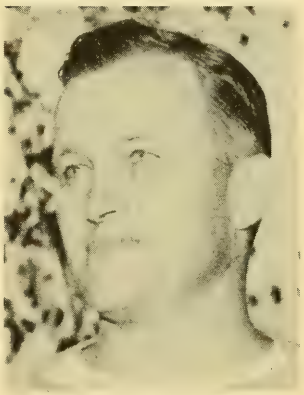
A. John Green Baer; b. 1 July 1903, Appleton, Wisc.; m. Ann Margaretha Wegforth, 23 Sept. 1928, Chicago; d. 23 Feb. 1966; bur. Elsinore Valley Cemetery, Elsinore, Calif. Their children:

1. Rev. John Edward Baer; b. 16 April 1930, Streator, Ill.; d. 1976.

2. Alan Lawrence Baer; b. 5 April 1933, Streator, Ill.; m. Victoria Amador, 8 Oct. 1966. Their children, all born in California:

   a. Ann Michele Baer; b. 29 Aug. 1967, Los Angeles.
   b. Marc Vincent Baer; b. 3 Dec. 1968, Inglewood.
   c. Jesse John Baer; b. 13 July 1970, Inglewood.
   d. Rachel Elena Baer; b. 6 April 1973, Chula Vista.
   e. Anthony Joaquin Baer; b. 7 July 1975, Chula Vista.

B. Charles Edward Baer; b. 24 Sept. 1905, Glendive, Mont.; m. Anne Martha Lichliter, 23 Dec. 1931, Gary, Ind. "Chuck" coached at the high school level in Gary where his football teams won ten championships. He became head football coach at the University of Detroit in 1945. In 1950 he left coaching and became a manufacturers agent, organizing Baer Enterprises Inc. in Detroit. Chuck Baer was inducted into the Indiana Football Hall of Fame in 1970, and the University of Detroit Athletic Hall of Fame in 1979. He received his masters degree from Indiana University in 1942. Chuck and Anne Baer have two sons and one daughter:



CHARLES EDWARD BAER

1. Charles Edward Baer Jr; b. 5 Jan. 1933, Gary, Ind.; m Joan Collins, 8 June 1954, Birmingham, Mich. Their children:

   a. Charles Edward Baer III; b. 6 March 1955, Lafayette, Ind.

   b. Joan Elizabeth Baer; b. 8 Feb. 1956, Warwick, Va. m. Christopher Costello, 20 June 1978.

   c. Anne Marie Baer; b. 27 April 1959, Birmingham, Mich.

   d. Susan Christine Baer; b. 11 Jan. 1966, Birmingham, Mich.

2. Robert Ferrel Baer; b. 9 Aug. 1941, Gary, Ind.; m. Mary Ann Woods, 13 June 1954, Nashville, Tenn. Their

children, all born in Birmingham, Mich.:

a. Robert Woods Baer; b. 6 May 1966.
b. Nancy Dillon Baer; b. 13 Aug. 1967.
c. Elizabeth O'Donnel Baer; b. 2 Dec. 1970.
d. John Ferrel Baer; b. 2 Sept. 1973.

3. A. Melanie Baer; b. 29 July 1949, Detroit, Mich.; m. John Brent, 28 Oct. 1972, Birmingham, Mich. Their son: Kyle William Brent; b. 20 Feb. 1979, Atlanta,Ga.

C. ELIZABETH CATHERINE BAER (II*3); b. 24 April 1908, Glendive, Montana; m. WILLIAM FRANCIS O'DELL (II 2), 10 June 1933, Lafayette, Ind. (See next section in this appendix for children.)

D. Margaret Estella Baer; b. 17 Sept. 1917, Streator, Ill.; m. (1) Sherwood Wallace, and (2) Anthony Vincent Keyes, 8 Aug. 1948, who was born 1914 and died 1979. Peg Baer had one daughter by "Tex" Wallace and a second daughter by "Tony" Keyes:

1. JoAnn Wallace Keyes; b. 16 June 1942, Upland, Calif.; m. Michael Ollila who died 1970, and (2) Heinrich Ahrens, 1 Oct. 1971. Children: Mike and Laurie Ollila.

2. Mary Kathrine Keyes; b. 28 April 1953, Upland, Calif.; m. Rick Waye, 26 Dec. 1975; div. 1977.

1944: Ann Wegforth Baer, Lou Barber, BESS O'DELL, and Peg Keyes.

E. Ann Louise Baer; b. 5 Feb. 1922, Streator, Ill.; m. William G. Barber,16 April 1941. Their children:

1. Julia Ann Barber; b. 11 June 1942, Riverside Calif.; m. (1) Derek Bell, div., and (2) William W. Lentz, 18 March 1978. Twins, born to Julia Ann Barber and Derek Bell, are: Lorie and Lyne.

2. Jan Elizabeth Barber; b. 31 Aug. 1946, Riverside, Calif.; m. (1) John Nelson, div., and (2) Gayle M. Spinney, 22 Sept. 1976. Children: Veronica and Jodi Nelson.

3. Joyce Elaine Barber; b. 28 July 1947, Riverside; m. Mark H. Long, 21 Sept. 1969. Their children: Kristi and Katie Long.

4. Jeanette Louise Barber; b. 20 March 1952, Riverside; m. John A. Leamon, 17 June 1973. Their children: Carey and Dustin Leamon.

5. Judith Marie Barber; b. 4 Aug. 1954, Riverside.

* * * *

FRANK TREVOR O'DELL (III 4) and GARNETT AIKMAN O'DELL (III 5) had three children, two daughters and one son. Data on the three children as well as other descendants follow:

A. Emilie Ghent O'Dell; b. 31 July 1902, Amador, Sanilac Co., Mich.; m. Claude Whitson Oakes, 30 Aug. 1924, LaGrange, Ill., who was born 1897 and died 1963. Their children:

1. James Henry Oakes; b. 5 March 1927, Oak Park, Ill.; m. (1) Maurine Wilkinson, 20 Oct. 1946, and (2) Patricia Ann Vainisi, 23 July 1960. He had five children by his first wife and two by his second:

EMILIE O'DELL and Jack Oakes - 1924.

a. Karyn Lee Oakes; b. 24 June 1947; m. (1) Richard Ohnmeiss, 20 Aug. 1967, and (2) David Guilliaum, 19 May 1972. Their son: David Brian; b. 29 Feb. 1972.

b. Steven James Oakes; b. 25 Dec. 1949; m. Mary Jo Trochim, 21 Jan. 1972. One son: Steven Christopher Oakes; b, 12 Sept. 1978.

c. Wendy Lynn Oakes; b. 6 July 1953; m. (1) Daniel Meinders, 9 Sept. 1972, (2) Gordon Meyers, 10 March 1976, and (3) Daniel Welty, 18 June 1977. One child by her first husband, and one by her third:

(1) Mark Menno; b. 1 Feb. 1973.

* *

(2) Maurine Daniel Welty; b. 10 April 1979.

d. Kimberly Ann Oakes; b. 20 Aug. 1955; m. Daniel Bailey, 28 April 1973. Their children:

(1) Greg Bailey; b. 24 Oct. 1973.
(2) Steven Bailey; b. 10 Dec. 1975.

e. Patrick Whitson Oakes; b. 7 Sept. 1958; m. Julie Benisch; 25 May 1980.

* *

f. James Michael Oakes; b. 7 July 1962.

g. Jerome Anthony Oakes; b. 20 Dec. 1965.

2. William Claude Oakes; b. 9 Jan. 1929, Oak Park, Ill.; m. JoAnn Elaine Lutz Tidholm, 6 Oct. 1951. Their children:

a. Germaine Reneé Oakes; b. 7 Aug. 1953; m. Robert J. Dieter; div. Their son: Ryan Dieter, b. 1974.

b. Marilee Elizabeth Oakes; b. 29 Oct. 1954.

3. Richard Frank Oakes; b. 5 April 1937, Aurora, Ill.

B. Agnes O'Dell; b. 8 May 1905, Carsonville, Sanilac Co., Mich.

C. WILLIAM FRANCIS O'DELL (II 2); b. 24 Jan. 1909; Detroit, Mich.; m. ELIZABETH CATHERINE BAER (II *3), 10 June 1933, Lafayette, Ind. Their children:

1. MARGARET LOUISE O'DELL (I 1); b. 29 May 1937, Berwyn, Ill.; m. J. Thomas Pinckard, 30 Aug. 1958; div. 1976. Their children:

a. Julie Ellen Pinckard; b. 22 Sept. 1959.
b. Eric Pinckard; b. 22 Nov. 1961.
c. Steven Scott Pinckard; b. 17 March 1965.

AGNES O'DELL'S BIRTHPLACE
Carsonville, Michigan

2. WILLIAM GHENT O'DELL (I 1); b. 4 July 1942; d. 24 Dec. 1942; bur. LaGrange, Ill.

3. DAVID TREVOR O'DELL (I 1); b. 9 March 1944, Berwyn, Ill.; m. Virginia Ann Findlay, 29 Jan. 1966. Their children:

a. David Trevor O'Dell Jr.; b. 9 April 1968.
b. Derek Alston O'Dell, b. 9 April 1970.

Appendix B

Areas of Further Genealogical Research

Genealogical research is never ending. This book merely records what was known to one genealogist at the time of writing. For many ancestors, only their names are known. For many others even their names have been lost to subsequent generations. However, though sufficient information appears to have been obtained, on many ancestral lines the data are inconclusive and circumstantial. Thus, much research remains for future genealogists to pursue. This appendix suggests several fruitful areas for continued study of these "Twelve Families ...."

Aikman

This is one of the better documented ancestral lines. However, inconsistencies remain regarding JOHN AIKMAN (IX 320) and whether he came to America direct from Scotland or from Ireland as an "Ulster Scot." Also, because this book emphasizes the Canadian line, the United States descendants of ALEXANDER AIKMAN (VIII 160) are only partially covered.

Baer

Two questions lurk regarding the Baer lineage. First, the relationship between JOHN JACOB BAER (VI*48) and the immigrant CHRISTOPHEL BAER (VIII*192) remains unvalidated. Strong family legend and circumstantial evidence suggest the relationship but the link remains unconfirmed. Second, if the kinship does in fact exist, then more information is needed to strengthen the HEINRICH BAER (VII*96) and JOHN JACOB BAER (VI*48) ties of blood. Also, the early settlement of this JOHN JACOB BAER in either Seneca or Wyandot County in Ohio needs further study.

Gant-Ghent

The ancestry of THOMAS GHENT (VII 88) remains clouded. One school of thought leans toward EDWARD GANT while another favors William Gant as THOMAS' father. This should be resolved. Also, the Gant immigrants to America need considerably more research.

Green

Although CHARLES GREEN (V*28) is known to have immigrated to the United States from Ireland as an "Ulster Scot," nothing is known regarding his ancestry. "Green" is a well-researched name in "Scotch-Irish" genealogical circles, and further research could readily reveal much regarding the earlier generations of this Green line.

Horning

The Horning family from Germany through Pennsylvania and into Canada is well authenticated. However, descendants of PETER HORNING (VII 92) in the United States have not been covered to any great extent in this book.

Michell

JAMES MICHELL (VI 34) is known to have lived in Ireland, but EMMA LEONORA ROOKS O'DELL (IV 9) long contended that he emigrated from France to Ireland. He was said to have been active in the French Revolution, the revolutionary movement that rocked France between 1787 and 1799. This phase of the Michell research has never been conducted.

Odell/O'Dell

BENJAMIN ODELL (VI 32) is thought by some Odell genealogists to be the son of Jonas Odell (b. 1763) who married Lucy Milda Weaver, based on Bible records of the Jonas Odell family showing BENJAMIN born on 4 July 1796. The assumption is made that after Jonas' death when BENJAMIN was seven the latter was sent to his uncle, SAMUEL ODELL, and raised by him. This theory, however, is refuted by information submitted by EMMA LEONORA ROOKS O'DELL. In addition to the BENJAMIN question is the issue of whether JOSEPH ODELL (X 512) is in fact the father of AUGUSTINE ODELL SR. (IX 256).

Peerenboom

An interesting study would be learning more about the ancestral Peerenboom family in the area of Hervell, Holland from which GERHARDT PEERENBOOM (V*30) emigrated in 1858.

Riley

Excellent records exist on the descendants of NINIAN RILEY THE ELDER (VIII*208) However, whether SOLOMON RILEY is the father of NINIAN has not been substantiated. Research into the European origin of this Riley family, thought to be England, offers future genealogists opportunities that could yield fruitful information.

Rooks

Genealogical data in England are truly excellent. making possible additional research on the ancestors of THOMAS ROOKS THE ELDER (VI 36). Too, more complete information on the descendants of his son, THOMAS ROOKS SR. (V 18) in the United States would add to the Rooks story.

Springer

The records on this family are superb. It is perhaps the most authenticated genealogical research of any of the twelve families covered in this book. However, the emphasis of this history is on the Canadian branch of the Springer family, leaving room for Springer genealogists to up-date the American descendants.

Swing

Prior research on the Swing family has been well conducted and published. Genealogists can add to the Swing story by pursuing the French Huguenot lives of HANS MARTIN SCHWING (X*848) and his son, JEAN MARTIN SCHWING (IX*424), in the Strasbourg area just west of the Rhine in France.

Appendix C

Diary of a Genealogical Trip

Gathering information for this book involved the making of several dozen trips by the author and his wife throughout the country, from North Carolina on the south, Wisconsin to the northwest, and Vermont on the east. These trips spanned many years.

This is a log for the last genealogical trip taken during 1980. The data collection emphasis on this final trip was on the Baer side of the family inasmuch as the O'Dell research for this book had already been completed.

5 September -- Left Shell Point Village in Fort Myers mid-morning, stopping in Sarasota where we dropped off several family Bibles at a bindery to be re-bound. Arrived at home of Bev and Cooter Hambrick in Tampa with whom we stayed overnight. The Hambricks are long-time friends, formerly of Hinsdale, Illinois.

6 September -- Drove to Marianna, Florida where we stayed overnight at a Holiday Inn.

7 September -- Drove to New Orleans, staying at the Chateau LaMoyne on Rue Dauphine in the French Quarter. Ate that evening at Broussard's. After dinner walked to Bourbon Street. The nature of the crowd there made us uncomfortable.

8 September -- Drove to Vicksburg, Mississippi, arriving mid-afternoon. Stayed at the Holiday Inn across from the National Military Park, site of the Civil War Vicksburg Siege. Saw slides of battle at Park's Museum. Drove the 18 miles along the Battlefield tour in the Park. We located the monument of the 120th Ohio Voluntary Infantry of which JOHN MASON BAER was a part. Our goal in Vicksburg was to retrace the steps of JOHN MASON BAER during his weeks of participating in the battles of the area.

9 September -- Talked in morning to Park's Battlefield Historian. Drove to site of Chickasaw Bayou battlefield. Took pictures. That afternoon drove into Louisiana, retracing Grant's March from Milliken's Bend to Hard Times Landing. Took pictures.

10 September -- Drove to Port Gibson, Miss., stopping first at Grand Gulf where the Union forces attempted their landing across the Mississippi. Took battlefield tour, taking pictures. Car became stuck on remote road late in afternoon. Began walking down road for help, but a very

pleasant young black man stopped and we returned to the car where his truck pulled us loose.

11 September -- Took additional pictures of the Chickasaw Battle area. Then left for Arkansas Post in Arkansas where JOHN MASON BAER had participated in the battle. Stayed that night in Helena, Arkansas.

12 September -- Drove to Evansville, Indiana, where son Dave and Gini O'Dell and their two sons were waiting for us. Had great dinner on their terrace where Dave prepared steaks for us.

13 September -- Breakfast on the terrace, after which we went to two soccer games in which grandsons Trevor and Derek took part. Won one; tied the other. Had dinner that evening at the Evansville Country Club where Dave and Gini are members.

14 September -- Relaxed around the house, playing ping pong and throwing the football around. Trev and Derek picked our eating place for that evening: McDonald's. Packed for early departure the next morning.

15 September -- Got up quietly, took the dog Clover out for an airing, and were on the road before six. Stopped at Point Pleasant, Ohio, birthplace of U.S. Grant. Then on to Bethel, Ohio, where we spent the afternoon with Hermon E. and Ruhama Fagley who have long been active in Bethel and Clermont County historical circles. We first met them in about 1974, and they have been most helpful in directing our efforts in this area.

We again visited the Swing Family Cemetery west of Bethel where I took a couple of new pictures of the gravestone of ZACHARIAH and MARY SWING RILEY. Then on to Salt Aire, where Nancy Riley Clarke Salt lived during her last years. We also visited and took pictures of the home of GEORGE SWING where MARY SWING RILEY was raised. Used for storage, it is in a somewhat deteriorated condition, but the owner talked about improving the roof.

We said goodbye to the Fagleys, and headed for Columbus, Ohio, but the early morning rising got to us and we stopped in Wilmington, Ohio, staying at the R & W Motel.

16 September -- Arrived at the Ohio Historical Society in Columbus about mid-morning. This is one of the best historical society libraries we have visited. It was our third time here.

We obtained information on the role of GARRARD RILEY in the Underground Railroad, as well as some data on his

student days at nearby Granville College (now Denison). Checked on some Census data on CHARLES GREEN, preparatory to our visit later in the week to eastern Ohio. Obtained some Scotch-Irish information. Photostated some historical descriptions of the Battle of Ft. Meigs of the War of 1812 in northwestern Ohio where ZACHARIAH RILEY was a private in the battle as a member of the Kentucky Militia.

Drove to Tiffin, Ohio, in Seneca County, where we had dinner with Cher Bibler, one of the truly interested Baer genealogists. She publishes the *Baer Newsletter*. We hadn't seen Cher in a couple of years, but this did represent our tenth visit to Seneca County, several being made before we knew Cher and her husband, Dan. We had dinner at the Pioneer Restaurant in Tiffin, one of the best we have enjoyed on the trip. We compared notes on Baer genealogy with Cher, especially the REV. JOHN JACOB BARE whose gravestone for years has been near a private cemetery south of town.

17 September -- Cher suggested we talk with the Roy Wagners who are said to be descendants of the REV. JOHN JACOB BAER. Unfortunately they had no information that had not already appeared in the Augustine-Foust history of Bares. We did talk with the Rev. Daniel Bare who promised to send us a copy of the original Jacob Baer preaching certificate.

Drove out to the location of the JACOB BARE gravestone where, on an earlier visit, we discovered the marker had been toppled down into a ravine to a small river bed. Today after climbing down the steep river bank, the stone was nowhere to be found. We talked to Cher Bibler about this before we left town for Ashland, Ohio, where we visited Ashland College. We had hoped to learn about JOHN JACOB BAER JR. who once worked the Ashland Circuit for the Winebrenner church, but to no avail.

From Ashland we headed for Lisbon, Ohio, in Columbiana County, just a few miles from the Ohio River. That evening we spent a few hours at the Lepper Library of Lisbon where we reviewed the county's histories and some vital statistics. We discovered the marriage listing of CHARLES and SOPHIA GREEN, learning also that SOPHIA's maiden name was "HOEY." Prior information always listed her as a "Huff" or "Hough." Stayed that night in a small hotel with no telephone but lots of noise and uncomfortable beds.

18 September -- Returned to Lepper Library again to check on whatever we could learn about the Hoey family in Columbiana County. Then to the County Courthouse where we secured probate papers on CHARLES GREEN.

Continuing east, we left Lisbon, crossed the Ohio River, and drove to Somerset County, Pa., another county we have visited at least a dozen times over the years. We were specifically interested in information on the historic Glades and Forbes Roads, both of which ran near the location of early Baers of the county.

19 September -- Our next stop was Wintergreen a resort area in Nelson County, Virginia. We had long been looking for a possible vacation spot in either Virginia or North Carolina, a place where we could spend a couple of months a year during the summer. We looked at several condominium possibilities, and then set out for Charlottesville, 45 minutes to the east where we had lived for some 14 years before moving to Florida.

We stayed with Beth and Irv Fischer, long-time friends. That evening they had a dinner party for us, along with their daughter Cathy, her husband Bill Kahn, Barbara and Duke Eldridge, their daughter Ann and her husband Steve Kohlter.

20 September -- As guests of Bill Shenkir, dean of the McIntire School of Commerce at the University of Virginia, and his wife Missy, we watched North Carolina State defeat Virginia in football. That evening we took the Shenkirs out to dinner at Holly Meade, a quaint restaurant north of Charlottesville.

21 September -- Tice and Dick Brandt gave a delightful brunch for us out at their newly constructed country home in western Albemarle County. Some 30 guests were in attendance. That afternoon the Fischers and we drove out to Wintergreen where we decided to purchase one of condos we had looked at the day before.

That evening we watched the debate between Ronald Reagan and John Anderson, presidential candidates, with President Carter abstaining from participation. Packed that evening in preparation for a six o'clock departure the next morning.

22 September -- Drove to Washington, D.C., where Bessie had a 9:30 dental appointment. Then to the National Archives to obtain new data on Baers and Greens on Maryland and Ohio, plus tax data on the Swings of Clermont County, Ohio.

23 September -- Back to the National Archives in the early morning for some data that had escaped us the day before. Then to the Daughters of the American Revolution Library for missing Swing data and more information on the Scotch-Irish. We have spent some 100 hours

in the D. A. R. Library over the years. It is to our way of thinking the best genealogical library in the country, along with the Public Library of New York City and the Burton Collection in Detroit's public library.

24 September -- Met with Marilynn Webster in Baltimore. Her secretarial service is preparing the manuscript for the printer. Next saw Ann Favand of Gateway Press who will print the history. Stayed that night at the Sheraton Inn across from Johns Hopkins Hospital in Baltimore.

25 September -- Spent the day at the Maryland Historical Society in downtown Baltimore. Obtained good information on the United Brethren Church, in which the JOHN JACOB BAERS, both Jr. and Sr., were preachers. Checked on details of the Diary of Christian Newcomer, United Brethren circuit rider, that mentions visits to Somerset County as well as a visit to Ft. Ball (now Tiffin) in Seneca County, Ohio. Copied some Gant genealogical data, describing some Gants who came to Maryland from Connecticut. We could learn virtually nothing more about the Rileys in Maryland.

26 September -- Drove to Easton, Pa., the county seat of Lehigh County, first home of the Baers in this country. Secured a copy of the original CHRISTOPHEL BAER will. No early land transfers were available. Apparently, all of these are recorded in Harrisburg.

Next was the Lehigh County Historical Library in Allentown where we discovered an early map of the county showing the locations of the CHRISTOPHEL BAER farms in North Whitehall Township. Reviewed a history of the Township. Then we drove out into the area where CHRISTOPHEL and his brothers settled.

27 September -- Again drove into North Whitehall Township, seeking some evidence of the early life of CHRISTOPHEL BAER. Traversed almost the entire length of Coplay Creek on which he had built his mill. That afternoon was again spent at the Allentown library where we picked up some tax data on HEINRICH BAR. We photostated the early map located the day before. Late that afternoon we drove to Valley Forge, Pa., where we had hoped to see John Mason Baer, his wife Dorothy Ann, and their son Mason. John is BESSIE'S first cousin. Luck turned against us. They had planned to return from Europe the day before, but a delay set in for some reason and they did not arrive in time.

28 September -- So, we returned to Allentown for one more shot at North Whitehall Township. Took pictures of the graveyard near the old Union Church. That afternoon we drove to Hagerstown, Maryland.

29 September -- Spent the morning at the Miller House of the Hagerstown Historical Society. Obtained more details of Christian Newcomer's circuit riding days, along with more information on the United Brethren Church. That afternoon we visited the Western Maryland Room of the city's public library, checking on Baers in Maryland as well as in Rockingham County, Virginia. Learned of the dates of JOHN JACOB BAER'S entry into and departure from the Pennsylvania Conference United Brethren Church.

30 September -- Drove from Hagerstown to Wintergreen where we closed on our condominium.

1 October -- Spent the day in our new place; took pictures; ate at Coppermine Restaurant in Wintergreen.

2 October -- Drove to Yadkinville, Yadkin County, North Carolina, where we were able to pick up an historical map of early Yadkin County which, when the Rileys arrived in North Carolina in the late 1780's, was a part of Surry County. The map showed the probable locations of the NINIAN and GARRARD RILEY farms as well as their neighbor Issac Ellsberry. Drove on to Charlotte, North Carolina that evening.

3 October -- Spent most of the morning with Lorraine Binder, the head of Market Facts' Charlotte central interviewing location. Lorraine was one of the first employees of Market Facts, having been hired in about 1950. From there we drove on south, stopping for the night at Brunswick, Georgia.

4 October -- Arrived in Orlando early in afternoon, staying with my sister, Agnes. She prepared a great meal, a treat after not having had a home-cooked meal in weeks.

5 October -- Drove to Tampa where we again stayed with the Hambricks.

6 October -- Headed for Shell Point Village in Fort Myers, but first stopped in Sarasota to pick up the old family Bibles that had been re-bound. Arrived home at 4:00 P. M. We had driven 5,500 miles.

APPENDIX D

UNIVERSAL RELATIONSHIP CHART

HORIZONTAL

RELATIONSHIP TO COMMON PROGENITOR

VERTICAL

RELATIONSHIP TO COMMON PROGENITOR

C P	SON	G SON	GG SON	2 GG SON	3 GG SON	4 GG SON	5 GG SON	6 GG SON
SON	BRO	NEP	G NEP	GG NEP	2 GG NEP	3 GG NEP	4 GG NEP	5 GG NEP
G SON	NEP	1cou	1c1r	1c2r	1c3r	1c4r	1c5r	1c6r
GG SON	G NEP	1c1r	2cou	2c1r	2c2r	2c3r	2c4r	2c5r
2 GG SON	GG NEP	1c2r	2c1r	3cou	3c1r	3c2r	3c3r	3c4r
3 GG SON	2 GG NEP	1c3r	2c2r	3c1r	4cou	4c1r	4c2r	4c3r
4 GG SON	3 GG NEP	1c4r	2c3r	3c2r	4c1r	5cou	5c1r	5c2r
5 GG SON	4 GG NEP	1c5r	2c4r	3c3r	4c2r	5c1r	6cou	6c1r
6 GG SON	5 GG NEP	1c6r	2c5r	3c4r	4c3r	5c2r	6c1r	7cou
7 GG SON	6 GG NEP	1c7r	2c6r	3c5r	4c4r	5c3r	6c2r	7c1r
8 GG SON	7 GG NEP	1c8r	2c7r	3c6r	4c5r	5c4r	6c3r	7c2r
9 GG SON	8 GG NEP	1c9r	2c8r	3c7r	4c6r	5c5r	6c4r	7c3r
10 GG SON	9 GG NEP	1c10r	2c9r	3c8r	4c7r	5c6r	6c5r	7c4r
11 GG SON	10 GG NEP	1c11r	2c10r	3c9r	4c8r	5c7r	6c6r	7c5r
12 GG SON	11 GG NEP	1c12r	2c11r	3c10r	4c9r	5c8r	6c7r	7c6r

HOW TO USE THIS CHART: Locate your relationship to the Common Progenitor (CP) in the vertical column at left. Then locate the relationship of the person you are tracing to the CP on the horizontal line at top.

The relationship is determined by following your position (at left) out to the right, until it meets the column down from the position at top of the person you are tracing.

Example: You are a 2 GG Son of the CP. The person you are tracing is a GG Son of the CP. The box where these positions meet shows that you and your relative are Second Cousins, one generation "removed."

KEY: CP Common Progenitor — Bro Brother or sister
C Cousin — Nep Nephew or niece
Cou Cousin — GGS Great-grand-son
G Grand son or daughter — r Generations removed

"Time goes, you say? Ah no!

Alas, time stays; we go."

Austin Dobson --

The Paradox of Time

INDEX

AARTS
Hendrina, 371, 474
ABECKLEY
Elizabeth, 224
ABBOT
Col. John, 124
ABBOTT
Mary, 429
ADAMS
John Quincy, 227
Nellie, 429
AGNEW
Mrs., 49
AHRENS
Heinrich, 478
AIKEN
Polly, 442
AIKMAN
Agnes, 56, 57, 75
ALEXANDER (VI 40), 54, 56, 71, 78, 79, 81, 82, 96, 97, 99, 430, 433, 435
ALEXANDER (VIII 160), 54, 57-60, 62-65, 412, 428, 481
Alexander, 56, 57, 103, 104, 429, 439
Alexander Jr., 59
Alma, 434
Basil Martin, 434
Catherine Elizabeth, 434
Charles Cornwell, 434
Charles Edsel, 434
Charlotte Agnes, 434
Clara, 101
Clara Elizabeth, 429
Clarence F., 437
Clifford Leroy, 434
Daniel Showers, 99, 433, 434
David, 436
David Springer, 99, 433, 434
Dorothy, 437
Earl A., 111, 437
Earl H., 437
Earl H. Jr., 437
Eleanor, 437
Elizabeth, 428
Esther, 428
Eugene Francis, 434
AIKMAN (Continued)
Frances Hammill, 434
GARNETT EMILY BARKER (III 5) (see O'DELL)
George, 55
Hannah, 439
Hannah Ryerson, 99, 434
HANNAH SHOWERS (VII 80), 54, 65, 66, 67, 72, 78, 428, 429, 430
Harold Charles, 434
Harry Stockwell, 437
Ila Ruth, 434
James, 55
James Emmett, 429
Jane, 429
Janet, 56
JEAN (IX 320), 54, 56
JOHN (VII 80), 54, 58, 59, 64, 65, 67-75, 77, 78, 94, 96, 102, 428-430
JOHN (IX 320), 54-56, 481
John, 55, 78
John Jr., 67, 71, 79, 81, 430
John Alexander, 97, 100, 433
John Hervey, 64, 429
John Wilson, 428
Lena Margaret, 429
Levi Jr., 428
Levi Sr., 56, 59, 63, 64, 69, 71, 77, 78, 428
Margaret, 56, 428
Marjorie, 437
Mary, 97, 428, 430
Mary Alvernon, 429
MARY ANN HOPKINS (V 21), 82, 97, 103, 106, 107, 433, 436
MARY CATHERINE "MINNIE" GHENT (IV 11) (see also BOOTH), 30, 48, 53, 82, 100-102, 104, 105, 107, 111, 198, 200, 214, 215, 389, 390, 421, 426, 436
MARY ELIZABETH LEWIS (VIII 161) 54, 57, 58, 428
Mary Ellen, 435
MARY MARGARET SPRINGER (VI 41), 54, 81, 82, 96, 97, 214,

AIKMAN (Continued)
430, 432, 433, 435
Mary Margaret, 434
Michael, 430, 437
Miles Stanley, 434
Nancy Catherine Elizabeth, 439
Oliver Tiffany, 99, 433, 434
Patti Lynn, 437
Peter Augustus, Dr., 97, 99, 435
Phylis, 434
Richard, 103, 104, 107, 430, 436
RICHARD SPRINGER (V 20), 82, 97, 99, 100, 103, 105-107, 214, 433, 436
Richard Springer Jr., 436
Samuel Oliver, 99, 102, 103, 111, 436, 437
Sarah, 428
Sarah Ann, 100, 433, 436
William, 55, 56, 429
WILLIAM ALEXANDER (IV 10), 30, 53, 82, 99-106, 110, 111, 198, 200, 424, 436, 437
ALLEN
Ethan, 124
ALLNUT
Guthrie, 464
AMADOR
Victoria, 477
ANDERSON
John, 487
ANDREWS
C. C., Gen., 273
M. A., 141
ANDRUS
Ellen, 434
Enoch John, 434
Sarah, 434
ARMSTRONG
Jerry, 437
R. Alison, 437, 420
Walter A., 437
Walter A. Jr., 437
AUGUSTINE
Velma, 249
AWBREY
DOROTHY (X*841), 463
AYLESWORTH
Lucretia, 443
BAER/BARE/BEAR (see also BAR)
A. Melanie, 478
Abraham, 462
Adam, 457, 461
BAER/BARE/BEAR (Continued)
Alfred Sherman, 472
Alan Lawrence, 383, 477
Ann Marie, 472
Ann Michele, 477
Ann Louise (see BARBER)
Ann Margaretha Wegforth, 381, 383, 400, 402, 477, 478
Anna Margaret, 459
Anna Margaretha, 461, 462
ANNA NANCY PALMER (V*25), 220, 249, 250, 253, 267, 334, 335
Anne Lichliter, 382, 477
Anne Marie, 477
Anthony Joaquin, 477
Antis Mayette (see GROFF)
Appalonia/Apollonia
238, 456
Barbara, 457, 459, 462
Bella, 459
Benjamin, 462
Betsy, 461
Byron, 472
Caroline Trexler, 458
Catherine, 456, 462
Catherine Elizabeth, 461
Charles, 459, 460, 461
Charles Edward, 367-369, 374, 376, 379, 380, 382, 477
Charles Edward III, 477
Charles Edward Jr., 477
Charles Otho, 336, 345, 346, 471
Clinton, 459
Cora, 458
Cornelia Ellen, 248, 250
Daniel, 456, 457, 459, 461
David, 460, 462
Dianna Christina, 457
Dorothy Ann, 472, 488
Edna, 458
EDWARD SHERMAN (III*6), 300, 338, 344, 349, 351, 364-383, 397, 400, 402, 471, 476
Elisabeth, 461, 462
Elizabeth, 457, 460
ELIZABETH CAROLINE "LIBBIE" RILEY (IV*13), 220, 226, 271-273, 300, 322, 325, 329, 344, 335, 338, 341, 345-349, 373, 376-384, 396, 471
ELIZABETH CATHERINE "BESS" (II*3) (see O'DELL)
Elizabeth Catherine, 459

BAER/BARE/BEAR (Continued)
Elizabeth O'Donnel, 478
Ella, 459
Emma, 458, 460
Estelle G. Kennedy, 471
Eva, 461
Eva Elizabeth, 460
George Baker, 458
George E., 460
George Frederick, 458
Hannah, 460, 461
Harry, 458
HEINRICH (VII*96), 220, 238, 240-243, 456, 481, 488
Henry, 459, 461, 462
Herman/Hermanus Ludwig, 458
J. Augustus, 460
J. Pierce, 460
Jacob, 238, 248, 249, 457, 459-462
Jessie John, 477
Joan Elizabeth, 477
Johannes, 225, 228, 229, 456, 461
John, 238, 247, 248, 461, 462
John Adam, 460, 462
John Adam Jr., 461
John Edward, Msgr., 383, 477
John Ferrel, 478
John Green "Jack," 364, 368, 369, 374, 376, 380-383, 400, 477
John Jacob, 237, 243, 456
JOHN JACOB JR. (V*24), 220,243, 247, 248, 250-253, 267, 334, 335
John Jacob Jr., 457
JOHN JACOB SR. (VI*48), 220, 241, 244-248, 456, 481, 486, 489
JOHN MASON (IV* 12), 220, 226, 227, 247-273, 300, 329, 334, 335, 338, 339, 341, 346, 351, 365, 375-378, 380, 396, 412, 471, 484, 485
John Mason, 338, 472, 488
John Mason Jr., 472, 488
John Miller, 338, 342, 371-373, 377, 471
John P., 462
John Paul, 462
John Peter "Red," 462
Jonas, 460, 462
Jonathan, 461, 462
Joseph, 462, 472

BAER/BARE/BEAR (Continued)
JULIA (ANN VERONICA) GREEN (III*7), 300, 351, 352, 362-371, 375, 378-380, 383, 389, 396, 397, 400, 402, 476
Lewis, 462
Lydia, 460, 461
Magdalena, 456, 462
Manasses, 460
Marc Vincent, 477
Margaret, 457
Margaret Estelle (see KEYES)
MARGARETTA (VII*49), 241, 456
Maria, 460, 461, 462
Maria Polly, 459
Maria Salome, 456
Mary, 458
Melchior, 224, 225, 228, 229, 456
Melchior III, 459
Melchior Jr., 238, 458
Michael, 472
Nancy Dillon, 478
Nicholas, 456
Oliver, 460
Peter, 456, 461
Phaon, 462
Polly, 461, 462
Rachel Elena, 477
Regina, 459, 461
Reuben Edward, 458
Robert Ferrel, 477
Robert Woods, 478
Rufina, 458
Salome, 238
Sarah, 459
Solomon, 457, 459, 461, 462
Solomon J., 457
Stella Gertrude Kennedy, 371
Susan Christine, 477
Susanna, 456, 459, 461
Susannah, 460
T. Melchior, 460
Teresa, 472
William, 459, 460
William J., 457, 458
William Schall, 458
William Stahler, 460

BAILEY
Daniel, 479
Greg, 479
Steven, 479

BAIRD
John, 473

BAKER
Charles, 129
Anna Maria, 457
BALDWIN
Lucinda, 435
BALL
Mary, 463
Peter M., Lt., 429
BALTIMORE
Lord, 275
BANKS
Nathaniel, Gen., 267, 268, 271
BAR (see also BAER)
CATHERINE WINGERT/WENGERT (VIII*193), 220, 225, 226, 228, 230, 232-235, 237, 456
ANNA CATHERINE GROB (X*799), 220
CHRISTOPHEL/CHRISTOPHER (VIII*192), 220, 224-226, 228-240, 243, 456, 481, 488
Heinrich, 224, 456
JOHN (JOHANNES) (IX*384), 220, 224
Julianna, 456
MELCHIOR (X*798), 220-224
BARBER
Ann Louise Baer, 375, 380, 382, 402, 478
Jan Elizabeth, 478
Jeanette Louise, 478
Joyce Elaine, 478
Judith Marie, 478
Julia Ann, 478
William G., 478
BARE (see also BAR/BAER)
Daniel, Rev., 486
BARNES
Thomas, 418
BARRETT
Col., 268
BARROWES
William, Sir, 150
BARRY
Frances, 454
BASTUBA
Betty, 453
BATES
Catherine, 418
ELEANOR BLAARE (VI 47) (see HORNING)
Henry, 44
BEAR (see BAER)
BEASLEY
Richard, Col., 94, 95, 431, 432
BECKSTRON
Lucille Ann, 449
BEEKMAN
Henry, Col., 122
BEINDIT
Howard, 449
BELGERT
Susanna, 456
BELKNAP
Kathleen, 454
BELL
Alexander Graham, 362
Derek, 478
Lyne, 478
Lorie, 478
Julia, 479
BENFED
John H., 457
BENNER
James K., 424
BENNETT
Benjamin, 150
Fannie E. Stockwell, 103, 436
BENTZEL
Brenda May, 448
BERKEY
Susannah, 457
BIBLER
Cher, x, 486
BIDINGER
Albert A., 449
Dorothy, 450
Evelyn, 449
William, 449
BILEK
Frank, 476
BINDER
Lorraine, 489
BISHOP
Alfred Charles, 427
Carroll Anne, 428
Charles Frederick, 428
Elizabeth Gail, 428
Frederick Lester, 428
Gordon Freel, 428
Gordon Paul, 428
Mark Francis, 428
Mary Elizabeth, 428
Mary Muriel Lester, 428
BJORK
Eric, Rev., 86, 88, 89
BLACK
Hugh, 43
BLAIR
ALEXANDER (VII*108), 473

BLAIR (Continued)
Alexander, 473
Ananias, 473
ANTIS/ATTIS WHITE (VI*55), 317, 473
Caroline B., 473
Charles, 473
David M., 473
Elizabeth Ann, 473
Francis Preston, 318
JOHN (VI*54), 317, 473
John, 473
Mary, 473
Montgomery, 318
Priscilla, 473
Robert, 473
SARAH (V*27) (see RILEY)
William N., 473
BLOGDEN
Agnes, 420
BOEHM
Martin, 244, 245
BOICE/BOYCE
SARAH (VII 83) (see SPRINGER)
BOILEAU
ELIZABETH (VII 71) (see CARTER)
Simeon, 444
BOISCH
Hannah, 11
BOONE
Daniel, 284, 285
BOOTH
Albert E., Rev., 389, 424
BORTZ
Henry, 459
BOURKE
Lawrence James, 448
Terrance John, 448
Thomas L., 448
Thomas McLeod, 448
Valerie Jane, 448
BOWAN/BOWEN
Hannah Elizabeth, 475
BRADDOCK
Edward, Gen., 233
BRADY
Capt., 60
BRANDT
Mattice, 487
Richard, 487
BRAY
Annie, 418
BRAZIER
Frances E., 419, 420
Wallace, 419, 420
BRECK
Graham K., 476
BRENT
Kyle William, 478
John, 478
BROCK
Isaac, Sir, 79, 80, 432
BROUGH
Martha Blanche, 450
BROWN
Arvilla Odell, 442
George, 440
John M., Rev., 186, 190
Phoebe, 439
William Jr., 439
BRYAN
William Jennings, 339
BUCHMAN
Mary, 462
BUCK
Dr., 50, 51
BULKELEY
Peter, Rev., 115-117
BUNTIN
James, 314
BURCH
Jane, 438
BURGER
Cerrie, 460
Elisabeth, 459
BURGOYNE
John, Gen., 92, 93
BURR
Aaron, 289
BURNSIDE
Ambrose E., Gen., 255
BURT
Julius, 441
BUTLER
Benjamin F., Gen., 325
Jane, 463
John, Col., 61, 62, 66
Margaret (see ODELL)
Walter, Capt., 66
BYRD
George, 156
BYRNE
Eileen O., 424
CALHOUN
Orville, 473
CAMPBELL
Gertrude M., 456
Hannah Rooks, 455, 456
Horace Walter, 456
Walter S., 456

CAMPBELL (Continued)
William, 456
William A., 456
CANNON
Sybelle, 418
Thadia, 418
William J., 418
CARL
Anna, 461
CARL/CHARLES
King Gustavus X, 84
CARLSEN
Camilla, 452
CARROLL
Caroline Beauvort "Carrie" Ghent, 425, 426
Charles William, 425
Eleanor H., 425
Sarah Ethel, 427
CARTER
ANN (VI 37) (see ROOKS)
CHARLOTTE GRACE (VI 35) (see MICHELL)
ELIZABETH BOILEAU (VII 71), 148-150, 444
Henrietta (Harriet), 444
Henry, 444
Jimmy, 487
Lizzie, 444
Magdeline, 444
Mary Julia, 444
MICHAEL (VII 70), 148-150, 154, 444
Samuel, 444
CARUTHERS
Marie, 468
CAST
Martha, 466
Robert, 466
CATER
John, 422
CAYLEY
Harry C., 425
Lorna J., 427
Lorne E., 425
Joanne, 427
Susan, 427
Thomas Ghent, 427
Mrs. T., 427
Thomas M., 425
William H., 425
CHALMERS
M. Edward, 49
CHAPMAN
Lydia, 438
CHARLES
I, King, 115, 275
VI, King, 224
XI, King, 86
CHARLES/CARL
X, King Gustavus, 84
CHILDERS
Christopher Scott, 450
Marcie Ann, 450
Tom, 450
CHINEY
Rev., 336
CHRISTMAN
Eva Elizabeth, 459
Philip, 459
CLARK(E)
George, 353
Herbert, 205
Houton/Houghton, 291, 292, 464
Isabella Adeline, 429
Marion, 320
Martha, 473
Nancy Riley, 281, 285, 286, 289, 291, 292, 464, 485
Reader Wright, 291
CLAY
Green, Gen., 294
Henry, 318
CLEMENT
John, 96
Mary Elizabeth, 96, 99, 435
CLENEAY
William, 430
CLEVELAND/CLEAVELAND
Agnes (see O'DELL)
COATSWORTH
Sarah Elizabeth, 435
COBER
Agnes, 456
COCKLEY
Eber, 244
COHOE
Awrey, 436
Frank, 436
J. G., Capt., 436
Welby, 436
COLLINS
Joan, 477
COLQUINN
Catharine Elizabeth, 367, 471
Donald Newton, 471
COLTON
Annabella, 418
CONGO
Mr. and Mrs., 209

CONNOLLY
Elizabeth, 457
COON
Elizabeth, 441
Maria, 441
COPP
ANN (V 19) (see ROOKS)
CORNWALLIS
Charles, Gen., 17, 18, 19, 238
COSTELLO
Christopher, 477
COUREN
Albert, 457
Anna, 457
Rufina, 457
William, Rev., 457
COUSINS
Margaret Haggith, 435
COX
Martha, 463
COVENTRY
Robert, 149
William, 149
CRANE
Nancy, 468
CREASY
Arthur C., 429
CRISP
Virginia O'Dell, 447
CROMER
David Henry, 425
Elizabeth Joan, 425
Pauline Eleanor, 425
CROWELL
Nathaniel, 432
CUDMORE
George Warden, 435
Helen Marie, 435
Wilbur Franklin, 435
DALTON
Mabel, 418
Margaret, 418
DANDRIDGE
Martha, 463
D'ARCEY
Eileen O'Dell, 447
DARNALL
ELIZABETH (IX*421), 463
DAVIDSON
Mary Jane Odell, 442
DAVIS
Asahel, 417
Charles G., 51
Christian, 13
ELIZABETH GHENT (VII 89), xiv,
DAVIS (Continued)
20, 22, 23, 27, 28, 417, 418
Gilbert, Mrs., 51
Hannah, 13, 418
HANNAH PHILLIPS (VIII 179), 13, 19-21, 417
Horace L., 476
James, 418
Jonathan, 13, 20, 417
Judah, 13
Keziah, 417
Mary, 19, 417
Robert, 13
Sarah, 417
THOMAS (IX 356), 13
WILLIAM (VIII 178), 11, 13, 15, 18, 20-23, 27, 28, 417
William, 433
William Jr., 417
William D., 465
DeAIKMAN (see also AIKMAN)
Alysandre, 55
DEAN
Anson, 420
DEN
R. B., 49
DENHAM
Mary, 289, 291
Obed, 289, 291, 310
DEPEW (DePUE)
Charles, 70, 75
John, Lt., 70
John, 422
John C., 432
William, Capt., 67, 429
DERR
Abraham, 456
Christian, 456
DERSTINE
Samuel, 422
DESCH/DESH
Catharine, 459
DETMILLER
Abraham, 422
DeWITT
James, 428
DIAL
Lydia, 467
DIAMENT
Sarah (see SWING)
DICKENSON
Abigail, 440
DIEFENDERFER
Jacob, 459

DIETER
Robert J., 480
Ryan, 480
DOLAN
Susan (see O'DELL)
DOLBEE
Daniel, 441
Jabez, 441
Olive Odell, 142
DOLE
Rebecca, 473
DORIEN
Vernice, 455
DOUGLAS
Earl, Dr., 476
Sophia Green, 363, 369, 476
DOW
Alexander Aikman, 435
Clement Birnum, 435
Oswell B., 435
Robert St. Clair, 435
DRESCHER
Madelyn, 455
DRIVER
Rev., 331
DUBBS
Henry, 459
DUDLEY
William, Col., 294, 295
DUKES
Christopher, 13
DUNBAR
Margaret Jans, 434
DUNLAP
Fred, 449
DURAND
James, Capt., 71
EARLE
Mrs., 51
S., 51
EATON
John, 75
EDISON
Thomas A., 193, 362
EDMONSTON
Benjamin, 444
EEDE
Ruby, 435
ELIZABETH
Queen I
ELLIS
Jessie, 435
ELLSBERRY
George, 283
Isaac, 283, 285, 286, 311, 489
ELLSBERRY (Continued)
John, 282, 283
Mary, 283
Michael, 311
Sarah, 466, 472
EMERINE
Andrew, 248
EMERY
Annie/Anna, 454
ENZ
Walter William, 450
William, 450
ETTER
Lawrence, 466
EUSTACE
Edward, 149
John, 149
EVANS
E., 95
EVERETT
Daniel, 433
FAGLEY
Hermon E., 485
Ruhama, x, 485
FAIRFAX
Anne, 463
FATT
Phoebe, 441
FAVAND
Ann, 488
FEAST
George Ghent, Mrs., 421
FELLOWS
William, 456
FERGUSON
Donna, 425
Peter, 75
FERRIS
James, 432
FETTER
Henry, 462
FETZGER
John E., 221
FIEDLER
Thomas, 186
FILMAN
Conrad, 421
FINDLAY
Sarah, 456
Virginia Ann (see O'DELL)
FISCHER
Elizabeth, 487
Irving A., 487
FISH
George, 441

FISHER
H., 48
Jacob, 420
P., Mrs., 51
William L.
FITZGERALD
Sir Gerald, 149
FITZSYMONS
Patrick, Rev., 15-
FOGELSANER
Susie, 434
FINCANNON
Alice, 460
FORBES
John, Gen., 241
FORD
Henry, 447
FOSTER
James O., 439
FOTHERGILL
Christine, 418
FOUST
Otto, 249
FRANKLYN
Agnes (see ODELL)
FRAZIER
Sarah, 466
FREDERICK
II, King, 224
FREEMAN
Joseph, 420
Joshua, 51
S., 51
FRIES
John, 240
FROST
James M., Rev., 465
Louis, 450
Madeline, 428
Michael, 450
FURNISH
Graves, 464
Sarah W., 464
GAGE
Andrew, 43, 422
J. P. 27
Mary (see HORNING)
Rachael. 418
Susan, 43
William, 48
GAY
John, 56
GANT/GANTT (see also GHENT)
Andrew, 16
ANN (IX 353), xiv, 3, 6, 9
GANT/GANTT (Continued)
Carey, 11, 20
EDWARD (VIII 176), xiv, 10-16, 18, 20, 481
ELIZABETH (VIII 177), xiv
Elizabeth, 20
George Jr., 7
Hannah, 11
Isham, 11, 16
J. D., Dr., 20
James, 11, 20
Jonathan, 20
John Quinton, 16
Keziah, 11
JOHN (IX 352), xiv, 2-4, 6-11, 13
John, 11, 20, 23
John Jr., 11, 16, 20
John Sr., 16
Mary, 20
Sarah, 11, 20
Thomas, 7, 9
William, 11, 15, 16, 481
Zacharia, 11, 16
GARDNER
Solomon Sr., 361
SOPHIA HOEY GREEN (V*29) (see also HOEY, GREEN), 361
GARVEY
Margaret, 454
GATCH
Ruth, 467
GAZLEY
Karenda, 469
GEHRIS
Alvesta, 460
GELVIN
Mary, 473
GEMMEL
Ralph, 213
GEORGE
I, King, 227
III, King, 37, 58, 123
GHENT (see also GANT/GANTT)
Alice Eleanor "Nellie" (see WILSON)
Andrew, 419, 420
Byron, Dr., 53, 420
Caroline Beauvort "Carrie" (see CARROLL)
Catherine, 420
Charlotte, 420
Christina, 419
DAVID (VI 44), xiv, 25, 26, 47, 50, 412, 418, 420

GHENT (Continued)
David Albert, 51, 53, 420
Donald, 418, 419
Edgar, 418
ELIZABETH (VII 89) (see DAVIS)
Emily (see SMITH)
Emily K., 420
Emma, 420
Frances E., 419, 420
Fred David, 418
George, 418, 419
George M., 418
George, Mrs., 419
Gordon, 418, 419
Harray, 418
Harry, 51, 420
Harry A., 421
Inakatie, 418
Isabel, 421
Jack, 419
James, 418
Jane, 420
John, 418
John G., 418
Katherine, 418
Lillian, 421
Lucy, 418
Marianne, 420
Mary, 418, 420
MARY CATHERINE "MINNIE" (IV 11) (see AIKMAN, BOOTH)
MARY GREEN HOWELL (VI 45), xiv, 26, 27, 50, 51, 412, 418, 420
Maude A., 418
Michael, 420
Nancy, 420
Rachael, 420
RACHAEL BEVOORT HORNING (V 23), xi, xiv, 30, 46, 48-50, 100, 420, 423
Robert A., 420
Sampson H., 53, 420
Sarah, 418
Thaddeus, 51, 418
THOMAS (VII 88), 16, 19-24, 26-28, 410, 417, 481
W. C., 421
Walter J., 418
William, 51, 418-420
WILLIAM BOYD (V 22), xi, xiv, 47-53, 100, 420, 423, 427
William R., 419, 420
GILES
Barbara, 453
GILES (Continued)
David, 453
Linda, 453
Michael, 453
Nancy, 453
Nelson, 453
Robert, 453
GILLEN
Vera, 476
GLANCY
Clarissa, 467
GOLD
Susanna E., 460
GOULD
Hazel, 437
Jay, 186
GRAHAM
Sir Richard, 150
GRANGE
Harold "Red," 217
GRANGER
Gordon, 254
GRANT
Phyllis, 427
Ulysses S., 256, 259, 260, 262, 264, 272, 317, 324, 327, 362, 485
GREEN
Amos, Capt., 127
Bessie A. (see LONG)
Beulah Elizabeth, 475
CHARLES (V*28), 352-357, 475, 482, 486
Charles, 353, 356
Charles Andrew, 362, 363, 369, 475
Charles Carson, 475
Earl, 476
EVELINE PEERENBOOM (IV*15), 352, 357, 359-361, 363-365, 368, 369, 371, 474, 475
Florabel, 476
James, 356, 476
James Arnold, 362, 363, 369, 476
Joan Marie, 475
John, 353
John H., 476
JOHN HOEY (IV*14), 351, 352, 355-357, 359-365, 368, 371, 412, 474-476
JULIA (ANN VERONICA) (III*7) (see BAER)
Lyda (see SCHREITER)
Margaret, 356, 476

GREEN (Continued)
Marjorie, 476
Mary, 355, 475
Robert, 353, 356, 476
Robert H., 362, 363, 369, 476
Sophia H. (see DOUGLAS)
SOPHIA HOEY (V*29) (see also GARDNER), 352, 355, 357, 360, 361, 475, 486
Susan, 476
Veronica, 476
Veronica Josephine, 475
William, 353, 360, 476
William J., 362, 363, 475
GREENE
Nathaniel, Gen., 17
GREENWALD
Julia Ann, 462
GRIFFITH
Mary, 474
GROB
ANNA CATHERINE (X*799), 220, 224
GROFF
Antis Mayette "Attie" Baer, 335, 338, 342, 367, 377, 396, 471
Catharine Elizabeth (see COLQUINN)
Charles Clarence, 367, 471
GROH
Elizabeth, 460
Mary, 459
GROSS
John Daniel, Rev., 236
GUILLIAUM
David, 479
David Brown, 479
GUMP
Johan George
GUSTAF
King Adolph
HAACKER
Frederick C., x, 438
HAARLOW
Bob, 405
HABERLIG
ANNA ELIZABETH (IX*385), 220, 224
HAFER
Mary, 467
HAIGHT
Leonard, 109, 110
HALL
Barbara Horning, 42
HALL (Continued)
Hannah, 430
James, 430
Samuel, 430
HAMAN
Hannah, 459
Jacob, 459
Margareth, 459
HAMBRICK
Beverley, 484
Marion M. "Cooter," 484
HAMMILL
Mercy, 434
Sarah, 430, 434
Thomas, 97, 430
HAMILTON
George, 95
HARDIN
David K., 407
HARMONY
Isaac, 456
HARRINGTON
Margaret A., 192
Mary Jane, 174, 193, 443
HARRIS
439
HARRISON
James, Rev., 160
Verna Irene, 435
HARRISON
William Henry, Gen., 293-295, 339, 348
HARTLEY
Edward, 113, 114
HARTMAN
Johannes, 461
HARVEY
Edith Mosher, 452
George, 198, 452
HAY
A. L. G., 458
HAYS
George, 390
HEATH
Charles, 453
Charles Jr., 453
Joan, 453
Kay, 453
Lynn, 453
Patti, 453
Susan, 453
HEATHCOAT
John, 177
HEDWIG
Dowager Queen Eleanora, 84

HEENY
Charlotte Odell, 442
HEIDENHAIN
Gabriele, 472
HEILMAN
Jacob, 462
HENNING
Charles H., 424
Donald Bruce, 424
John Charles, 424
Mark Edward, 424
HENDRICKSON
MARIA (X 657) (see SPRINGER)
HENRY
Catherine O'Dell, 447
IV, King, 301
VIII, King, 113
HERRIMAN
A. D., 344
HERROLD
Thomas, 418
HERSCH
Elizabeth, 456, 457
HESS
Jacob, 422
HIDLAY
George, 428
HIFFILFINGER/HOFFELFINGER
Elizabeth Horning, 42
HILL
James J., 366
HILLER
Kenneth, 453
HINDS
Sarah, 464
HISTON
W. M. 49
HOEY
Alexander, 355
John, 355
Joseph, 356
Mary S., Mrs., 355
SOPHIA (V*29) (see GREEN and GARDNER)
Thomas, 356
HOFFELFINGER/HIFFILFINER
Jacob, 422
HOFFMAN
Elisabeth, 461
Henry, 248
HOLBEN
Frederick, 461
HOLSKE
Clifford, 454
HOOPES
William, 208
HOOVER
Grace, 450
HOPKINS
C. W., 334
John, 441
MARY ANN (V 21) (see AIKMAN)
Mary Odell, 142
HORNING/HORNUNG
Abraham, 36, 37, 40, 421
Andrew, 423
Ann, 422
Barbara, 42, 422
Catharine, 36, 39, 421, 422
Charles Henry, 423
Deborah, 43, 422, 423, 433
ELEANOR BLAARE BATES (VI 47), 27, 28, 30, 42, 43, 47, 421, 423
Eli/Elias, 42, 422
Elizabeth, 42, 422, 423
Frances Charlotte, 423
GEORGE LUDWIG (VIII 184), 30, 31, 33-35, 37, 38, 41, 421
Hannah, 422
Henry, 422
Isaac, 36, 37, 40, 421, 422
ISABELLA (VII 93), 30, 34, 35, 37, 421
Isabella, 423
Jacob, 42, 422
Jesse, 422
John, 42, 422
Joseph, 423
KATHERINE KEYSER (VIII 185), 30, 31, 33, 34, 41, 421
LEWIS (VI 46), 27, 30, 36, 37, 39, 40, 42, 44-47, 421, 423, 433
Lewis, 422
Lewis Jr., 45, 423
Magdeline, 36, 422
Margaret, 422
Mary, 422
Mary Catherine, 43, 423
Mary Gage, 43, 421, 423
Michael, 36, 42, 422
Nancy, 422
Nathan, 422
PETER (VII 92), 30, 33, 36-40, 42, 95, 421, 482
Peter, 45, 46, 423
RACHAEL BEVOORT (V 23) (see GHENT)

HORNING/HORNUNG (Continued)
Rebecca, 422
Robert, 44, 45, 423
Sarah, 423, 433
Susannah (see LOTTERIDGE)
William, 422, 423
HOUSE
Joseph, 422
HOWARD
Rosa, 418
HOWE
Sir William, Gen., 92
HOWELL
Harriet Ann, 26
John Triller, 26
MARY GREEN (VI 45) (see GHENT)
Sarah, 433
Squire, 53
Triller, 51
HUFFMAN
Mary, 422
HULL
William, Gen., 79, 293, 294
HUMPHREY
Nancy P., 441
HUNSIKER
Margretha, 462
HURD
H. H., 27
HUTCHINSON
Margaret, 428
James, 75
HUXTABLE
Thomas Russell, 44
HYATT
Thomas, 442
ILER
Catherine, 473
IRELAND
Josheets, 307
IRWIN
S. P., Rev., 200
IVES
Flora, 443
Henry U., 443
Nettie, 443
Samuel, 443
JACOBY
John, 459
JAMES
Betsy Louisa, 442
I, King, 275
II, King, 3
JANSEN/JOHNSON
LIDEY/LYDIA (V*31)(see PEEREN-BOOM)
JEFFERSON
Thomas, 14, 18, 284, 287
JENKINS
George Jr., 428
Mary (see ODELL)
Melissa Nicole, 428
Ryan Christopher Lee, 428
JOHNSON
Charles M., 475
Sir John, 61
Maurine L., 475
Pamela, 167, 445
Walter A., 475
JOHNSTON
Joseph E., Gen., 265, 267
JONES
Mary Allen, 464, 465
Morgan, 2
JUNKER
Louis, 208
JUSTIS
Anna, 430
Brita, 430
John, 430
Justa, 430
Morton, 430
KANSIER
Earl, 453
KAULBACK
Frank, 407
KEARNS
Joshua, 420
KECK
R. E., 366
KEITH
William, 227
KELL
Alfred Charles, 452
(Ann) Eliza Rooks, 178, 186, 452, 455
Charles, 453
Clara Bessie, 453
Emma Louise, 452
Francis C., 452
KELLER
Ruth, x
KELLY
Elsie, 436
Samuel Elisha, 100, 436
KELSY
Mr., 213
KENNEDY
Estelle Gertrude Baer, 471
Grace, 425

KERN
Elisabeth, 459
Henry, 459
Lorentz, 459
Margareth, 459
William II, 456
KERNS
Mr., 51
KERSHNER
Philip, 439
KEYES
Anthony Vincent, 478
JoAnn Wallace, 478
Margaret Estelle Baer, 371, 380, 382, 402, 478
Mary Kathrine, 478
KEYSER
KATHERINE (VIII 185) (see HORNING)
Nicholas, 31
KILDARE
Earl of, 149
KIMMEL
Emily, 458
Jacob, 248
KISLER
Jacob, 461
KNERR
Susanna, 461
KNIGHT
Amos Dey, 95, 433
KNUPPEL
Amanda Green, 475
KOLAR
Betty, 453
KREUTZ
Susanna, 462
KRIEGER
John, 248
LAING
Keith, 435
Robert Alexander, 435
LAMB
Mariet, 440
LAMSHEAD
Josia, 418
LAND
Robert Jr., Lt., 422
LANDON
Sarah, 186
LARSON
Gus, 383
LAW
Joseph, 202
LAWRASON
Elizabeth, 430
LAWRENCE
Clinton P., 26
Maria, 307
LEAMON
Carey, 478
Dustin, 478
John A., 478
LEE
Col., 18
Madelyn Graham, 424
Robert E., Gen., 273, 327
LEFEVRE
Edwin, 456
LEGGETT
Earl, 434
Kathleen Marie, 434
LEITCH
Alison, 425
Darrin, 425
Eleanor, 425
Ivan J., 425
Janet, 425
Jason, 425
John C., 425
Michael, 425
Sandra, 425
Scott Co., 425
Thomas, 425
LeLARGE
Clarabelle, 434
LENTSCH
Mary Jean, 192, 447
William W., 478
LePAGE
Ed, 427
Erin, 427
Jeremy, 427
LESTER
Mary Muriel, 428
LEWIS
Cindy, 425
David, 425
Elijah, 441
P. Keith, 425
MARY ELIZABETH (VIII 161) (see AIKMAN)
Sally, 425
LICHLITER
Anne (see BAER)
LIGHT
Sarah, 467
LINCOLN
Abraham, 253, 254, 259, 272,

LINCOLN (Continued)
273, 324
LINDEMAN
Jacob, 460
LOCKWOOD
Benjamin, 321
LONG
Bessie Green, 363, 369, 389, 476
Elizabeth A., 476
Evelyn M., 476
Harriet, 476
Howard J., 476
Isaac, 244
Katie, 478
Kristi, 478
Mark H., 478
Thomas J., 476
LOTTERIDGE
Susannah Horning, 47, 423
Thomas, 423
William, 67, 429
LOUIS
XIV, King, 301, 225, 302
LOVEJOY
John, 421
Ruth Annie, 421
LURQUINN
James K., 475
LYON
Fred, 450
LYPPS
Golda Beatrice, 435
MACK
Connie, 351
MacDONOUGH
Thomas, Com., 128
MACKENZIE
William Lyon, 25, 26, 51, 412
MACOMB
Gen., 128
MAOISON
James 124
MANHART
Andy, 270
MAPLE
Milton, 356, 360
MARENGO
Minnie, 437
MARKELL
Helen, 458
Sarah, 458
MATHEWS
Robert, Capt., 66
MAULE
Edna Jessie O'Dell, 109, 194, 195, 209, 394, 454
Harry Edward, 394, 454
Katherine, 454
McCALL
Col., 18
McCASLIN
Henrietta, 474
McCLELLAN
George, Gen., 272
McCLENACHAN
James, 63
McCLERNAND
John Alexander, Gen., 258, 263, 267
McCOLLUM
John L., 472
McCORMICK
Phoebe, 442
McDERMOTT
Katherine, 476
McELHANE
John, 356
McGHEE
James, 44
McGILVERY
George, 356
McGUIGAN
Jennie, 447
McILROY
Andrew, 433
McKENZIE
Miss, 209
McKINLEY
Mabel, 458
William, 265, 267, 339, 341, 345, 348, 372, 458
McLARTY
John Edmond, 424
Lilian Isabel, 424
Mary Eleanor, 424
McLEOD
Jacqueline Ann, 448
Jane Phyllis, 448
John Kenneth, 448
Kenneth, 448
Kimberly Sue, 339
Margaret Ann, 449
Susan Karen, 448
Tammy Marie, 448
Theresa Ann, 448
MEBANIE
William, 20

MEINDERS
Daniel, 479
Mark Menno, 479
MERKEL/MERKLE
Catharine, 461
Magdalena, 462
MERRILL
Charles, 196
Samuel, 160
MEYERS
Gordon, 479
MICHELL
Abraham, 155
Bell E., 167
CHARLOTTE GRACE CARTER (VI 35), 144, 148, 150, 155
Charlotte, 445
Daniel Phillip, 156, 158, 159, 166, 190, 445, 446
ELIZABETH LEONORA (V 17) (see O'DELL)
Fanny P., 167
George Edmonstone, 446
Hannah, 156, 446
Henry, 445
Henry James, 445
Humphrey, 155
JAMES, LT. (VI 34), 148, 149, 150, 154, 190, 444, 482
James, 445
James S., 167
Jennie (Jane), 167
Lewis, 146, 156, 158, 159, 166, 167, 185, 190, 196, 445
Liney C., 167
Mansergh, 156, 445
Monckton, 446
Samuel Carter, 445
MICKLEY
John Jacob, 234
MILLER
Ike, 270, 338
Isaac, 248
MILTON
Mary, 438
MINCH
Margaret A., 447
MITCHELL
Richard, 419
Richard, Mrs., 419
MOGGRIDGE
Olive Gertrude, 420
MOHR
Jacob, 459
MONCKTON
Charlotte, 444
Edward, Hon., 444
Edward Henry Cradock, 444
Elizabeth Leonora, 444
George, 444
John, 444
Philip, 444
MONTICELLO
Charles, 453
Charlotte, 453
Louise, 453
MOORE
Emily Ghent, 47, 50, 52, 421
H. S., 57
Jerry, 276
W. G., 51
William P., 47, 51, 53, 420
MORE
Oonah, 150-153
MOREY
Mary, 439
MORETON
Rev. 53
MORGAN
J. H., Gen. 265
William, 439
MORRIS
Benjamin, 313
Thomas J., 313, 318
MORRISON
Archibald, Capt., 293, 294, 295
Samuel, Rev., 47
MORTON
Mathias, 430
MOSHER
C. W., 452
Edith, 452
Emily Louise, 452
George W., 452
Harlan, 441
Julia Ann, 452
Kristine Elizabeth, 452
Mary Katherine, 452
Seeley E., 452
William A., 452
William Harvey, 452
MUDD
Col., 268
MUELLER
Adolph, 203
Hieronymus, 203
Oscar, 203

MURPHY
Gerald, 449
Polly, 469
Sarah, 468
MYERS
Rev., 49
NAYLOR
Elizabeth, 467
NEELY
F. Tennyson, 346, 348
NELSON
Jodi, 478
John, 478
Veronica, 478
NEUMOYER
Susan, 459
NEWCOMER
Christian, Rev., 244-247, 251, 488, 489
NEWKIRK
Susannah, 468
NIBLET
Samuel, 57
NOBLE
Dale, 435
NORRIS
Mary A., 470
NORTON
Martin, 206
NULL
John, 270
OAKES
Claude Whitson "Jack," 217, 479
Emilie Ghent O'Dell, 200, 203-207, 211, 213, 217, 409, 479
Germaine Renee, 480
James Henry, 479
James Michael, 480
Jerome Anthony, 480
JoAnn Elaine Lutz Tidholm, 480
Kary Lee, 479
Kimbery Ann, 479
Marilee Elizabeth, 480
Patrick Whitson, 479
Richard Frank, 480
Stephen Christopher, 479
Steven James, 479
Wendy Lynn, 479
William Claude, 480
ODELL/O'DELL
Agnes, 43, 202-207, 213, 217, 409, 480, 489
Agnes Cleveland/Cleaveland, 198, 202, 454
Agnes Franklyn, 115, 116, 118
ODELL/O'DELL (Continued)
Alan, 449
Allen, 142, 441
Almyra, 442
Amasa, 142, 441
Ann, 449
Araminta, 141, 143, 167, 174, 191-193
Arthur, 447
Arvilla, 442
Asa, 439
AUGUSTINE/AUSTIN SR. (IX 256) (see also AUGUSTUS), 112, 121-123, 438, 482
Augustine, 440
AUGUSTINE JR., (CAPT.) (VIII 128), 112, 123-125, 438, 439
Augustine Jr., 141
Augustine M., 141, 142, 440
Augustus, 121
Augustus Jr., 443, 447
Augustus May, 167, 172, 189-192, 198, 447
AUSTIN (IX 1024) (see also AUGUSTINE/AUGUSTUS), 112, 119, 120, 121
Austin, 440, 442
Austin C. Jr., 443
Benajah, 129, 131, 135, 142, 159, 440-442
Benajah Jr., 142
Benajah Wells, 142, 441
BENJAMIN (VI 32), 112, 126, 127, 129-132, 135-137, 141-143, 145, 159, 160, 167-170, 174, 185, 192, 442, 443, 482
Benjamin, 135, 159, 160, 172, 186, 191-193, 196, 198, 440, 447
Benjamin Jr., 440, 447
Benjamin B., 135
Benjamin Barker, Gov., 118
Benjamin Lestock, 447
Bernice, 449
Betsey, 172, 442, 454
Betsey Francelia, 440
Caroline, 142, 441
Catherine Henry, 447
Charles, 440, 442
Charlotte, 165, 447, 449
Charlotte Heeny, 442
Charlotte Margaret, 447, 450
Clark Eliot, 449

ODELL/O'DELL (Continued)
Cynthis Ann, 439
Daniel, 123, 135, 142, 438, 442
Darren John, 449
David, 123, 142, 438, 441
David L., 443
DAVID TREVOR (I 1), xi, xii, 386, 398, 401, 403, 404, 406, 410, 411, 480, 474,485
David Trevor Jr., 411, 480, 485
Derek Alston, 411, 480, 485
Diane, 449
Donald, 447
Donald Frank, 449
Dora, 448
Edna Jessie (see MAULE)
Eileen D'Arcey, 447
Elezer, 439
Eliza Jane, 441
ELIZABETH (X 513), 112, 121, 438
Elizabeth, 121, 140, 181, 183, 185, 449, 450
ELIZABETH CATHERINE "BESS" (II 3), x, xi, xii, 176, 217, 218, 352, 367-369, 376, 379, 380, 382, 384-394, 396-404, 406-410, 412, 413, 463, 478, 480
ELIZABETH LEONORA MICHELL V 17), x, 112, 146, 154, 156-161, 163-167, 172-175, 185, 189-191, 196, 212, 412, 443, 445-447, 453
ELIZABETH WELLS (VII 65), 112, 126, 142, 441
Elizabeth Wheeler, 442
Ellen Louisa, 186, 454
Emilie Ghent (see OAKES)
EMMA (VI 33), 112, 141, 442, 443
Emma, 159, 160, 164, 170, 193, 447
EMMA LEONORA ROOKS (IV 9), 148, 160, 170, 174-180, 185-187, 209, 211, 391, 447, 453-455, 482
Emma Leonora, 156, 195, 209, 211, 454
Esther, 440
Fanny, 442
Fanny Rogers, 172
Frances E., 442
FRANCES "FRANK" TREVOR (III 4), 82, 109-111, 176, 187, 189, 194, 195, 198, 200-208, 213, 214, 217, 218, 387, 388, 402, 403, 436, 454, 479
Frances Xaviour, 448
Frank, 449
GARNETT EMILY AIKMAN (III 5), x, 82, 102, 111, 176, 198, 200-202, 205, 211, 214, 217, 388, 409, 436, 454, 479
George C., 443
George L., 440
Hannah, 442
Helen, 449
Helen Marie, 447
Henry, 449
Henry Jr., 449
Henry Augustus "Gus," 186, 187, 189, 194, 195, 198, 202, 209, 454
HENRY JAMES (IV 8), 148, 160, 165, 172, 174-176, 186-195, 197, 199, 208-211, 219, 391, 447, 453, 454
Hiram, 135, 142, 159, 160, 161, 163, 172, 442
Ilene Marie, 449
Isaac, 141, 443
Jacob, 121, 124, 131, 439, 440
Jacob, Capt. (also ODLE), 438
Jacob Jr., 439
Jacob Sr., 125, 141, 142
James, 116, 117, 439
James,Hon., 185
James A., 442
James B., 126, 440, 441
Jennifer May, 449
JEREMIAH (V 16), 112, 139, 141-146, 148, 156-167, 170-174, 185, 187, 191, 443, 445, 447
John (also UDELL), 438
John, 117, 118
John E., 450
Jonas, 438, 482
Jonas A., 160
Jonathan, 185
JOSEPH (X 512), 112, 121, 438, 482
Joseph, 121, 124, 438, 439
Joseph Sr., 123
Josephine, 447

ODELL/O'DELL (Continued)
Joyce, 449
Karen, 449
Kathleen Jane, 448
Kathy, 449
Kevin, 449
Lawrence, 449
Lawrence Patrick, 449
Lemuel, 440
Levi, 435
Levina Patten, 442
Lewis, 191, 192, 196, 198, 449
Lewis Mansure/Mansureth, 167, 172, 450
Lional (also UDELL), 438
Louis, 450
Lucille, 449
Lucy, 441, 443
Lydia, 440
Mabel, 449
Madeline Gertrude, 448
Marcellus, 443
Margaret, 441
Margaret Butler, 126, 131, 142, 439
MARGARET LOUISE "PEG" (I 1), xi, xii, 386, 396, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 410, 411, 480
Maria, 163, 447, 449
Mark, 449
Martin, 449
Mary, 440, 441, 442
Mary Ann, 441, 442
Mary Jane Davidson, 442
Mariah, 442
Mary Jenkins, 167, 170, 174, 191, 192, 442
Michelle, 449
MOLLY (VIII 129), 112, 124, 438, 439
Morris, 126, 442
Nathaniel, 126, 131, 141, 442, 443
Nora, 195, 196, 450
Olive, 441
Patricia, 449
Phoebe, 160, 161, 439
Polly, 441, 442
Rachel, 439, 443
Raymond John, 449
Rebecca, 116, 117, 438
Renee, 449
Reuben, 440
Richard, 113, 121, 443
ODELL/O'DELL (Continued)
Robert C., 442
Robert Daniel, 449
Robin, 449
Ronald Michael, 449
Rose, 442
Ryan Vincent, 449
Sally Ann, 441
SAMUEL (VII 64), 112, 124, 126, 129, 131, 132, 135, 142, 160, 441, 481
Samuel, 142, 441, 442
Samuel (also UDELL), 438
Samuel Jr., 142, 447
Samuel Joseph, 447
Sarah, 142, 440, 441
Shawn, 449
Simeon, 439
Susan, 440, 443
Susan Dolan, 189, 190, 447
Susan Trondle, 447
Sylvia, 439, 440
Thankful, 441
Thomas, 418, 443, 449
Tim, 449
Valeria Anna, 448
Vincent Donald, 449
Virginia Ann Findlay, 386, 406, 411, 485
Virginia Crisp, 447
Warren, 450
Wealthy, 441
William, 113-118, 141, 143, 167, 170, 171, 191, 192, 443, 447, 450
William Jr., 192, 193
WILLIAM FRANCES (II 2), 176, 202-207, 211-214, 217, 218, 352, 383-413, 478, 480
WILLIAM GHENT (I 1), 386, 398, 480
William Walter, 450
William Walter Jr., 450
ODLE (see ODELL/O'DELL)
OGDEN
Pauline, 437
OGLE
John G., 458
OHL
Elizabeth, 428
OHNMEISS
Richard, 479
O'KELLY
Ulick, 150-153

OLIVER
MARGARET (VIII 165) (see SPRINGER)
William, Capt. 294
OLLILA
Laurie, 478
Michael, 478
Mike, 478
O'MALLEY
Mary Agnes, 424
O'NEAL
Col., 20
ORMSBY
Olive, 476
OSBORN
Nancy, 467
OSTERHAUS
Peter J., 262, 263
OSTRUM
Harriet, 443
OTTERBEIN
William, 244, 245
PAINTER
Winslow, 384
PALMER
ANNA NANCY (V*25) (see BAER)
SAMUEL (VI*50), 249
PARISH
Frank O., 447
PARK
Alice, 435
PARKER
Elgin, 437
Richard Franklin, 437
PARNIN
David, 453
PARRIS
ANNA MARGARETTA (VIII*213) (see SCHWING)
PATTEN
Levina Odell, 442
PAULSON
Geizie, 430
Paul, 430
Peter, 430
PEERENBOOM
Arnold, 369, 475
EVELINE/EVALENE (IV*15) (see GREEN)
Frederick J., 474
Garandus, 475
George H., 474
GERHAR(D)T (V*30), 357-359, 371, 474, 482
Hannah, 475
PEERENBOOM (Continued)
Hendricka/Harriet, 475
Henry, 474
Isabel, 474
James A., 474
John, 475
Julius, 357, 358, 359, 369, 474
LIDEY/LYDIA JANSEN/JOHNSON (V*31), 357, 474
Lydia, 474
Minnie, 474
Morris S., 474
PEMBERTON
John C., Gen., 260, 264
PENN
William, 32, 225, 237, 303
PETERS
Lydia, 462
PETTIPLACE
Asa, 440
PETTIT
Charlotte, 419
G. H., Mrs., 421
Jane, 419
Jennie, 419
PHILLIPS
Alice, 476
HANNAH (VIII 179) (see DAVIS)
Martha, 475
PICKENS
Gen. 18
PINCKARD
Eric, 411, 480
J. Thomas, 386, 402, 480
Julie, 411, 480
MARGARET LOUISE O'DELL (I 1) xi, xii, 386, 396, 398, 399, 400-402, 410, 411, 480
Steven Scott, 411, 437, 480
PONTIAC
Chief, 235
POPE
ANNE (XII*3363) (see also WASHINGTON), 463
PORTER
David D.,258, 260
Elizabeth, 470
James Roy, 424
PRICE
Hannah, 422
Scott, 448
PROCTOR
Henry A., Gen., 293, 294, 298

PROVOST
Sir George, 126, 127
RAINEY
Mary, 20
William, 20
RAU
Judith Ann, 448
REAGAN
Ronald, 487
REISS
Daniel, 460
REYNOLDS
Caleb, 432
RHOADS
Joseph, 457
RICHTER
Dietrich Joseph, 447, 192
Mark James, 447
Mary Jean Lentsch, 447, 192
Roy B., 447
Samuel John, 447, 448
Sara Ann, 448
Steven Patrick, 448
RIEGNER
Sallie Y., 460
RIGGINS
Mary Gant, 11
RILEY
A. E., 472
Albert T., 465
Amelia, 466
Anna S. 465
Carrie, 325, 468
Carrie P., 472
Catherine, 472
Charles B., 341
Charles M., 335, 338
Charles W., 325, 465, 472
Clark, 333
Cynthia, 472
E. L. 472
E. N., 472
Edward, 472
Edward S., Rev., 472
Elizabeth, 466
ELIZABETH CAROLINE "LIBBIE" (IV*13) (see BAER)
ELIZABETH TAYLOR (VIII*209), 274, 279, 464
Emily Portia, 465
Etta Mary, 325
Fannie, 472
Frances, 465
FRANCES WRIGHT (VII*105), 274, 281, 283, 285, 286, 463,
RILEY (Continued)
464, 466
George W., 322, 464
Gerrard, 466
GERRARD SR. (VII*104), 274, 276, 279, 281-291, 311, 313, 315, 322, 338, 339, 463, 464, 489
GERRARD POLICARP (V*26), 272, 300, 314, 315, 317, 318, 320, 321, 322-329, 331, 332, 335, 337, 348, 368, 410, 468, 471, 473, 485
Henry, 284
James, 281, 465, 466, 472
James M., 465
James Van Deren, Rev., 465
James Whitcomb, 347, 348
Joe S., 465
John, 283, 284, 466, 472
John Marcus, 465
John W., 290
John W., Jr., Rev., 322
John W. Sr., 322, 338, 464
Julia Violett, 465
Louvenia E., 465
Lucy, 466
Madison, Rev., 465
Margaret Olivia, 464
Martha, 465
Mary Antis (see SHERMAN)
Mary E., 465
Mary Melissa "Fannie," 471
Mary Melissa, 325
Mary P., 472
MARY SWING (VI*53), 274, 298, 300, 306, 312-314, 328, 329, 336, 337, 465, 468, 471
Mary W., 466
Michael E., 472
Nancy, 465
Nancy (see CLARK)
Nancy E., 465
Ninian, 283, 464
Ninian Jr., 281, 285, 466
NINIAN SR. (VIII*208), 274-280, 282, 284, 287, 290, 338, 339, 464, 483, 489
Ninian S., 465
Ninian S., Jr. 465
Ninian Smith, 464
Otis Violett, 275, 285, 464
Reuben, 348
Samuel, 465

RILEY (Continued)
Samuel Hinds, 464, 465
Samuel Russel, 465
Sarah, 325, 368, 466, 472
SARAH BLAIR (V*27), 300, 317, 318, 322, 331, 471, 473
Sarah E., 465
Smith, 472
Solomon, 275
William, 313, 314, 471
William Thomas, 465
Williams W., 290, 465
ZACHARIAH (VI*52), 274, 283, 285-290, 293-295, 298, 300, 313-315, 317, 322, 328, 335, 337, 339, 348, 412, 468, 471, 486
Zachariah Jr., 314
Zachariah F., 275
RIPPEY
Keziah Gant, 11
ROACH
Hannah, 454
ROBERTS
Hannah, 422
ROBERTSON
Abbey Bishop, 428
Douglas, 428
John, 404
ROBINSON
EDWARD (X 658)
Edward, 92, 430
J. H., Rev., 427
Jesper, 430
MARGARETTA (IX 329) (see SPRINGER)
ROGERS
Clarissa, 474
Fanny, 172
Mary, 473
ROMIG
Augustus, 460
Leon, 460
ROOKS
Able, 451
Alex, 451
Alfred William, 454, 455
Alice, 456
Ann, 451
ANN CARTER (VI 37), 176, 177
ANN COPP (V 19), 176, 178, 182, 183, 184, 451
Ann Eliza (see KELL)
Arthur A., 452
Arthur Seymour, 455
ROOKS (Continued)
Edward Horace, 454
Edwin Arthur, 454
Elizabeth, 451
Elizabeth Ann, 455
Ella, 455
EMMA LEONORA (IV 9) (see O'DELL)
Etta, 178, 179, 180
Etta R., 452
Frank, 451
Frederick, 178, 452
Hannah (see CAMPBELL)
Hannah Anne, 456
Harriet, 451
Helen Beulah, 455
Henry A., 184, 185, 451
Ida, 456
John, 451
Louisa (see TOMLINSON)
Ralph James, 455
THOMAS (VI 36), 176, 177, 483
Thomas Jr., 178, 181, 182, 183, 185, 451
THOMAS SR. (V 18), 175-178, 182-185, 451, 455
Thomas W., 185, 452
Walter, 451
William, 451
William Henry, 178, 182
ROOSEVELT
Franklin Delano, 372
Theodore, 471
ROUSSEAUX
Jean Baptista, 40
RUHMAN
Michael T., 449
RUMMEL
Jacob, 303, 304, 469
Salome Schwing, 303, 304, 307, 469
RUSSELL
Allan, 425
Lynn, 425
Nancy, 425
Paul, 425
RYCHMAN
Mary, 432
RYERSON
Edgerton, Dr., 430
ST. LEGER
Col., 92
ST. JOHN
Lydensia, 443

SAKOWSKI
Stacey Ann, 450
Walter, 450
SALINA
BEATA (XI 1313) (see SPRINGER)
SALINIUS
BALTZAR, DR., (XII 2626), 84
SALT
John, 291, 464
SANDERS
James, 466
SAUL
Ann, 434
Robyn, 452
SCHAEFFER
Barbara Ann, 437
Dale, 437
Dorothy Jane, 437
Emil Frederick, 437
John David, 437
Stephen Aikman, 437
SCHALL
Annie C., 458
Lucy E., 458
SCHILLING
Harry, 387
SCHLAFER
Pete, 342
SCHLEICHER
John, 241
Magdalene, 241
SCHMECK
John, 462
Peter, 462
SCHMIDT
Grace, 434
SALOME (IX*425) (see SCHWING)
SCHNEIDER
Polly, 459
SCHOLLENBERGER
Jacob, 461
SCHREITER
Anthony, 475
Lyda Green, 363, 369, 475
Marian, 475
SCHULTZ
Carol Ann, 449
SCHWING (see also SWING)
Abraham, 466, 467, 470
ANNA MARGARET PARRIS (VIII*213), 300, 304-306, 466
Anne Marie, 466
HANS MARTIN (X*848), xii, 300, 301-304, 483
JEAN MARTIN (IX*424), 300, 302, 347, 466, 484
Judith, 466
Marie Magdaléine, 469
Marie Salome, 466
MICHAEL (VIII*212) (see also SWING), 300, 303-306, 4IO, 466
Pierre, 469
Salome (see RUMMELL)
SALOME SCHMIDT (IX*425), 300, 302, 466
SCULL
George R., 458
SEAMAN
Rev., 49
SEELYE
Reuben, 439
SHAW
Jane, 473
SHELLENBERG
Blair, 427
L., 427
SHERIDAN
P. H., Gen., 272
SHERMAN
Gedie, 471
James S. "Sunny Jim," 471
Mary Antis Riley, 338, 339, 348, 471
Sadie Snow, 337, 339, 340, 348, 350, 471
Thomas, 338, 339, 471
William T., Gen., 256, 272
SHOWERS
Ann, 429
Catherine "Katy," 429
Daniel, 430
Elizabeth, 429
HANNAH (VII 81) (see AIKMAN)
HANNAH VAN TOCK (VIII 163), 67, 429
J. Daniel, 430
John, 70, 429
Katy, 429
Magdeline, 67, 429
Mary, 67, 429
MICHAEL (VIII 162), 65, 66, 429
Michael Jr., 429
Sarah, 429
SIEBOLD
Catherine, 174, 193, 443
SILK
William, 44

SIMCOE
J. C., Gov., 20, 37
SIMMONS
Luis, 12
SIMONDS
S. D., Rev., 167
SIMONS
Menno, 31
SITKIEWICZ
Evelyn, 449
SLOCUM
H. W., Col., 268
SLY
Mary J., 193, 443
SMITH
Miss, 398
Dr., 209
Amelia, 439
Caroline, 441
Clara, 435
Cornelia Ellen Baer, 248, 250
Crabo, 192
Emily Ghent, 198, 200, 201, 423, 426
Isaac, 429
John, Rev., 289
Samuel, 461
W. C., 364
Wallace, 200, 423
William B., 160
SNYDER
Solomon, Rev., 100
SOUTHERN
Mitta, 441
SPEEL
Wilhemina "Minnie," 474
SPEK
Brian, 425
Jane, 425
Robert, 425
SPENCER
Oliver M., Rev., 311
Sarah E., 442
SPIEGEL
M. M., Col., 268
SPINNEY
Gayle M., 478
SPRINGER
Anna Elizabeth, 430
BEATA SALINA (XI 1313), 82, 84
Benjamin, 70, 94, 431, 432
Blake, 215
Catherine, 433
CHARLES JR., (IX 328), 82, 92, 431
SPRINGER (Continued)
Charles B., 215
CHARLES (CARL) CHRISTOPHER (X 656), 82-88, 90, 92, 214, 216, 412, 430, 431
CHRISTOPHER (XI 1312), xii, 82, 84
Courtland B., 84
D., 51
D. W., 53
Daniel, 70, 92, 94, 432
DAVID (VIII 164), 82, 92-94, 431
David Reynolds, 423, 433
Edward, 431
Edgar, 50
Elizabeth, 432
Emma, 50
Hannah, 432
Henrietta, 94, 431
John, 94, 431
Keziah, 432
Lucinda, 433
Magdelene, 430
Margaret, 432
Margaret Martha, 432
MARGARET OLIVER (VIII 165), 82, 92-95, 431
MARGARETTA ROBINSON (IX 329), 82, 92, 431
Maria, 430
MARIA HENDRICKSON (X 657), 82, 86, 88, 430
Martha, 94
Mary, 94
Mary Lucy, 431
MARY MARGARET (VI 41) (see AIKMAN)
Oliver Tiffany, 423, 433
Rachael, 94, 432
Rebecca, 431
RICHARD (VII 82), 67, 72, 73, 75, 81, 82, 92, 94, 95, 431, 432
Sarah, 433
SARAH BOICE (VII 83), 81, 82, 95, 96, 431, 432
Warren, 50
STAHL
Jacob, 248
STAHLER
John Nicholas, 459
Susan, 460
STALCOP
86, 88, 90

STAUDT
John Baer, Rev., 221
STEERE
Abigail, 442
STENTON
John, 234
STERLEY
Michael, 422
STEVENS
Anna, 438
STEWART
Ashby A., 465
Charles, 429
STILLEY
Jacob, 431
STOWE
Harriet Beecher, 320
STOYER
Solomon, 461
STRICKLAND
Lucy, 442
STRONG
J. W., 156
SULLIVAN
John Patrick, 424
William E., Dr., 424
William Paul, 424
SWING (see also SCHWING)
Aaron H., 467
Abner, 468
Albert, 468
Albert U., 468
Alfred J., 470
Alfred J. Jr., 470
Anna, 469
Anna Elizabeth, 304, 466
Benjamin Franklin, 469
Betsey, 467, 469
C. J., 468
Catharine, 469
Charles, 469
Charles, Dr., 326
Charles W., 468
Christina, 469
Cora Alberta, 470
Daniel, 470
David, 467, 469, 470
David Carrick, 470
David L., Rev., 347, 470
F. Edgar, 468, 472
Eleanor, 467
Eliza, 468
Elizabeth, 469
Elizabeth G., 468
GEORGE (VII*106), 298, 300,
SWING (Continued)
304, 306-319, 329, 466, 469
George, 468
George Blair, 472
George Light, 308, 467, 470
George M., 469
George S., 467
George Washington, Rev., 327,
329, 336, 468
Harriet W., 467
Helen, 470
James Black, 467
Jennie Carrick, 470
Jeremiah, 467, 469
Johan, Jacob, 466
John Collins, 468
John M., Capt., 469
John Peter, 466
John S., 467
Joseph, 469
Julia, 470
Laverna Karenda, 470
Lawrence, 307, 467
Lawrence Lester, 472
Lelah, 472
Leonard, 326
Leontine, 470
Lizzie May, 470
Louis J., 468
Lydia A., 467
Mamie, 470
Margaret, 469
Martha, 467
MARY (VI*53) (see RILEY)
Mary, 467, 468
Mary Ann, 469, 470
Mary Antis, 472
Merritt J., 468
Michael, 306, 307, 309, 310,
312, 467, 468
Michael Coates, 469
Michael W., 467
Pengan, 469
Philip Bergen, 467
Phoebe, 470
Polly, 469
Priscilla Murphy, 469
Rebecca N., 469
Ruth, 467, 470
Ruth G., 467
Samuel, 305-307, 309, 310,
347, 467, 469
SARAH (VII*107), 300, 305,
306, 310, 311, 313, 318,
319, 466, 469

SWING (Continued)
Sarah, 467, 468
Sarah Diament, 305, 469
Sarah S., 469
Shadrach D., 467
Simon Sparks, 469
Stella, 470
Sue Zella, 470
Wesley, 307, 468
William, 470
William J., 468
William L., 468
TALBOT
Sir William, 150
TANNER
H. E., 342
TAYLOR
ELIZABETH (VIII*209) (see RILEY)
Jesse, 453
Lawrence, 453
Lewis Horning, 37, 44, 423
TECUMSEH
295, 298
TENBROOK
Bill, 213
TERWILLIGER
Levi, 443
THALIN
John, 86
THERESA
Maria, 224
THOMAS
David, 3, 4, 7, 8
THOMPSON
Elizabeth, 465
Susanna, 433
THORNE
Eleanor, 429
THORNTON
Jane, 439
TIDHOLM
JoAnn Elaine Lutz (see OAKES)
TINLING
H. J., Mrs., 421
TOMLINSON
Annie, 453
Emma, 453
F. W., 453
James, 182, 453
James Jr., 453
Lily, 453
Louisa Rooks, 182, 453, 455
TONER
Elizabeth, 475
TOWNSEND
Mary Jane, 449
TRASKER
Raymond, Mrs., 468
TRAYNOR
John, 432
TRILLER
Jacob, 420
Nancy Ghent, 19
Phillip, 26
TROCHIM
Mary Jo, 479
TROEGER
Hazel, 400
TRONDLE
Susan O'Dell, 447
TROT
Jacob, 420
TRYON
William, Gov., 14
UDELL (also ODELL)
John, 438
Lional, 438
Samuel, 438
URSINUS
Zachariah, 221
VAINISI
Patricia Ann, 479
VALENTINE
Jane, 438
VanCAMPEN
Moses, Lt., 60
Van den BROEK
Theodore J., Fr., 357, 358, 360
VANDERBILT
Cornelius, 186, 187
VanDEREN
Margaret, 464
VanEVERY
David, 429
VanMEER
44, 45
Jane, 45, 46
Oliver, 45, 46
Susan, 45
VanPARYS
Brent, 425
Karen, 425
R., 425
VanRENSSELAER
Henry K., 124
VanTOCK
ABRAHAM, (IX 326), 429
HANNAH (VIII 163) (see SHOWERS)

VAUGHN
NANCY (VII*111) (see WHITE)
Rebecca, 439
VIOLETT
Julia, 464
WAGNER
Roy, 486
WALBERT
Jacob, 462
WALKER
Edith Jean, 435
WALLACE
Sherwood, 478
WALRAVEN
Annika, 430
Jonas Sr., 430
WALTER
Philip, 459
WASHBURN
Delbert, 437
Denise, 437
Larry, 437
WASHINGTON
ANNE (XI*1681), 463
Augustine/Austin, 463
George, 18, 19, 36, 40, 74, 93, 233, 279, 283, 463
John, 463
JOHN, COL. (XII*3362), xii, 463
Lawrence, 463
WASSUM
John, 462
WATSON
Lisa Ann, 427
Robert, 427
Stephanie, 427
WAYE
Rick, 478
WEAVER
Lucy Milda, 482
Tilghman, 460
WEBSTER
Marilynn, 488
WEGFORTH
Ann Margaretha (see BAER)
WEICHER
Elsie, 447
WELDON
Arthur, Rev., 155
WELLS
ELIZABETH (VII 65) (see ODELL)
Sarah, 441
Sarah Odell, 129, 142
WELTY
Daniel, 479
Maurine Daniel, 479
WESLEY
John, 311
WESTON
Benjamin Seeley, 452
Jacob Mosher, 452
WETHEREL
Ann Elizabeth, 451
Clara, 451
James, 451
James Jr., 451
WETZEL
Clarence C., 450
Daisy Ann Margaretha, 450
Deborah Ann, 450
James, 450
James David, 450
John Craig, 450
Rebecca, 460
Susan Dianna, 450
WHEELER
Elizabeth, 442
WHICHEST
Col., 444
WHITE
ANTIS (VI*55) (see BLAIR)
Charles, 474
DAVID (VII*110), 318, 473
David, 473
Elizabeth, 474
Forman, 473
Frank, 474
Horace, 474
John, 474
H. V., 429
NANCY VAUGHN (VII*111), 318, 473
Naomi, 476
Orlando, 474
William N., 473
WICKHAM
Martha, 439
WILDS
Cynthia, 453
Walter, 453
WILE
Daisy, 460
WILHELM
David, 453
Emily, 453
WILKINS
Maria, 164

WILKINS (Continued)
Ross, Judge, 164
WILKINSON
Maurine, 479
WILLET
Abraham, 428
WILLIAM
IV, King, 149
WILLIAMS
ANN (VIII*211) (see WRIGHT)
HONOUR (IX*422), 279
JONAS (IX*422), 279
Justice Wright, 430
Roger, 117
Thomas Fred, Rev., 385, 387
WILSON
Anna, 430
Alice Eleanor "Nellie" Ghent, 49, 424, 426
Charles Beresford, Dr., 424
Elizabeth Winnifred, 424
Florence Eleanore, 424
Henry Andrew, 424
Henry Arthur, Dr., 424
Henry Lee, 424
John Andrew, 424
Lilian Mary, 424
Pauline Bevort, 425
Polly, 439
Rachael Jeanette, 424
William Frederick Ghent, 424
Woodrow, 368
WINCHIP
Mary Ann, 440
WINEBRENNER
John, 251
WING
Abraham, 123
WINGERT/WENGERT
CATHERINE (VIII*193) (see BAR/BAER)
WIX
Harry Jr., 209
WODELL (see also ODELL/UDELL)
William, 116
WOOD
Jean, 425
John, Rev., 100, 101
WOODBRIDGE
Charles Coatsworth, 435
Charles Oliver, 435
Donald Charles, 435
Edwin Rodd, 435
Mabel, 435
Mary Alexandra, 435
WOODBRIDGE (Continued)
Muriel Hannah Wright, 435
Nora Amelia, 435
William Mervyn, 435
William Rhea, 435
William Warden, 99, 435
WOODBURN
Lloyd, 454
WOODS
Mary Ann, 477
WOODWORTH
Caroline, 441
WOOLSY
Polly, 442
WRIGHT
Agatha, 283
ANN WILLIAMS (VIII*211), 279, 281, 463
DOROTHY AWBREY (X*841), 463
ELIZABETH DARNALL (IX*421), 463
FRANCES (VII*105) (see RILEY)
FRANCIS, MAJ. (XI*1680), 463
Hannah, 418, 435
JOHN, CAPR. (VIII*210), 279, 281, 463
JOHN (X*840), 463
JUSTICE JOHN, CAPT. (IX*420), 463
Rosie, 435
Sarah, 466
WROBEL
Dennis Lee, 449
WYATT
Arthur, 473
YARD
Joseph, 86
ZEIGLER
Mariga, 461

Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

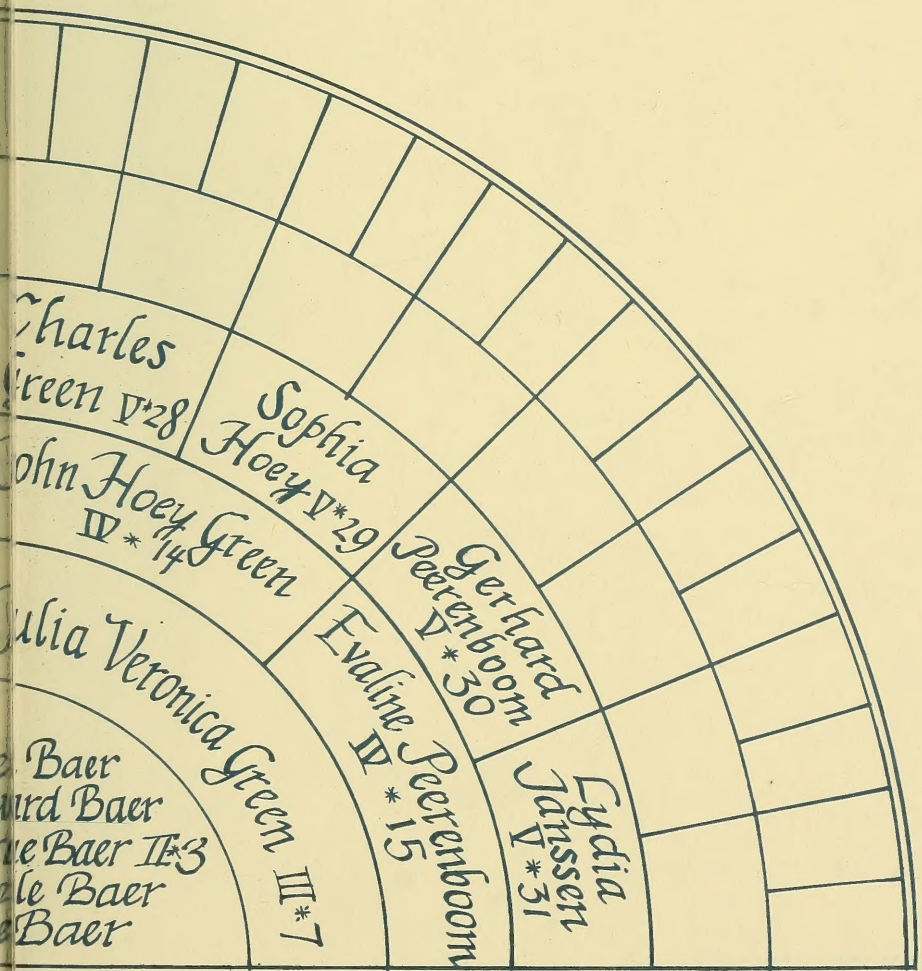
Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

Additional Family Data

Edward Sherman Baer III*
John G
Charles E
Elizabeth Cat
Margaret E
Anne Lou
Libbie Caroline Riley
IV * 13
John Mason Baer
IV * 12
Sarah
Blair V*2
Girard
Policarp
Riley V*26
Nancy
Palmer V*25
John Jacob
Baer Jr. V*24
Mary
Swing
VI* 53
Zachariah
Riley
VI* 52
John
Blair
VI*54
Attis
White
VI*5
Samuel
Palmer
VI*50
John Jacob
Baer Sr.
VI*48
Garrard
Riley
VII*104
Frances
Wright
VII*105
George
Swing
VII*106
Sarah
Swing
VII*107
Alexander
Blair
VII*108
David
White
VIII*110
Vaugh
VIII*111
Marguerite
VII*97
Heinrich
Baer
VII*96

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 9999 05821 128 3